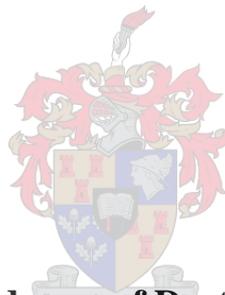


**THE 'REPORTER VOICE' AND 'OBJECTIVITY' IN CROSS-  
LINGUISTIC REPORTING OF 'CONTROVERSIAL' NEWS IN  
ZIMBABWEAN NEWSPAPERS. AN APPRAISAL APPROACH**

**BY**

**COLLEN SABAO**



**Dissertation presented for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the Faculty  
of Arts and Social Sciences at Stellenbosch University**

**SUPERVISOR: PROF MW VISSER**

**MARCH 2013**

## **DECLARATION**

By submitting this dissertation electronically, I declare that the entirety of the work contained therein is my own, original work, that I am the sole author thereof (save to the extent explicitly otherwise stated), that reproduction and publication thereof by Stellenbosch University will not infringe any third party rights and that I have not previously in its entirety or in part submitted it for obtaining any qualification.

Date: 17 September 2012

## ABSTRACT

The dissertation is a comparative analysis of the structural (generic/cognitive) and ideological properties of Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele, focusing specifically on the examination of the proliferation of authorial attitudinal subjectivities in ‘controversial’ ‘hard news’ reports and the ‘objectivity’ ideal. The study, thus, compares the textuality of Zimbabwean printed news reports from the English newspapers (*The Herald*, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday*), the Shona newspaper (*Kwayedza*) and the Ndebele newspaper (*Umthunywa*) during the period from January 2010 to August 2012. The period represents an interesting epoch in the country’s political landscape. It is a period characterized by a power-sharing government, a political situation that has highly polarized the media and as such, media stances in relation to either of the two major parties to the unity government, the Zimbabwe African National Union Patriotic Front (ZANU PF) and the Movement for Democratic Change (MDC-T). Couched in the theoretical explications of Appraisal Theory, specifically the ‘reporter voice’ configuration, the study sought to investigate the proliferation of journalistic ideological subjectivities in ‘hard news’ reports – a genre of news reporting that is largely characterised by claims of ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ and dispassionate journalistic reporting positions. The study, also assuming the orbital structure model developed by Iedema, Feez and White (1994) and White (1997, 1998) in the analysis of ‘hard news’ report in English broadsheet reporting, furthermore sought to investigate whether the textuality and cognitive/rhetorical structure of ‘hard news’ reports in news reports from the three Zimbabwean language journalistic cultures are organised around the same structure. The corpus of news reports analysed in this study were examined for the proliferation of instances of observable authorial ideological positionings by focusing how the choices made in terms of lexical, lexicogrammatical and syntagmatic resources signal evaluative keys that betray authorial ideological subjectivities. The texts were, thus, subjected to close textual analyses in terms of generic structure and journalistic voices. The study shows that Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele generally share the same structure as expressed by the orbital model, in which authorial subjective evaluations are curtailed through a variety of strategic impersonalisations – largely ‘attribution’. However, despite these similarities, significant differences were observed with regards to the textuality of news reports as well as the uses made of attributed materials.

## OPSOMMING

Die verhandeling behels 'n vergelykende analise van die strukturele (generiese/kognitiewe) en ideologiese eienskappe van Zimbabwiese nuusberigte in Engels, Shona en Ndebele, wat veral op die ondersoek van die proliferasie van subjektiwiteit in die houdings van outeurs by 'kontroversiële' 'hardenuusberigte' en die ideaal van 'objektiwiteit' fokus. Die studie het dus die tekstualiteit van Zimbabwiese gedrukte nuusberigte uit die Engels koerante *The Herald*, *Zimbabwe Independent* en *Newsday*, die Shona-koerant *Kwayedza* en die Ndebele-koerant *Umthunywa* uit die tydperk Januarie 2010 tot Augustus 2012 vergelyk.

Dié tydperk verteenwoordig 'n interessante tydvak in die land se politieke landskap. Dit is 'n tydperk gekenmerk deur 'n magsdelende regering, 'n politieke situasie wat die media tot 'n groot mate gepolariseer het en as sodanig mediastandpunte in verband met enige van die twee belangrikste partye in die eenheidsregering, die Zimbabwe Africa National Union Patriotic Front (ZANU PF) en die Movement for Democratic Change (MDC-T). Uitgedruk in die teoretiese uiteensettings van teorie van waardebeplanning, in die besonder die 'stem van die verslaggewer'-konfigurasie, het die studie gepoog om die uitbreiding van joernalistieke ideologiese subjektiwiteit in 'hardenuusberigte' – 'n beriggewingsgenre wat grootliks deur aansprake van 'objektiwiteit' en/of 'neutraliteit' en posisies van emosielose joernalistieke beriggewing gekenmerk word – te ondersoek. Die studie, wat ook die orbitale struktuurmodel ontwikkel deur Iedema, Feez en White (1994) en White (1997, 1998) by die analise van 'hardenuusberigte' in Engelstalige breëbladberiggewing gebruik het, het verder daarna gestreef om ondersoek in te stel daarna of die tekstualiteit en kognitiewe/retoriese struktuur van 'hardenuusberigte' in drie joernalistieke kulture in Zimbabwe om dieselfde struktuur heen georganiseer is.

Die korpus nuusberigte wat in hierdie studie ontleed is, is nagegaan vir die proliferasie van gevalle van waarneembare ideologiese posisionerings van die skrywers deur te fokus op hoe die keuses wat gemaak is ten opsigte van leksikale, leksiko-grammatikale en sintagmatiese hulpbronne bewys lewer van waardebeplannende sleutels wat ideologiese subjektiwiteit van die outeurs verklar. Die tekste was dus onderworpe aan noukeurige tekstuele analises ten opsigte van generiese struktuur en joernalistieke stemme. Die studie het aangetoon dat Zimbabwiese nuusberigte in Engels, Shona en Ndebele in die reël dieselfde struktuur deel as wat deur die orbitale model uitgedruk word, waarin subjektiewe evaluering deur die outeur beperk word deur 'n verskeidenheid strategiese onpersoonlikhede – hoofsaaklik

‘toeskrywing’. Ondanks hierdie ooreenkomste is beduidende verskille waargeneem met betrekking tot die tekstualiteit van nuusberigte asook die gebruik wat van toegeskryfde materiaal gemaak word.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

I hereby, firstly, acknowledge the inspiration, advice, guidance, suggestions and criticisms, from my supervisor, Professor Marianna Visser, that this thesis has immensely benefited from. She has constantly challenged, encouraged, and guided me throughout this process, which, because of her support, has been incredibly rewarding. Secondly, I express deep gratitude to the Graduate School (Faculty of Arts and Social Sciences – University of Stellenbosch) for the funding/scholarship extended to me through the African Doctoral Academy (ADA), which has made this work see the light of day.

I express profound gratitude to the Department of English and Communication of the Midlands State University, especially the Chair, Dr. T. D. Javangwe, for the opportunity to learn and for all the moral support (especially in circumventing the office bureaucracies). I also express, in this regard, gratitude to the following members from the department: Ernest Jakaza, Cuthbert Tagwirei and Hugh Mangeya. The following people also deserve special mention: My mother, Mrs. Joyce Sabao ‘Snr’, (who has always been a constant pillar of strength), all my siblings (Sam, Tafadzwa, Linda and Ashley, for the moral support), Samusha Muneri (for the constructive beer outings and the banter), my beloved uncles Mr Nicholas Masunga and Mr. Brian Muzemba. Professor Charles Pfukwa (for encouraging me *kuenda kuschool*) and Dr. William Zivenge (for the inspiration).

Lastly, and most importantly, to two very important people to me: my daughter Bethel Joyce Takudzwa for all the patience and the love that inspires me to work and my ‘son’ Sibusiso (who always ‘hated’ Uncle Terry for ‘making fun of jokes’!). Finally, the best (and probably the only one!) of the best friends I will ever meet in this lifetime, Ms. Asante Lucy Mtenje (who was always the encouragement I always needed to take on this challenge through ‘the pushes’ and most of all, for making me believe in life and myself! I dearly miss you, dear ‘friend’! and always will)

All errors, shortcomings and half-truths that lie herein in this thesis are entirely mine, and not in way of my supervisor(s) nor of any of the persons mentioned above.

To Bethel, ukakwanisa kuronda matsimba angu ini baba vako, ungangipase manyemwe mwanangu!

## DEDICATION

*This work is dedicated to the memory of all my heroes, my father David Sabao  
(31/05/51 – 15/12/07), you are all of them!*

*...and to my two daughters:*

*Bethel Joyce Takudzwa*

*&*

*Herschelle Coleen 'Jnr' Kuzivakwashe (24/03/09 – 11/04/09)*

*...and to my 'son', Sibusiso*

## THE ANALYTICAL KEY USED IN THE APPRAISAL ANALYSIS OF DATA IN THIS STUDY<sup>1</sup>

### **KEY**

**bold underlining** = inscribed (explicit) negative attitude

**bold** = implicit (implied) negative attitude

*italics underlined* = inscribed positive attitude

*italics* = invoked positive attitude

boxed material = heterogloss (material attributed to an external source)

The subtype of the attitude is indicated in square brackets immediately following the relevant span of text:

[j] = judgement (positive/negative assessment of human behaviour in terms of social norms)

[ap] = appreciation (positive/negative assessment of objects, artefacts, events and states of affairs in terms of systems of aesthetics and other systems of social valuation)

[af] = affect (positive/negative emotional response); 1<sup>st</sup> af = first person or authorial affect; 3<sup>rd</sup> af = observed affect, i.e. the reporter describing the emotional responses of third parties.

### **Kinds of attribution**

<ack> = ‘acknowledgement’: material is attributed to some external source by means of quotation and related formulations. Nothing in the lexicogrammar of the words by which the quotation is framed indicates where the writer stands with respect to propositions being presented – i.e. there is no overt indication of the writer favouring or disfavouring the attributed material. It is however possible that the writer’s position vis-à-vis the attributed material will be indicated elsewhere in the text. Attribution is typically via a formulation involving reporting verbs – for example, “X stated that...”, “X argues that...”, “X believes that...” or through adjuncts such as “according to X...”

<end> = ‘endorsement’: material is attributed to an external source – as is the case with acknowledgement – but the framing is such as to indicate that the writer holds the material as true or valid – for example by means of ‘factive’ reporting such as ‘to prove’, ‘to show’ or ‘to demonstrate’;

<dist> = ‘distancing’: material is attributed to an external source – as in the case of acknowledgement – but the framing is such as to indicate that the writer holds the material to be still open to question, as not yet proved. Distancing in English is typically achieved by the use of the reporting verb ‘to claim’ and by the use of so called ‘scare quotes’.

\*\*\* There is a notion of ‘proclamation’ <proc> which Van and Thomson (2008) describe as those instances when the reporter makes overt interventions into the text which “present themselves as challenging or dismissing some alternative viewpoints.”

<sup>1</sup> This analytical key, used in the analysis of the occurrence of evaluative language in the news reports, is also reproduced in section 4.4 of this study.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>Declaration</b> .....	<b>ii</b>
<b>Abstract</b> .....	<b>iii</b>
<b>Opsomming</b> .....	<b>iv</b>
<b>Acknowledgements</b> .....	<b>vi</b>
<b>Dedication</b> .....	<b>vii</b>
<b>The Analytical key used in analysis of data in this study</b> .....	<b>viii</b>

### CHAPTER 1: INTRODUCTION

1.1	Introduction to the study .....	1
1.2	Background and rationale of the study .....	2
1.3	The scope of the study .....	4
1.4	Objectives of the study .....	5
1.5	Research questions .....	6
1.6	Preview of key findings and significance of the study .....	7
1.7	Organization of the thesis .....	8

### CHAPTER 2: ‘GENRE’ THEORETIC PERSPECTIVES, NEWSPAPER GENRES AND THE ‘OBJECTIVITY’ IDEAL IN NEWS DISCOURSE

2.1	Introduction .....	10
2.2	Theorising ‘Genre’ in Media (Newspaper) Discourse .....	11
2.3	Theorising/Locating ‘Genre’ in Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) .....	22
2.4	Newspaper genres, discourse and rhetorical structure(s) .....	24
2.4.1	The textuality of news genres .....	25
2.5	Rhetorical and Textual Structure: Comparing news reports and editorials .....	33
2.6	The ‘objectivity’ ideal in news reporting/newspaper discourse .....	36
2.7	Summary .....	44

### CHAPTER 3: APPRAISAL AND EVALUATION, THE ‘REPORTER VOICE’ AND ‘OBJECTIVITY’ IN NEWSPAPER GENRES

3.1	Introduction .....	46
3.2	Systemic Functional Linguistics: An Overview .....	47

3.3	Appraisal Framework as developed from SFL .....	51
3.4	Appraisal resources (or sub-domains).....	53
3.4.1	ATTITUDE.....	54
3.5	Appraisal and Evaluation in news discourse.....	59
3.6	‘Voices and control’ in Zimbabwean media[ted] discourse .....	61
3.7	The ‘reporter voice’ and objectivity/media[ted] bias.....	73
3.8	Summary .....	78

## **CHAPTER 4: EVALUATING THE ‘REPORTER VOICE’ AND ‘CONTROVERSY’ IN REPORTING THE DEATH OF RETIRED GENERAL SOLOMON MUJURU AND THE AFTERMATH IN ZIMBABWEAN NEWSPAPERS**

4.1	Introduction .....	79
4.2	Contextualising Mujuru’s death: A brief biography/background .....	82
4.3	Contextualising the ‘Announcement’ of the death of Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru in the Zimbabwean press .....	83
4.4	Analytical key for analysing news reports in the current study .....	86
4.5	Analysing the news reports ‘announcing’ Mujuru’s death .....	87
4.5.1	<i>The Herald</i> (16 August, 2011) .....	87
4.5.2	<i>Newsday</i> (16 August, 2011) .....	92
4.5.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (18 August, 2011) .....	96
4.5.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (19 – 25 Nyamavhuvhu/August, 2011) .....	104
4.5.5	<i>Umthunywa</i> (19 – 25 kuNcwabakazi/August, 2011) .....	113
4.5.6	Comparative analytic perspective .....	121
4.6	News reports on the beginning of the inquest into Mujuru’s death .....	122
4.6.1	<i>The Herald</i> (17 January, 2012) .....	123
4.6.2	<i>Newsday</i> (16 January, 2012) .....	136
4.6.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (26 January, 2012) .....	140
4.6.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (19 Ndira/January, 2012) .....	149
4.6.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	152
4.7	The end of the inquest into Mujuru’s death: Analysing news reports .....	154
4.7.1	<i>The Herald</i> (7 February, 2012) .....	155
4.7.2	<i>Newsday</i> (3 February, 2012) .....	160
4.7.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (9 February, 2012) .....	161

4.7.4	Comparative analytic perspective .....	168
4.8	Summary .....	170

## **CHAPTER 5: SANCTIONING AN ANTI-SANCTIONS CAMPAIGN IN ZIMBABWE? CROSS-LINGUISTIC ANALYSIS OF THE ‘REPORTER VOICE’ AND OBJECTIVITY IN ‘HARD’ NEWS REPORTS**

5.1	Introduction .....	172
5.2	Contextualising the ‘sanctions’ in Zimbabwean politics and media.....	173
5.3	The GPA, GNU and the ‘sanctions’ debate .....	178
5.4	Backgrounding the anti-sanctions campaign .....	182
5.4.1	<i>The Herald</i> (28 February, 2011) .....	182
5.4.2	<i>Newsday</i> (27 February, 2011) .....	189
5.4.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (3 March, 2011) .....	195
5.4.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (21 – 27 Ndira/January, 2011).....	200
5.4.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	206
5.5	Reporting the launch of the Anti-Sanctions campaign .....	209
5.5.1	<i>The Herald</i> (3 March, 2011) .....	210
5.5.2	<i>Newsday</i> (3 March, 2011) .....	215
5.5.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (3 March, 2011) .....	221
5.5.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (11 – 17 Kurume/March, 2011).....	228
5.5.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	233
5.6	Reporting the extension of the sanctions against Zimbabwe .....	235
5.6.1	<i>The Herald</i> (4 May, 2011) .....	236
5.6.2	<i>Newsday</i> (17 May, 2012) .....	240
5.6.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (17 May, 2012) .....	244
5.6.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (29 Ndira/January – 4 Kukadzi/February, 2010).....	252
5.6.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	256
5.7	Summary .....	258

## **CHAPTER 6: AUTHORIAL ‘STANCE’, ‘CONTROVERSY’ AND ‘OBJECTIVITY’ IN REPORTING THE MAKING OF A NEW CONSTITUTION IN ZIMBABWEAN NEWSPAPERS**

6.1	Introduction .....	260
-----	--------------------	-----

6.2	Contextualising the news constitution making programme and impending ‘fresh’ elections in contemporary Zimbabwean politics .....	262
6.3	The GNU, the constitution making process and impending elections .....	265
6.4	Analysing news reports on COPAC’s problems .....	267
6.4.1	<i>The Herald</i> (29 March, 2012) .....	269
6.4.2	<i>Newsday</i> (18 November, 2011).....	273
6.4.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (30 September, 2010) .....	277
6.4.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (1 Chikunguru/July, 2010).....	285
6.4.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	290
6.5	Reporting the political ‘reactions’ to the draft constitution .....	293
6.5.1	<i>The Herald</i> (3 August, 2012) .....	295
6.5.2	<i>Newsday</i> (3 August, 2012) .....	301
6.5.3	<i>Zimbabwe Independent</i> (4 August, 2012) .....	304
6.5.4	<i>Kwayedza</i> (8 Kurume/March, 2012) .....	311
6.5.5	Comparative analytic perspective .....	316
6.6	Summary .....	318

## **CHAPTER 7: SUMMARY AND CONCLUSION**

7.1	Introduction .....	320
7.2	Main Findings .....	320
7.2.1	‘Reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity’ in ‘controversial’ ‘hard news’ reports .....	320
7.2.2	The generic structure of ‘hard news’ reports .....	323
7.3	Contributions of the study .....	325
7.3.1	Contributions to the field of discourse analysis and genre analysis in Zimbabwe.....	325
7.3.2	Contributions to the understanding of the use of the ‘reporter voice’ in the study and analysis of media genres across languages .....	326
7.4	Suggestions/Directions for further research.....	328

<b>BIBLIOGRAPHY .....</b>	<b>330</b>
---------------------------	------------

## **LIST OF FIGURES**

Figure 2.1	The Inverted Pyramid structure .....	28
------------	--------------------------------------	----

Figure 2.2	The Orbital Structure of ‘hard news’ .....	31
Figure 3.1	Ideational, Interpersonal and Textual metafunctions of language .....	50
Figure 3.2	An overview of the Appraisal system/resources.....	53
Figure 3.3	Comparing and contrasting objective and subjective stances/resources.....	74
Figure 3.4	The reporter voice .....	75

## **LIST OF TABLES**

Table 2.1	Bhatia’s Four Move Rhetorical Structure .....	29
Table 3.1	The ‘social esteem’ system of JUDGEMENT .....	56
Table 3.2	The ‘social sanction’ system of JUDGEMENT.....	56

# CHAPTER 1

## Introduction

### 1.1. Introduction to the study

The study examines the discourse linguistic question of ‘objectivity’ (or ‘neutrality’) in ‘controversial’ news reports on ‘hard news’ controversies in Zimbabwean newspapers cross-linguistically and from an Appraisal linguistic theoretical perspective. It thus compares the textuality of Zimbabwean printed news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele from the English newspapers (*The Herald*, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday*), the Shona newspaper (*Kwayedza*) and the Ndebele newspaper (*Umthunywa*) during the period between January 2010 and August 2012. This investigation of Zimbabwean printed media focuses largely on ‘controversial’ news reports and this period represents an interesting epoch in the country’s political and economic landscapes. Politically, the period is characterized by a Government of National Unity (GNU) – a power-sharing government between Zimbabwe’s three major political parties – the Zimbabwe African National Union Patriotic Front (ZANU PF) – led by the incumbent president Robert Gabriel Mugabe and the two formation Movement for Democratic Change (MDC) that is, MDC-T<sup>2</sup> (the formation led by Morgan Tsvangirai, regarded as the biggest political challenge to Mugabe since the attainment of independence in 1980) and MDC-N (the breakaway formation once led by Professor Arthur Mutambara and now led by Professor Welshman Ncube). The political settlement was a culmination of negotiations after the heavily disputed 2008 presidential elections<sup>3</sup>.

This political situation has highly polarized the media and subsequently, media stances which evince inclinations towards either of the two major parties to the unity government, the Zimbabwe African National Union Patriotic Front (ZANU PF) and the Movement for Democratic Change (MDC). The study analyses news reports selected from the English newspapers (*The Herald*, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday*), the Shona newspaper (*Kwayedza*) and the Ndebele newspaper (*Umthunywa*) for their rhetorical potential<sup>4</sup> and the

---

<sup>2</sup> The two factions of MDC are identified by the first letters of the surnames of their leaders. MDC-T is thus the faction led by Morgan Tsvangirai and MDC-N is the faction led by Professor Welshman Ncube. MDC-N was formerly known as MDC-M when it was still being led by Professor Arthur Mutambara.

<sup>3</sup> See section 5.1 for a fuller discussion of this political context.

<sup>4</sup> It is important to note that *The Herald*, *Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa* are government-owned newspapers whereas the *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday* are privately-owned newspapers. There are no privately-owned vernacular (indigenous language) newspapers in the country.

‘objectivity’ ideal as theorised through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration<sup>5</sup>. ‘Controversial News’ in the context of this study is referent to those news issues/stories that render themselves to generating multifaceted opinions among people within the social, political, economic context in which the event or story takes place or is reported from. The analyses of such news in this study focuses on news reports around three very ‘topical’ and ‘controversial’ issues in Zimbabwe in the context of the GNU – the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru, the European Union (EU) and United States of America (USA) imposed economic sanctions and the new constitution making programme.

The study focuses specifically on the comparative analysis of, in the English, Shona and Ndebele printed media, the ‘objectivity’ ideal in news that are supposedly factual and non-opinionated through the theoretical spectacles of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration as well as the ‘orbital structure’. The notion of ‘reporter voice’ is theorised in the study as a configuration that establishes a taxonomy for analysing the proliferation of authorial attitudinal and evaluative meanings in news texts based on the identification of established/establishable key evaluative and attitudinal meanings that identify the writer with establishable ideological leanings (Iedema, Feez & White, 1994: White, 2000a, 2000b, 2004, 2006: Martin & White, 2005: Van & Thomson, 2008: Lukin, 2008: Höglund, 2008: Thomson, Fukui & White, 2008).

## **1.2. Background and rationale of the study**

Analyses of the use of language in news media has been the focus of many studies, the most influential among them being those conducted by van Dijk (1983, 1988), Bell (1991, 1998), Iedema, Feez and White (1994), White (1998), Vo (2011). The current study examines news reports as dialectical discourse and analyses the linguistic notion of ‘objectivity’/‘neutrality’ as well as the generic structure (cognitive and rhetorical) of ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers cross-linguistically. In line with Iedema et al (1994), White (1997, 1998) and Vo (2011), the study also investigates the notions of intertextuality in news media by focusing specifically on how the use of ‘voices’ in news reports provides ways in which we can interpret the ideological and attitudinal evaluations expressed in the news reports, especially those of the authorial voice.

---

<sup>5</sup> The notion of ‘reporter voice’ is used in this study as to identify rhetorical markers by which a journalist implicitly or explicitly selects languages in order to win an audience towards his/her point of view. The notion is fully discussed and theorised in sections 2.4.1.4 and 3.7.

The study furthermore addresses a very critical component in the examination of the trends in journalistic discourse – the comparison between journalistic reporting cultures from different languages. The importance of such cross-linguistic analyses is in that they shed more light on whether or otherwise different languages operate similarly in terms of the generic (cognitive move/rhetorical) structure and journalistic voice. The study reviews previous studies that have sought to undertake such an enterprise. Among the most notable of these are Wang (2007), Thomson, Fukui and White (2008), Thomson, White and Kitley (2008), Lukin (2005b, 2008), Knox and Patpong (2008), Höglund (2008), Van & Thomson (2008), Vo (2011). To the knowledge of this researcher, at this point however, no research has attempted yet to compare news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele from such perspectives. Such a comparative analyses done in this study is important insofar as it provides the platform from which comparative conclusions can be drawn in terms of the generic textuality of news reports in African cultures, specifically Zimbabwean languages' journalistic cultures.

This research conducted in this thesis is inspired by the observation that, despite an abundance of studies on the language of the media, few (if any) studies have been done in the area of Appraisal and Evaluation of media texts in African languages, specifically Zimbabwean indigenous languages. Most of the linguistic and other related studies on the language of the Zimbabwean media done before have largely been in the English language reporting cultures and have been done from different theoretical explications, largely those of content analysis. For example some of notable works done so far include: Discourse Analysis (Bowman, 2006: Ekström, 2007) Critical Discourse Analysis (Fairclough, 1995: Archakis & Tsakona, 2009: van Dijk, 2004), Content Analysis (McCombs, 2005: Campbell, 2006: Bowman, 2006: Reason and García, 2007: Philo, 2008: St John III, 2009), Parameter based analysis (Bednarek, 2006), Political Economy (George, 2007), Communication Theory (Kunelius, 2006), Textual Analysis (Fürsich, 2009), Power and Governance (Foucault, 1984a: Andrejevic, 2008) Appraisal and Evaluation (Martin, 2000: Hunston & Thompson, 2000: Martin & White, 2005: Archakis and Tsakona, 2010: White, 1997: Scott, 2008).

Some of the notable works done outside the scope of English language broadsheet reporting cultures include the following: Vietnamese (Van & Thomson, 2008), Japanese (Thomson, Fukui & White, 2008: Sano, 2008), French (Caffarel & Rechniewski, 2010), Thai (Knox & Patpong, 2008), Spanish and Argentinian (Lukin, 2008), Indonesian, (Kitley, 2008), Finnish,

(Höglund, 2008). Also, in view of the foregoing, the study seeks to explore the extent to which the cross-linguistic evidence on the comparative investigation of the nature of Zimbabwean newspaper reporting in English, Shona and Ndebele contributes to and/or necessitates the refinement, extensions and/or modification of the theory of Appraisal and Evaluation.

### **1.3. The scope of the study**

The study is concerned with the analysis of ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele. News genres are diverse and cover a multifarious range of issues. Focus of corpus in this study is on news reports of what can be seen as controversial news. As such, the corpus is largely biased towards news reports on political issues and events. This is so in the context of the current political governance which has witnessed a huge number of highly contested and contentious political debates and ‘wars’ around political issues of national interest between the political parties in the GNU. The specific reasons for the selection of news reports analysed in the study lies in the selected focus of study – ‘controversial news’. As such, the political ‘wars’ that characterised Zimbabwean politics and media before the formation of the GNU, which divisions evince themselves further in the operations of the GNU are a good source of news reports for such a research focus.

Secondly, the larger part of the news reports analysed in the study are largely from English language newspapers. This choice of selection that presents fewer indigenous language news reports in this study is due to the focus, content and context of reporting in vernacular newspapers in Zimbabwe. Newspapers in Shona and Ndebele are highly regionalised in the country and as such largely deal with the reporting of localised/regionalised news, which often than not is largely development oriented. Where political issues are reported in these newspapers, they are mostly confined to the politics of local governance and thus rarely run parallel to the news reports published in the English newspapers, both daily and weekly, which are in terms of circulation and focus largely national in orientation. It was, because of this, difficult to sometimes find news reports in the African languages, that is Shona and Ndebele, newspapers which focused on similar issues or events as those in the English newspapers, and which could be used as comparisons to the English news reports. This was because of their limitations in terms of content, context and focus of reporting. The multilingual situation in Zimbabwe which has seen the elevation of English to the official language of communication also has an influence of the failure of indigenous languages

newspapers to publish nationally. This thus inevitably results in the larger part of news in Zimbabwe being reported in the English language.

#### **1.4. Objectives of the study**

The purpose of this study is threefold. Firstly, it aims at providing a detailed account of the generic structure (cognitive and rhetorical) of ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele. There is thus an inherent interest here in investigating whether the distinctive orbital structure arrangement of ‘hard news’ reports observed by Thomson, White and Kitley (2008), Thomson, Fukui and White (2008) and Thomson and White (2008) to be predominantly operating in the English broadsheet reporting culture also operates in Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele. Secondly, the study seeks to draw conclusions on the comparative analysis of the proliferation (or lack thereof) of the ‘reporter voice’ reporting culture in news reports in the three languages.

Observing and analysing the proliferation of evaluative resources in the news reports, the study furthermore seeks to analyse the ‘objectivity’/‘neutrality’ ideal in Zimbabwean news reports in the three languages. This is done through the analysis of the rhetorical structures of news reports within the theoretical explications of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Lastly, the study also analyses the use made of ‘voices’ in news reports. In doing this, the study analyses the notion of intertextuality in news reports as characterised by the use of external voices through attribution. The study thus explores the evaluative use of attributed materials in news reports in the three Zimbabwean languages and how such an analysis aids to the study and analysis of journalistic objectivity.

In making such analyses towards the three broad goals expressed above, the study was guided by the following research goals:

- To explore the notions of Appraisal and Evaluation in the Zimbabwean media texts occurring across the three journalistic cultures of English, Shona and Ndebele.
- To examine how ‘controversial news’ is represented in Zimbabwean media and how such representations evince the ideological position of the author(s)/authorial voice.
- To explore the use of the ‘reporter voice’ in media texts and in media discourse in Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele.

- To examine cross-linguistically/cross-culturally news reports in Zimbabwean English, Ndebele and Shona newspapers on ‘objectivity’, invoking appraisal theory and the ‘hard news’ genre.
- To examine the linguistic structure/journalistic style of news reports within Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele and how this aids to the analysis of the texts in terms of their rhetorical potential.

### **1.5. Research questions**

In its analysis of the rhetorical potential of texts selected from the three Zimbabwean reporting cultures, the study focused on, and was guided by the following research questions:

- How are analytical resources provided by Appraisal and Evaluation theoretic frameworks contributing to the analysis the objective – subjective news reporting dialectic in Zimbabwean media texts?
- How are Appraisal and Evaluation devices invoked to account for the manner in which reporters/journalists manage attitudinal meanings by which positive or negative assessments are conveyed or activated on particular ‘controversial’ issues or topics in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele?
- How are media texts occurring in these Zimbabwean journalistic cultures distinguishing (or otherwise) between the objective and the subjective, the factual and the opinion?
- How are Appraisal and Evaluation devices manifesting in Zimbabwean printed media texts in terms of appraisal, attribution, ideological stance, rhetorical potential and evaluative positioning?
- How are evoked and/or provoked attitude(s) construed in printed media texts occurring in these Zimbabwean journalistic reporting cultures in English, Shona and Ndebele?
- What use (if any), is made of ‘authorial endorsement’ and ‘authorial distancing’ as well as ‘agency and attitudinal implications’ in Zimbabwean printed media texts in English, Shona and Ndebele?
- How are the Appraisal theoretical devices of AFFECT, JUDGEMENT, and APPRECIATION exhibited comparatively in Zimbabwean printed media texts in English, Shona and Ndebele?

- How are the Appraisal analytical resources of invoked and inscribed evaluation manifested comparatively in Zimbabwean printed media texts cross-linguistically?

## **1.6. Preview of key findings and significance of the study**

The study investigates the notion of ‘objectivity’/neutrality in ‘hard news’ reports on ‘controversial’ issues in Zimbabwe during the period January 2010 to July 2012. The study made several significant contributions to the understanding and analysing of news genres, specifically the ‘hard news’ genre in non-English broadsheet news reports. This section constitutes a preview of the findings and conclusions drawn from the analyses in the thesis.

With regards to the textuality of ‘hard news’ texts within Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele, the study observes that these are generally largely organised around the orbital structure as theorised by Thomson, White and Kitley (2008), Thomson, Fukui and White (2008) and Thomson and White (2008) to be predominantly operating in the English broadsheet reporting culture. Several seemingly subtle, yet theoretically challenging differences however, were observed in the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in general and in all the three languages under study. While White (1997, 1998) theorises English broadsheet ‘hard news’ reports to be organised around a single nucleus with the satellites of the news report specifying that nucleus, this is not always the with regards to Zimbabwean news reports across languages. News reports in Zimbabwean journalistic culture in general evince a rhetorical pattern through which extratextual material that does not directly specify the nucleus as represented by the headline and lead are used as contextual satellites to contextualise the propositions of the nuclei and the news reports in a broader political or socio-political space. Typically, such a structural arrangement of the news reports presents evidence for rethinking the notions of a single nucleus in a news reports and perhaps focus more on explorations of the possibilities of multi-nuclei.

In terms of the evaluative use of language, the notion of ‘reporter voice’ and of the ‘objectivity’ ideal, the study establishes that news reports in the Zimbabwean English, Shona and Ndebele newspapers generally largely operate within the reporter voice. The news reports, to a large extent, attempt to remain free of explicit authorial evaluative/attitudinal resources. There are however several significant instances in which such a pursuit of the ‘objectivity’ ideal is flouted and indeed inscribed authorial attitudinal evaluations are expressed. The major way in which authorial evaluative inscriptions are avoided in the news

reports is through the use of strategic impersonalisation – largely achieved through attribution. There is a heavy use of attributed highly evaluative resources in most of the news reports from all the newspapers under study. Because of this, the research observed that the authorial voice, through such strategic manoeuvring, avoids explicit evaluations by attributing all evaluations to external sources. This however does not always, the research argues, exonerate the authorial voice from these evaluations made by the external sources.

The study further analyses how such external voices are not only used in the news reports as evaluative outlets for the sources only but also for the authorial voice as well. While authors ‘strategically present themselves as objective by not passing judgement on events and people themselves, [attributing] any values of judgement to outside sources whose views and observations are introduced into the news reports as quotations’ (Vo, 2011), the study reveals that often than not, this is a mere ‘strategic style’ through which the authorial voice expresses its subjectivities through what Jullian (2011) describes as ‘appraising through someone else’s words’. Jullian sums this kind of observation up when she argues that, ‘through attribution, the writer voices someone else’s views, theories or beliefs, placing the responsibility for these propositions on their averrer. This choice has enormous rhetorical implications, since when the writer chooses to present a proposition as attributed s/he detaches him/herself from the content and signals explicitly that it derives from a source. The skilled exploitation of the interplay between averral and attribution allows the writer to construct a stance by transferring the role of the averrer. Thus, authors can make convenient use of attribution by quoting heavily evaluative materials while delegating their accountability to someone else.’

## **1.7. Organisation of the thesis**

Chapter 1, the introductory chapter provides a brief discussion on the background to the study in an effort to highlight the knowledge gap that this research seeks to fill. This was followed by the description of the research objectives and goals, the research questions and the scope of the study. The last section of the chapter provided a summation of the key findings of the research as well as a brief discussion of the significance of the study.

Chapter 2 presents a review of related literature. The chapter first discusses literature on genre theoretic perspectives and then focuses on the theorisation of media genres in the existing body of literature. In doing this, the chapter discusses the theorisation of genre from different traditions of English for Specific Purposes (ESP), Genre Studies, New Rhetorical Studies and

Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL). This discussion seeks to problematise media genres within the theories.

Chapter 3 provides an account of the theoretical framework used in the analysis of data in the research. As such, the chapter discusses the fundamental theoretical explications of SFL, the notion of ‘voices’ in media discourse and the ‘reporter voice’ configuration as it relates to the ‘objectivity’ ideal. It further reviews literature on media language using the Appraisal and Evaluation theoretic resources in an attempt to contextualise the study of media ‘objectivity’ from linguistic theoretical perspectives.

Chapter 4 is the first of the three data analysis chapters and focuses on the analysis of news reports on the ‘controversies’ surrounding the death (and the aftermath of the death) of one of Zimbabwe’s peerless liberation war heroes, Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru. The analysis focuses on the ‘reporter voice’, the ‘objectivity’ ideal and the cognitive and rhetorical structure in/of the news reports

Chapter 5, the second data analysis chapter, focuses on the analysis of another politically ‘controversial’ issue in Zimbabwean politics – the sanctions debate. The sanctions have highly polarised Zimbabwean society with regards to their impositions and effects. As such, the sanctions debate has also generated so much media attention and reactions from the general society.

Chapter 6, the third data analysis chapter, focuses on the analysis of the ‘controversial’ and contentious new constitution making process in Zimbabwe. The constitution making process has been characterised by political fronting and ‘wars’ between the political parties in the GNU and news reports on the progress of the process makes for interesting comparative analyses in as far as ‘controversy’ is concerned.

Chapter 7 is the conclusion of the research and summates the research findings by comparing the analyses of news reports from the English, Shona and Ndebele news reports in line with the goals and objectives of the research as highlighted in sections **1.3**, **1.4** and **1.5** of this chapter.

## CHAPTER 2

### **‘Genre’ theoretical perspectives, newspaper genres and the ‘objectivity’ ideal in news discourse**

#### **2.1. Introduction**

The central aim of this thesis as has been established in the previous chapter is to examine how the notions on the ‘reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity/neutrality’ can be accounted for through linguistic theoretical principles. The study, as discussed in the previous chapter, focuses on the exploration of the notion of ‘reporter voice’ as it relates to ‘objectivity’ in Zimbabwean newspaper reporting in English, Shona and (isi)Ndebele. The analysis is couched in Appraisal and Genre theoretic theoretical insights. As such, the current study aims to evaluate how such a configuration as the ‘reporter voice’ can be a useful theoretical tool in analysing the notion of ‘objectivity/neutrality’ in the reporting of ‘controversial news’ in Zimbabwean newspapers. The study focuses specifically on one particular genre of newspaper discourse (the ‘hard news’), thus the chapter initially undertakes a review of the major theoretical approaches focusing on the theoretical issues surrounding the conceptual frameworks for the identification and the taxonomic categorisation of texts into specific genres within newspaper discourse, specifically the ‘hard news’ report.

This study furthermore aims to explore other theoretical issues pertinent to the current study specifically, the notion of ‘objectivity’ as it relates to the representation of ‘reality’ and ‘facticity’ in news reporting as well as the notion of ‘reporter voice’ as it relates to theorising ‘objectivity’ in news reporting within the broader genre of media discourse. The chapter thus also reviews and explores current views on ‘objectivity’ and the ‘reporter voice’ for the purposes of locating the current study within the existing corpus of scholarship. It is also through such a review of literature that we can successfully contextualise the current study both theoretically and empirically. The chapter first reviews literature on perspectives to the study of ‘genre’ and the ‘genre theory’ theoretic debates on what framework(s) should inform the criteria for the identification and segmentation of texts as belonging to particular genres as well as the creation of taxonomies for categorising texts as belonging to identifiable and specific genres. This section of the chapter discusses a number of varied theoretical frameworks which make different theoretical propositions as to the criteria we can/should use to identify texts and genres. The chapter thus discusses propositions made from English for

Specific Purposes (ESP) (Bhatia 1993, 2004) and new rhetoric studies perspectives (Miller 1984/1994, Wang 2007) and Genre Analysis (Swales, 1990) as well as Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) (Martin 1997, 2000). This is done in order to contextualise Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) and Appraisal (the major theoretical propositions adopted in the current study for studying and analysing newspaper genres) propositions on ‘genre’ within both the preceding as well as parallel theoretical propositions.

The chapter further goes on to discuss, through the review of previous research, the two most central concepts to this study, that is, genre categories in newspaper discourse and ‘objectivity’. In reviewing literature on the ‘objectivity/neutrality’ ideal in news reporting, the chapter discusses ‘objectivity’ as it is theorised and understood from within both journalistic (social science) and linguistic theoretical approaches. Taking such a multi-perspective approach to viewing the understanding of the concept from both linguistic and journalistic scholarship traditions is important is the process of establishing working definitions and defining parameters for the current research. Also, it is important in the sense that the current research seeks to largely make use of linguistic theoretic resources to analyse and interpret newspaper texts occurring within journalistic discourses and cultures.

The last focus of discussion in the chapter is the literature on the ‘reporter voice’. Of course, this notion is explored more vividly in the next chapter in which it is aptly contextualised within SFL studies of it. This is because it is within the theoretical framework of SFL that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration is framed. In this chapter, such a brief introductory review of this notion is done to provide a theoretical grounding for its in-depth discussion in Chapter 3 as well as for the analysis of texts to follow in later chapters. Through this review, the chapter seeks to establish a working definition of the term for the current study. The notion of ‘reporter voice’ is also important as the discussion will highlight, within the theoretical conceptual framework of SFL and Appraisal as it represents the study of the linguistic resources through which we can analyse the occurrence of media biases and reporter subjectivities through analysing the language of news reports evaluatively.

## **2.2. Theorising ‘Genre’ in Media (Newspaper) Discourse**

The current study focuses, as has been explained earlier on, is the analysis of the ‘reporter voice’ in relation to ‘objectivity’ in one of the major genres of newspaper writing, the ‘hard news’ articles. In order to determine how we identify each of the categorised genres, we need

to understand how we can theorise our classification of such texts into the said genres. This section reviews previous research on frameworks on how genres can be theorised and identified. It thus discusses 'genre' as it is conceptually theorised from ESP, Genre Studies and Rhetoric Studies. The study of genres is a vastly researched field. The term 'genre', according to Chandler (1997/2000) comes from the French (and originally Latin) word for 'kind' or 'class'. The term, he argues, is widely used in rhetoric, literary theory, media theory, and more recently linguistics, to refer to a distinctive *type* of 'text'. Broadly defined 'genres' are often easily identified and classified based on professional uses of language, such as within the law (legal texts), within medicine (medical texts) within politics (political texts) and so on.

Theorising how genres must/should be identified through a theory of genre however continues to be problematic. Bawarshi and Reiff (2010) argue that, 'despite the wealth of genre scholarship over the last thirty years, the term genre itself remains fraught with confusion, competing with popular theories of genre as text type and as an artificial system of classification'. They postulate that part of the confusion has to do with whether genres merely sort and classify the experiences, events, and actions they represent (and are therefore conceived of as labels or containers for meaning), or whether genres reflect, help shape, and even generate what they represent in culturally defined ways (and therefore play a critical role in meaning-making). As Chandler (1997, 2000) observes, the concept of a theory of genre continues to be elusive. The criterion used for the generic classification of texts (both spoken and written) as belonging to given genres seems to continue to be clouded in ambivalence. Evidence from existing scholarship in its divergence argues for criterion based on either communicative purpose (Swales, 1990: Chandler, 1997/2000) or purpose and audience/discourse community i.e. that the discourse community of the text determines how the writing will be approached, consumed and understood and will also determine the overall purpose of the text (Driscoll, 2004 & 2005). Other scholarship argues for a content based approach i.e. what is actually being said in the text, often including the context as well (Bhatia, 1981: Chandler, 1997/2000) whereas others argue for a classification based on linguistic structure i.e. how the content is organized for presentation of information and for the purposes of argumentation. On the other hand, recent scholarship has taken a more stylistic approach that adopts a 'features discrimination' i.e. the language and vocabulary that is used in a text, and which also incorporates structure (Widdowson, 1979: Bhatia, 1981, Halliday). Devitt, Reiff and Bawarshi (2003) examine the weaknesses of these approaches

working independent of each other and propose an approach to generic classification of texts that synthesises tenets from mainstream genre analysis, discourse analysis and linguistic stylistics to create a holistic and more concrete approach to such a generic segmentation of texts.

Wang (2007) also observes that these ‘conflicts’ of/for [a] theory of genre stem from differences in the traditions from which ‘genre’ as a concept is perceived. Wang (2007) notes that the most commonest of these traditions are; (a) New Rhetoric Genres Studies, ‘which argue for genre as rhetorical action based on recurrent situations and for an open principle of genre classification based on rhetorical practice, rather than a closed one based solely on structure, substance, or aim. Genre studies in the new rhetoric focus less on features of the text and more on relations between text and context often by employing ethnographic research or case study methods’ Miller (1984/1994), (b) English for Specific Purposes (ESP) genre analysis studies, proposed by Swales (1990) which ‘proposes the perception of ‘genre’ as ‘a class of communicative events with some shared set of communicative purposes. These purposes are recognised by members of the professional or academic community in which the genre occurs, and thereby constitute the rationale for the genre’ (Swales 1990, Wang 2007) and (c) SFL studies of genre, which largely seek to ‘describe genre as a staged, goal-orientated, and purposeful social activity that people engage in as members of their culture’ (Martin, 1984/1997).

Media discourse is also recognised as a genre/supra-genre, containing within itself genres which also contain within themselves subgenres and sub-subgenres. Swales (1990) defines ‘genres’ as communicative events within discourse communities. Accordingly, these communicative events as Swales (1990) contends are characterised by their communicative purposes and their varieties of linguistic patterns, including structure, content and intended audience. Santosa (2009) contends that these communicative purposes are characterised by the structural moves of the communicative events, which vary across goals, so that in different discourse communities there exists different kinds of functionally and structurally distinct genres. In light of this, Swales (1990) observes that the number of genres is as many as the number of communicative events a discourse community has. Devitt, Reiff and Bawarshi (2003) identify four broad parameters through which, as text types, ‘genres’ can be categorised into taxonomies. Devitt, Reiff and Bawarshi (2003) thus identify such parameters as:

- *Rhetorical purpose and audience*: The discourse community of the text determines “how” the writing will be approached i.e. what discourse community is the text from? What specific “markers” in the text help us determine this? What does the writer assume about the readers of the text? (assumptions about what a reader knows, doesn’t know, what attitudes or assumptions a reader may bring to a text) What type of “image” or “persona” does the writer create for herself or himself? What “role” does the text invite the reader to play? Which rhetorical modes are used: narration, description, definition, summary, classification, illustration, process analysis, comparison/contrast? What is the effect of one or another means of developing the writer’s point? What are the specific purposes of this text? What is the argument that the text is making?
- *Content*: “What” is actually being said in the text? What types of evidence are being used to make the argument? What types of appeals are being used to make the argument? What material is included? What material is omitted and why? How does the writer establish his or her credentials? How does the author use primary and secondary sources? How are quotations used and integrated into the text? Does the author use metaphors? How do these metaphors contribute to the effect of the writing? Or are there repeated images or themes that tie the piece together and contribute to the overall meaning?
- *Structure*: How the content is organized for presentation of information and for the purposes of argumentation. How is the piece structured? How do the parts connect to each other? How do the parts “add up” to the overall point? Where in the text is the argument being made? In general, how long are the sentences? How long are the paragraphs?
- *Linguistic features*: The language and vocabulary that is used in a text. Does the writer use first person (I, me) or prefer terms such as “one” or “the investigator”? What is the effect of this stylistic choice? Are the verbs generally active or passive and why? What types of terminology and language are being used? Is any of the language “in group jargon” for a particular discourse community? How can the author’s language be described? How does the writer’s language help or hinder his/her purpose?

In line with the propositions made by Devitt, Reiff and Bawarshi (2003), Richards and Schmidt (2002) also note that ‘genre’, as a communicative event, is a type of discourse that occurs in a particular setting, that has distinctive and recognisable patterns and norms or

organisation and structure and that has particular and distinctive communicative functions. Quite a number of aspects have been raised in these definitions regards what 'genre' is and how 'genres' are recognisable. In short, the consensus seems to be that a text within a given 'genre' must be distinctive and contain recognisable patterns and that these particular structures serve a particular communicative function. (Chandler, 1997/2000) also concurs that conventional definitions of 'genres' tend to be based on the notion that they constitute particular conventions of content (such as themes or settings) and/or form (including structure and style) which are shared by the texts which are regarded as belonging to them. In a related definition, Martin and Rose (2003) observe that 'genre' as a staged, goal-oriented social process, refers to the various types of social contexts. They note that it is social because we participate in genres with other people, goal-oriented because we use genres to get things done and staged because it usually takes us a few steps to reach our goal. Chandler (1997/2000) furthermore argues that, from the perspective of many scholars, genres first and foremost provide frameworks within which texts are produced and interpreted.

Semiotically, according to Chandler (1997/2000), 'a genre can be seen as a shared code between the producers and interpreters of texts included within it'. (Fowler 1989: 216) quoted in Chandler (1997/2000) goes so far as to suggest that 'communication is impossible without the agreed codes of genre'. In other words, writers/speakers of texts occurring within a particular genre characteristically must share communicative goals and a code with their readers/listeners. This is also the case because within the genres, texts embody authorial attempts to 'position' readers (technically the discourse community with shared communicative goals) using particular 'modes of address' (the shared code – linguistic and structural). The propositions made here are that the writer attempts to connect with his readership through a shared code and in an attempt to fulfil a set of communicative purpose(s) and these manifest themselves especially through the linguistic aesthetics/resources chosen for such expression. (Kress 1988, 107) observes that:

Every genre positions those who participate in a text of that kind: as interviewer or interviewee, as listener or storyteller, as a reader or a writer, as a person interested in political matters, as someone to be instructed or as someone who instructs; each of these positionings implies different possibilities for response and for action. Each written text provides a 'reading position' for readers, a position constructed by the writer for the 'ideal reader' of the text.

Thus, according to Chandler (1997/2000), embedded within texts are assumptions about an 'ideal reader', including their attitudes towards the subject matter and often their class, age, gender and ethnicity. Cited in Chandler (1997/2000), Kress (1988) alluding to the same, defines a genre thus, as 'a kind of text that derives its form from the structure of a (frequently repeated) social occasion, with its characteristic participants and their purposes'.

In light of these observations that 'conflicts' within genre studies result from theoretical differences Wang (2007) observes however that these approaches to the analysis of genres have much in common, with considerable overlap, even though they deal with different issues and sometimes have different theoretical concerns. Wang (2007) presents an argument for the commonalities Bhatia's (2004, p.23) summarisation of some of the common grounds of genre studies across different theoretical traditions as follows.

- (a) Genres are recognizable communicative events, characterized by a set of communicative purposes identified and mutually understood by members of the professional or academic community in which they regularly occur.
- (b) Genres are highly structured and conventionalised constructs, with constraints on allowable contributions not only in terms of the intentions one would like to give expression to and the shape they often take, but also in terms of the lexicogrammatical resources one can employ to give discursive values to such formal features.
- (c) Established members of a particular professional community will have a much greater knowledge and understanding of the use and exploitation of genres than those who are apprentices, new members or outsiders.
- (d) Although genres are viewed as conventionalised constructs, expert members of the disciplinary and professional communities often exploit generic resources to express not only 'private' but also organizational intentions within the constructs of 'socially recognized communicative purposes'.
- (e) Genres are reflections of disciplinary and organizational cultures, and in that sense, they focus on social actions embedded within disciplinary, professional and other institutional practices.
- (f) All disciplinary and professional genres have integrity of their own, which is often identified with reference to a combination of textual, discursive and contextual factors.

Based on the understanding of the three traditions of genre theory discussed above and the propositions they make for the framework(s) for theorising 'genre', Bhatia (2004) puts forward a comprehensive definition of genre.

Genre essentially refers to language use in a conventionalised communicative setting in order to give expression to a specific set of communicative goals of a disciplinary or social institution, which give rise to stable structural forms by imposing constraints on the use of lexico-grammatical as well as discoursal resources. (Bhatia, 2004: 23)

This definition is essentially the working definition of 'genre' in the current study whose aim is to analyse the discursive features of 'hard news' newspaper reports and commentaries of 'controversial news' in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages evaluatively. 'Hard news' reports are conceptualised in this study as a genre 'realised in a conventionalised communicative setting (newspaper articles/reports) in order to give expression to a specific set of communicative goals' (Wang, 2007).

Martin and Rose's (2003) understanding of genre discussed above is informed by Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) and Appraisal theories. They define 'genre' as a process taking place within a particular social context serving a particular social function. Within SFL, the notion of 'genre' refers to meaning that results from language which does a particular job in a particular contextual configuration (Halliday and Hasan, 1985). 'Genre' as it is theorised and contextualised within SFL is discussed in detail in section 2.3 and in Chapter 3 (section 3.2). van Leeuwen (2008) also defines 'genre' as a type of text or communicative event and 'genre analysis' as a study that aims to bring out the characteristics of types of texts. The use of 'genre' as a concept in SFL also differs in two major respects with the conventional linguistic perceptions of it. Eggins and Martin (1997) argue that, linguistic definitions of 'genre' draw largely from the Russian theorist Mikhail Bakhtin's (1986) identification of speech genres as relatively stable types of interactive utterances. Bakhtin (1994) argues that 'speech genres develop as language patterns in particular contexts become predictable and relatively stable'. He argues that,

We learn to cast our speech in generic form and when hearing other's speech we guess its genre from the first words, we predict a certain length, that is, the approximate length of speech and certain compositional structure(s), we foresee the end that is, from the very beginning we have a sense of the speech wholes which is only later differentiated during the speech process. (Bakhtin, 1994: 83).

Underlying Bakhtin's argument is that, we are able to recognise texts as belonging to particular genres based on their textual and structural organisation. In other words, texts within a given genre share particular defined, recognisable and predictable linguistic patterns and contexts. Secondly, within the theoretical scope of SFL, genres are different ways of using language to achieve culturally established tasks, and texts of different genres in this regard are texts which are achieving different purposes in the culture (Eggins and Martin, 1997). In short, Eggins and Martin (1997) explain that within SFL, variations between texts are 'realised through the sequence of functionally distinct stages or steps through which it unfolds'. What we discern from such an argument is that within SFL, genres are differentiated by the 'staging structure of texts'.

In line with the arguments posited by Chandler (1997/2000) about the problematic nature of creating a taxonomy for genres within an occupational or professional discourse, observing the problems that come with definitions, Swales (2004) prefers the notion 'metaphor' than definition when talking about genres because definitions are not 'true' in all possible worlds and all possible times and they may prevent us from seeing newly explored or emerging genres for what they really are. Further compounding the problem on the definition or description of genres, Bhatia (2004) observes that genres vary in terms of their typicality such that a text may be a typical example of a genre or less typical yet still an example of a particular genre. Added to that, relating to what he calls genre embedding, one genre can be placed in another.

This is an argument that Chandler (1997/2000) argues for when he explains that there is a tendency for genres to overlap into other genres. Chandler (1997/2000) observes that defining genres, as situated linguistic behaviour in institutionalised academic or professional settings defined in consistency of communicative purposes (e.g. Swales, 1990 and Bhatia, 2004) is problematic because of such overlaps. This points to the fact that there are 'genres' within genres and that sometimes it is difficult to draw a line between genres as well as between genres and sub-genres. This then brings to the fore, the arguments raised by Chandler (1997/2000) for the existence of supergenres, supragenres, genres, subgenres, sub-subgenres and so on. Thus, for instance, if one takes media discourse as a genre there are sub-genres like newspaper discourse, television discourse, radio discourse and so on, all of which can also be divided into sub-genres and possibly sub-subgenres.

This overlap is amplified by Gledhill (1985, 60) who argues, in line with this observation, that there are no 'rigid rules of inclusion and exclusion' for particular texts to be recognised as belonging to a given genre and that '[g]enres... are not discrete systems, consisting of a fixed number of listable items'. Chandler (1997/2000), observing this argument, argues that it is difficult to make clear-cut distinctions between one genre and another: genres overlap, and there are 'mixed genres'. For example it is not unimaginable within newspaper discourse to find particular linguistic structures and patterns permeating through more than one genre or subgenre. The categorisation of texts into genres based on linguistic and or other structural or contextual resemblances to one another thus becomes problematic. Chandler (1997/2000) thus observes,

Contemporary theorists tend to describe genres in terms of 'family resemblances' among texts (a notion derived from the philosopher Wittgenstein) rather than definitionally (Swales 1990, 49). An individual text within a genre rarely if ever has all of the characteristic features of the genre (Fowler 1989, 215). The family resemblance approach involves the theorist illustrating similarities between some of the texts within a genre. However, the family resemblance approach has been criticized on the basis that 'no choice of a text for illustrative purposes is innocent' (David Lodge, cited in Swales 1990, 50), and that such theories can make any text seem to resemble any other one (Swales 1990, 51). In addition to the *definitional* and *family resemblance* approach, there is another approach to describing genres which is based on the psycholinguistic concept of *prototypicality*. According to this approach, some texts would be widely regarded as being more typical members of a genre than others. According to this approach certain features would 'identify the extent to which an exemplar is *prototypical* of a particular genre' (Swales 1990, 52). Genres can therefore be seen as 'fuzzy' categories which cannot be defined by necessary and sufficient conditions.

The major argument that Chandler raises here is that '[s]pecific genres tend to be easy to recognize intuitively but difficult (if not impossible) to define'. Bhatia (1994) sees 'genre' as 'a recognisable communicative event that regularly occurs'. In his view, 'genres' are 'highly structured and conventionalised constructs which constraint the contribution, the shape people will take and the lexico-grammatical resources'. Bhatia's notion of genre here emphasises on repetitiveness and structural uniqueness, especially in terms of linguistic resources – use of lexis and lexico-grammatical categories. On a basic level, the argument furthered here is that we should be able to recognise a text as belonging to a particular genre by paying particular attention to its features. Particular features which are characteristic of a genre however, are not normally unique to it; it is their relative prominence, combination and functions which are

distinctive (Neale 1980, 22-3). It is easy to underplay the differences *within* a genre. Neale (1980) declares that 'genres are instances of repetition and difference' (Neale 1980, 48). He adds that 'difference is absolutely essential to the economy of genre' (Neale 1980, 50): mere repetition would not attract an audience. Tzvetan Todorov cited in Chandler (1997/2000) argues that 'any instance of a genre will be *necessarily* different'. In line with this perception of 'genre' Chandler (1997/2000) observes that, from the perspective of many scholars, genres first and foremost provide frameworks within which texts are produced and interpreted. Semiotically, a genre can be seen as a shared code between the producers and interpreters of texts included within it. Fowler (1989) goes so far as to suggest that 'communication is impossible without the agreed codes of genre'. Thus, within genres, texts embody authorial attempts to 'position' readers using particular 'modes of address'. Gunther Kress observes that:

Every genre positions those who participate in a text of that kind: as interviewer or interviewee, as listener or storyteller, as a reader or a writer, as a person interested in political matters, as someone to be instructed or as someone who instructs; each of these positionings implies different possibilities for response and for action. Each written text provides a 'reading position' for readers, a position constructed by the writer for the 'ideal reader' of the text. (Kress, 1988: 107)

The argument here is that embedded within texts in any given genre are assumptions about the 'ideal reader', including their attitudes towards the subject matter and often their class, age, gender and ethnicity. Kress (1988:183) cited in Chandler (1997/2000) defines a genre as 'a kind of text that derives its form from the structure of a (frequently repeated) social occasion, with its characteristic participants and their purposes'. Bhatia's (1994) conceptualisation of genre resonates with this perspective as well. Bhatia defines genre in this instance as,

...a recognisable communicative event, characterised by a set of communicative purpose(s) identified and mutually understood by the members of the professional or academic community in which it regularly occurs. Most often it is highly structured and conventionalised with constraints or allowable contributions in terms of their intent, positioning, form and functional value. The constraints are often exploited by the expert members of the discourse communities to achieve private intentions within the framework of socially recognised purpose(s). (Bhatia's, 1994: 14)

What we discern from Bhatia's definition is again the same principles that seem to resonate in most of the definitions discussed in this chapter that texts belonging to a particular genre must share structural resemblances and that they should share functional value, (i.e. rhetorical

purposes) and a shared code. This definition points to a typological framework for categorising structurally and rhetorically similar texts into generic groupings.

Kress and Threadgold (1988) view the notion of 'genres' as referent to texts that occur in particular and given social contexts and/or events. In a sense resonating with Hymes' (1962) 'Ethnography of Speech Model', for Kress and Threadgold (1988), the social event that defines texts as belonging to a given genre is characterised by a number of participants, their social relations and roles, specific goals for interaction, setting/location as well as a set of social practices. Fetzer and Lauerbach (2007) argue that 'genres' vary across cultures, historical eras, social classes and sub-cultures and they are also indicators of social change. This implies that even though genres might be important as they provide a context for understanding the communicative meaning at the particular point in time as texts themselves offer varied reading positions, the terms 'genre' or 'genre analysis' are in themselves problematic. This is, as Kress (1998) explains, due to the fact that since there are no static social structures and social practices, genres are not static too but are in constant mutation. This aspect of genre dynamism implies that differences of genres are not necessarily taxonomic, philosophical and logical in nature but are due to differences of social rules which result in differences in social practices and ultimately differences in linguistic features.

The question of whether media/newspaper discourse is a genre with distinct patterns and norms thus still poses some theoretical problems for genre taxonomy creation. Of course, it should also be noted that there are some authorities who still insist on maintaining a static view in conceptualising 'genre'. These tend to largely view 'genres' from the prototypical text point of view. This is a largely prescriptive perception of 'genre' impressing on prototypicality in genres, a concept similar to the aspect of repetition discussed by Bakhtin (1986, 1994), Swales (1990) and Bhatia (1994). Burton (2002) for example argues, in line with this prescriptivist outlook on genres, that 'the building blocks of genres, its elements as well as the messages that genres communicate all depend on being repeated so that they continue to be known and they continue to be known by the audience.' Burton (2002) reinforces this argument by observing that a genre can become self-perpetuating once its key elements are established. In other words, the thesis established here is that the more texts continue to be prototypical, the easier it is for the discourse community to begin to identify it as belonging to a given genre.

This research however, argues that despite these theoretical and text segmentation issues, there are recognisable patterns and norms of organisation and structure in given texts within media/newspaper discourse which can assist us to categorise texts into distinct genres and subgenres. It is important to note here that despite discussing such theoretical issues, the current research is not essentially a genre analysis one – attempting to create a criterion for the segmentation of media texts – but a linguistic discourse-analytic one that seeks to analyse the rhetorical potential of texts within one major genre of newspaper writing – the hard news genre – as it relates to the notions of ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ in reporting controversial news and only makes use of certain genre-theoretic views in categorising texts within newspaper discourse as a starting point for the analysis to follow. ‘Genre’ is distinct from ‘discourse’ and from ‘style’ though the same text can be analysed in all three of these ways (van Leeuwen, 2008). The focus of the current study is not to define the parameters for segmenting newspaper texts into prototypical texts fitting into distinct genres, but to examine the notions of Appraisal and Evaluation as important facets to understanding ‘objectivity’ in the media and in particular, newspaper news reports.

### **2.3. Theorising/locating ‘genre’ in Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL)**

The manners in which ‘genre’ relates to the study of objectivity within SFL are discussed in detail in Chapter 3. This section briefly discusses how the notion of ‘genre’ is conceptualised within SFL. This is done in a bid to contextualise the current study’s theoretical propositions within the existing corpus of genre literature. Within the conceptual framework of SFL and Appraisal theory, or Hallidayan linguistics (which is the theoretical framework informing this study), ‘genre’ is conceptualised as ‘a meaning which results from language which does a particular job in a particular contextual configuration’ (Halliday and Hasan, 1985). Within SFL, according to Santossa (2009) the term ‘genre specific semantic potential’ is used to define the generic grouping of texts. In line with Halliday and Hasan’s (1985) definition, Martin (1997) also observes that within SFL, ‘genre’ is closely related to the notion of ‘register’ though ‘genre’ is, unlike register, set up above the level of analysing the metafunctions of language (ideational, interpersonal and textual). In other words, what register is concerned with is the manner in which the variables of field, mode and tenor are ‘phased together in a text’. SFL employs genre as part of a project to relate language use to its social context, in particular, ‘the context of culture’ (Mey, 2009).

The definition of genre proposed by Martin (1984) from the perspective of SFL describes genre as ‘a staged, goal-orientated, and purposeful social activity that people engage in as members of their culture’. Kress (1988) explains this further by observing that the social occasions of which texts are part, ‘have a fundamentally important effect on texts. The characteristic features of those situations, purposes of the participants, the goals of the participants all have their effects on the form of the texts which are constructed in those situations. The situations are always conventionalised’. Interest in the study of genre and theorising genre within SFL is argued by (Mey, 2009) to have arisen due to the realisations of ‘the inadequacies of the concept of ‘register’ in explaining the ‘contextual aspects of text.’ The claims made by ‘register’ are that features of given texts are predictable because variations within texts are defined through an analysis of three variables of ‘field’ (subject matter), ‘tenor’ (relationship between participants in the interaction) and ‘mode’ (whether the text is written or spoken).

The analysis of the genre of a text within SFL thus assumes that the overall purpose of the text is achieved through a sequence of stages, each achieving an intermediate purpose (Mey, 2009). The SFL specialist thus analyses a text and by observing ‘a number of related communicative events, first in identify which ones are optional and which ones are obligatory as well as their possible chronological order.’ What the SFL genre analyst does, according to Mey (2009), is to gather texts of a particular genre, examines their structure breaking each example into purpose driven stages. These stages, because they all have different purposes, it can be assumed are realised differently linguistically. Bawarshi and Reiff (2010) possibly provide the most apt conceptualisation of genre within SFL when they observe that,

...[m]ore recently and, again, across various areas of study, genre has come to be defined less as a means of organizing kinds of texts and more as a powerful, ideologically active, and historically changing shaper of texts, meanings, and social actions. From this perspective, genres are understood as forms of cultural knowledge that conceptually frame and mediate how we understand and typically act within various situations. This view recognizes genres as both organizing *and* generating kinds of texts and social actions, in complex, dynamic relation to one another. Such a dynamic view of genre calls for studying and teaching genres beyond only their formal features. Instead, it calls for recognizing how formal features, rather than being arbitrary, are connected to social purposes and to ways of being and knowing in relationship to these purposes. It calls for understanding how and why a genre’s formal features come to exist the way they do, and how and why they make possible certain social actions/relations and not others. In short, it calls for understanding genre knowledge as including not only knowledge of formal

features but also knowledge of what and whose purposes genres serve; how to negotiate one's intentions in relation to genres' social expectations and motives; when and why and where to use genres; what reader/writer relationships genres maintain; and how genres relate to other genres in the coordination of social life. (Bawarshi and Reiff, 2010:4)

What we can discern from such perceptions of genre is that within SFL's conceptualisation of 'genre', 'language structure is integrally related to social function and context'. In other words, language is organised the way it is within a culture because such an organisation serves a social purpose within that culture. In further contextualising this argument Bawarshi and Reiff (2010) define SFL in a manner that perceives "Functional" as a referent 'to the work that language does within particular contexts'. "Systemic" in this context denotes 'the structure or organisation of language so that it can be used to get things done within those contexts'. "Systemic" then refers to the "systems of choices" available to language users for the *realization* of meaning. This resonates well with Leech and Short's (1981) notion of 'linguistic choice'. The concept of "realization" is especially important within SFL, for it describes the dynamic way that language *realizes* social purposes and contexts as specific linguistic interactions, at the same time as social purposes and contexts *realize* language as specific social actions and meanings. In short, as Wang (2007) observes this perspective also regards 'genre' as 'rhetorical and dynamic, integrating form and content, product and process, individual and society' (Devitt, 2004), rather than as simply a classification system and formula of language structures.

#### **2.4. Newspaper genres, discourse and rhetorical structure(s)**

This section seeks to comparatively discuss the textual/generic structure of the 'hard news' report to that of the 'commentary/editorial' as expressed from generic theoretic, journalistic as well as SFL perspectives. This is so because, as intimated earlier on in this study, the current study focuses on the 'hard news' genre within newspaper discourse. Such a discussion is vital here due to the fact that, while there are varied genres in news (which include among others 'headlines, news reports, editorials, feature articles, comments, letters to the editor, book reviews, reviews, weather reports and fashion columns' (Bhatia, 1994) and as such, each genre serves a different communicative purpose and ultimately represents a unique and distinct form of language use as well as textual organisation of thoughts and facts), the 'commentary' and 'hard news' are genres that are rhetorically opposed to each other in terms of purpose and structure. In line with the foregoing, Santosa (2009) argues that all these texts of news and news stories/articles can be classified into broad genres/subgenres,

that are, 'hard news' (also broadly defined as news reports), commentary (editorials), soft news and investigative reports.

### **2.4.1. The textuality of news genres**

McCabe and Heilman (2007: 139) contend that news reports and editorials/comments utilise the same content and contextual resources and 'focus or centre on very similar experiential content, their purposes are different: to inform, in the case of the report and to argue for a particular line of thought on a given situation in the editorial.' The purpose of the news report thus is 'to bring the news to the reader as accurately and dispassionately as possible' (Bhatia, 1994). The 'hard news' genre typically consists of stories about public events such as government action, international happenings, economy and crime. Such news reports, Bhatia (1994) contends, are generally 'short, fresh and direct. In other words, 'they have something specific to tell.'

The 'hard news' genre is thus, the supposedly non-opinionated and factual news story, characterised by 'objectivity' (discussed in detail section 2.6), neutrality, facticity, attribution and is typically delivered in three distinct parts, that is, the 'headline' (title of news), the 'head' (which is the main/important part of the news) and the 'body' (which forms the elaboration of the head and provides further details). Basically, as Thomson, White and Kitley (2008) explain, this genre of news is supposedly 'neutral' and reporting 'just the facts'. Santossa (2009) further intimates that 'hard news' is also referred to as 'straight news', which in turn is further categorised into the subtypes of 'matter of fact news' and 'action news'. On the other hand, the commentary/editorial is typically regarded as the opinionated, subjective, emotive and reactive discussion on events and people making news headlines.

The second type of news, according to Santossa (2005, 2009) and Dominick (1996) is the 'soft' or feature news. This genre of news covers a wide range of topics, which are largely 'human interest stories'. Stories/news articles in this category encompass issues that appeal to people's curiosity, sympathy, scepticism and amazement. Topics covered in this genre often involve people, animals, events and products (Dominick, 1996). According to Suhandag (2004) this genre of news provides the writer(s) with the opportunity to interpret the happenings so the content may be rather subjective. The current study however does not focus on this particular genre of news discourse. The third type of news genre explored by

Dominick (1996) is the ‘view’. This also is known as the ‘commentary’. This is the second genre that the current research seeks to analyse in comparison to the ‘hard news’ genre.

This genre of news is typically explicitly subjective as it exposes the reporter’s subjectivities, opinions and the opinions of others. The ‘view’/‘comment’ is highly critical and analytical, involving responses or suggestions to current issues and so on. Examples of such text types according to Sundahag (2004) are editorials, special articles and comment/opinion columns. Olaniyan (2011) argues that, such comments/editorials like the Editors’ comments, unlike news stories which are characteristically typically ‘factual’, ‘neutral and ‘objective’, are ‘articles which express the opinions of the [reporter], editors or publishers on issues of public interest.’ These according to Olaniyan (2011) are often ‘regarded as *personal journalism* because they project particular persons’ opinions on matters affecting the public’. Of course, an editor’s comment may be the product of one person or an expression of someone’s opinion on a current subject.

In discussing what they term the ‘textual organisation’ of the typical ‘hard news’ story White and Thomson (2008) argue, in line with (Santossa, 2009) that the headline/lead of the report is ‘the most distinctive property of conventionally constructed English language news reports’. They argue that its role, the headline/lead that is, is to ‘launch the reader without and background or preamble, directly into what can be seen as maximally newsworthy heart of the issue under consideration’. Bhatia (1994) also intimates that the ‘surprise value’ is what governs the typical textual organisation of ‘hard news’ articles. As such, in line with the lead/headline thesis appearing first in such news reports, Bhatia (1994) argues that such an arrangement is designed to ‘take the reader directly into the heart of the subject matter.’ In doing this, the reporter thus must, as a matter of necessity direct the reader to the core of the matter or event being reported on and therefore, it follows that the linguistic resources, lexical, lexicogrammatical and grammatical exploited generally must be seen to be serving that purpose.

What we can understand from this definition is that the ‘hard news’ genre employs an element of surprise. The notion of the ‘surprise value’ as intimated by Bhatia (1994) here is merely referent to the manner in which the story ‘sells’ to the reader ‘the most important details of the story’ first. From then onwards, the body of the report develops the story. The technique common with the ‘hard news’ genre is its employing what is in journalistic scholarship, discourse and practice referred to as “The Inverted Pyramid”. On the other hand,

Bhatia (1994) also argues for a ‘Rhetorical Move’ analysis of the ‘hard news’ report while White and Thomson (2008) present what they term ‘The Orbital Structure’ analysis of hard news. Within SFL, the notion of ‘objectivity’ is captured and explored through the ‘Reporter Voice’ configuration (briefly discussed in section 2.4.1.4 and in detail in section 3.7 in Chapter 3)

The frameworks for the identification, categorisation and analysis of the textuality (textual organisation) of newspaper texts within the ‘hard news’ and ‘commentary’ genres resonate well with the primary goals of the current research which focuses on how the linguistic discursal analysis of how the selection of the linguistic aesthetics – lexical and lexicogrammatical resources – for the composition of such generic structures of news reports are pivotal to the understanding of the evaluative nature of the ideological positioning and the forms of news texts occurring within the same generic categories of newspaper discourse in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages. As Thomson, White and Kitley (2008) highlight, their goal is to, using as a starting point the textual structure of ‘hard news’ texts within the English language journalistic culture, compare if other news-reporting cultures employ the same, another major goal of the current research is also to analyse whether the non – English reporting culture in Zimbabwean newspaper discourses (Shona and Ndebele to be precise) make use of these structural and textual organisation.

#### **2.4.1.1. The ‘inverted pyramid’ analysis of hard news reports**

According to White (1998), the ‘inverted pyramid’ analysis to ‘hard news’ reports is an arrangement of details in news reports (discursal structure), which according to journalistic training material is determined by the key claims that ‘the structure of news reports [must be] directed by ‘importance’ - what is ‘important’ and ‘relevant’ must come first, with the story then moving progressively through layers of decreasing ‘significance’. However, White (1998) interrogates and critiques such a form of structural arrangement, citing as central to such criticism, it’s highly ‘problematic nature from the perspective of rhetorical functionality.’ This is so because in such a discourse structure, the story does not follow a chronological sequencing of events. Such a textual organisation of hard news is constituted typically of the ‘lead’, the ‘body’ and the ‘remainder/fluffy stuff’ and is schematised as follows.

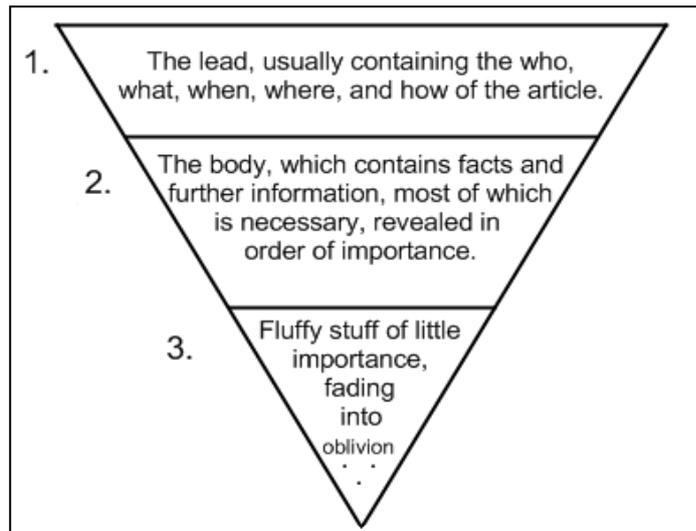


Figure 2.1: The inverted pyramid structure<sup>6</sup>

The ‘inverted pyramid’ technique thus, according to Thomson, et al (2008) is an arrangement by which the ‘most important information’ comes first. Progressively after that, the report develops gradually through to what is ‘least important’. In other words as Thomson, et al (2008) argue,

It is frequently held that authorial neutrality and the inverted pyramid structure are key factors in the distinction and uniqueness and distinctiveness of the modern hard news report as a text type. (Thomson, White and Kitley, 2008: 1)

An important observation raised by White and Thomson (2008) in relation to this which is quite pertinent to the current study is that the assessment of what constitutes as ‘most important’ and ‘least important’ is ‘both culturally and ideologically relative’. Because the ‘hard news’ genre must be ideally typically characterised by ‘objectivity’ and ‘facticity’, it is important to observe the argument raised here by Thomson, et al (2008) which seems to suggest that the extent to which a news report is objective is determinant on the ‘angle’ of news the reporter elects to take, which in the scope of this study is a key component to the study and analysis of the subjectivities and biases of the reporter or news report.

#### 2.4.1.2. The ‘Rhetorical Move’ analysis of hard news

Bhatia (1994) presents a four move rhetorical structure that explains the discursive structure that characterises editorials in newspaper genres, which he argues is chiefly prominent in some forms of academic writing. In the schema the author attempts to explain the circumstances surrounding a real event, which Bhatia (1994) refers to as ‘Case’ and proceeds

<sup>6</sup> Adapted from: <http://www.writerspulse.org/2008/09/tackling-inverted-pyramid.html>

to proffer an ‘Argument’, followed by a ‘Verdict’ and finally an ‘Action’. Bhatia (1994) argues that this kind of rhetorical structure is also slowly establishing itself in editorials as well as oftentimes in news reports. He presents such a textual organisation as follows:

<b>MOVE</b>	<b>RHETORICAL PURPOSE</b>
1. Presenting the case	This concerns actual events, that is to say, what is or what was in the world of everyday events. It may be seen as framing issues, clarifying choices or defining areas of concern.
2. Offering the argument	This is where the writer/editor discusses the possible alternative worlds, that is to say, what was not or what might have been.
3. Reaching the verdict	This is concerned with the world of desired events, that is to say, what should be or what should have been and is generally seen as the writer’s conclusion.
4. Recommending action	This is where and when the writer is seen as suggesting how the desired world of events can be realised.

*Table 2.1: Bhatia’s Four Move Rhetorical Structure*

This form of move structure encourages the proliferation of embedded subjectivities within a given text. This is so because in making an argument and drawing conclusions, the author seeks to sell to the reader their opinions and feelings towards the subject of the writing – a characteristic quite rare in news reports. We seek to argue, that through observation and analysis, and as Bhatia (1994) also argues, that we can discern instances in which such rhetorical moves are also seen to permeate through ‘hard news’ reports. Bhatia (1994) argues on the other hand that this rhetorical structure is not always present in hard news reports which seek to ‘bring the news to the reader as accurately and dispassionately as possible’ and as such, the news reports are ‘short, fresh and direct’, having something very ‘specific and precise to tell’. This thus requires that the news report be as objective as possible and thus must attempt to use linguistic resources that work towards attaining that communicative goal.

Bhatia (1994) argues that editorials, because of their communicative goal often use what Halliday (1986) refers to as grammatical metaphor, in the form of complex nominals and nominalisations ‘common and appropriate in news in which the writer argues persuasively to offer views and opinions that he holds or believes in’ (Bhatia, 1994: 165). Despite this however, such a phenomenon as Bhatia (1994) illustrates, and as intimated above, also seems to permeate through to the ‘hard news’ genre. Through this form of analysis it becomes possible to discern the writer’s subjectivities through an analysis of the linguistic resources of their choice. As earlier pointed out, Bhatia (1994) describes the structure of a typical news report through the propositions of the inverted pyramid structure as well. In this regard he argues that ‘the discourse structure of the news report...is very characteristic of a news report only. It is very much like an inverted pyramid where the movement from top to bottom represents a general → specific, or, summary → expansion, or, preview → detail.’

#### **2.4.1.3. The ‘Orbital Structure’ analysis of hard news**

In discussing the textual organisation of the ‘hard news’ story, White and Thomson (2008) present what they term the ‘typical model of the textual organisation of ‘hard news’ stories within the English language news reporting culture.’ This, they also argue, is captured in the ‘inverted pyramid’ structure of news. Thomson et al (2008) argue that authorial neutrality (a notion key to the current study as it mirrors the notion of ‘reporter voice’), a process through which a journalist dissociates himself/herself from the ‘facts’ of a story/event (discussed by Mindich (1998) as ‘detachment’ and ‘facticity’) and the ‘inverted pyramid’ are the key components in the description of the ‘hard news’ genre of newspaper reports.

According to Thomson et al (2008: 213) such kind of a textual organisation of ‘hard news’ makes two key claims: (a) that such reports begin by providing a summary of the events under consideration and (b) that rather than providing a chronologically ordered reconstruction of what happened, such reports are arranged so that what is the ‘most important information comes first and what is less important comes after.’ White and Thomson (2008) schematise such a textual organisation of ‘hard news’ in such a manner that it can be divided into two sections, the headline/lead and the body. The headline/lead forms the summary of the concerns of the news report and thus according to them, ‘the nucleus’. The body, which they also, like Thomson et al (2008) argue is not chronologically organised but is constituted of different sections which act as ‘satellites’ that elaborate on the ‘claims’ made by the lead.

They, after Iedema et al (1994) and White (2000a) refer to this textual organisation of the ‘hard news’ report as “orbital” and schematically represent it as follows;

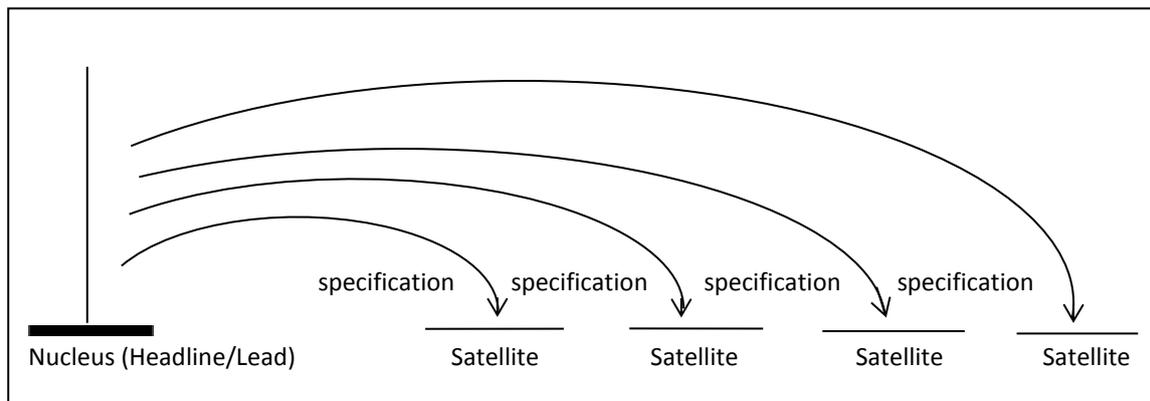


Figure 2.2: *Orbital Structure of ‘hard news’ (Adapted from White and Thomson, 2008)*

In line with the same observations, Thomson et al (2008) describe the body of the ‘hard news’ text, which is constituted of the ‘satellites’, as ‘acting to specify, elaborate, and comment on the various strands of information presented in the opening line.’ What we observe from such descriptions as well as the schema is aptly summated by Rich (2000: 35) cited in Thomson et al (2008) who concurs thus,

The most common type of lead in a hard-news story is called a “summary lead” because it summarises the main points about what happened. It answers the questions who, what, when, where, why and how. The rest of the story elaborates on what, why and how.

Thomson et al (2008), summarising the work of Iedema (1994) and White (1997, 2000a, 2000b) observe also, in line with the foregoing observations, that the body of the ‘hard news’ report can be decomposed further into ‘self-contained components’ (White and Thomson’s (2010) ‘satellites’) which performs any one of the following five broad functions:

- *Elaboration or Reiteration*: One sentence or a group of sentences provides more detailed description or exemplification of information presented in the headline/lead, or acts to restate it or describe the material in the headline/lead in different terms.
- *Causes*: One or more sentences describe the causes or reason for some aspect of the “crisis point” presented in the headline/lead.
- *Consequences*: One or more sentences describe the consequences flowing from some element of the crisis point of the headline/lead.

- *Contextualisation*: One or more sentences places some aspect of the crisis point of the headline/lead in a temporal, spatial or social context. For example, the geographical setting will be described in some detail or the “crisis point” will be located in the context of preceding, simultaneous or subsequent events. Prior events of a similar nature may be described for the purpose of comparison.
- *Attitudinal assessment/Appraisal*: Some form of judgement or evaluation is passed on some element of the headline/lead.

MacDougall (1987) cited in Thomson et al (2008) also brings in interesting insights regards the manner in which the ‘self-contained components’ (Thomson et al, 2008) or ‘satellites’ (White and Thomson, 2008) are elaborative of the headline/lead. MacDougall argues that given the chronological order of events, a reporter ‘selects first as the lead, the climax or end of the story.’ This happens because of, as also observed by Thomson et al’s (2008) and White and Thomson, (2008), the selection of the ‘most important facts’ or climax of the story, which is put at the beginning. After that, ‘the second most important fact comes second, the third most important fact comes third and so on.’ What we discern from such a perception, which is also critical to the conceptualisation of the current study, is the *subjective* role that the reporter plays in the selection and determination of what constitutes ‘most important’ and ‘least important facts of the story’. It becomes apparent that there is a consensus that the elaborations and specifications are typically within the ‘hard news’ genre presented ‘non-chronologically and discontinuously’. In other words, as MacDougall cited in Thomson et al (2008: 218) observes,

...events are seldom presented in a continuous step by step sequence in the order in which they occurs and when dealing with a particular aspect or sub-issue, the [reporter]/writer typically attends to this at different points in the body of the report rather than dealing with it exhaustively in a single section.

#### **2.4.1.4. The ‘Reporter Voice’ configuration and hard news analysis**

The notion of the ‘reporter voice’ as explained before, is a configuration within SFL and Appraisal theory to be precise which seeks to establish the manner in which a writer/author/reporter/journalist’s subjectivities are embedded in a news report or not. It is not a framework that explains the rhetorical move structure of text but is merely concerned with analysing the manner in which reporters/journalists use language evaluatively in their writings/reports. It is the key configuration used in the analysis of data in this research. Its

inclusion in the foregoing discussion is due to its centrality to the study of ‘objectivity’ in news reports, a notion that the textual and rhetorical structures discussed above also endeavour to analyse.

Its inclusion here is also due to the fact that the current study focuses specifically on the analysis of the ‘objectivity’ ideal through the theoretical spectacles of the ‘reporter voice’<sup>7</sup> configuration in the analysis of news that are supposedly factual and non-opinionated comparing them to other articles (‘hard news’ reports) within the other research newspapers and on the same issues, for their rhetorical potential. Discussed and theoretically contextualised in detail in section 3.7, the notion of ‘reporter voice’ is a configuration that establishes a taxonomy for grouping news media texts based on the manner in which they exploit established/establishable key evaluative and attitudinal meanings and identify the writer with establishable ideological leanings (Iedema, Feez & White, 1994: White, 2000a, 2000b, 2004, 2006: Martin & White, 2005: Van & Thomson, 2010: Lukin, 2010: Höglund, 2010: Thomson, Fukui & White, 2010).

The notion of the ‘reporter voice’ is identified as some aspect determining the form of textual organisation in which some form of judgement (i.e. inscribed judgement and affect<sup>8</sup>) are curtailed while others occur with some form of regularity (i.e. inscribed authorial appreciation and observed affect) within texts (Thomson & White, 2010). Furthermore, the same concept is identified in English language media as a device by which it becomes possible for the author/journalist to advance a particular value position while at the same time foregrounding their attitudinal role, at least to the extent that explicit authorial judgements are avoided (White, 2005: White & Thomson, 2010).

## **2.5. Rhetorical and textual structure: Comparing news reports and editorials**

McCabe and Heilman (2007) argue that the differences between the news report and the editorial is evident in the choice of linguistic resources used to achieve their different communicative purposes. ‘A reporter purportedly has the mission of presenting events that took place out there in the world in as objective a way possible, while an editorialist has the express purpose of providing commentary, or evaluating those events.’ (McCabe and

---

<sup>7</sup> The notion of ‘reporter voice’ is used in this study as to identify rhetorical markers by which a journalist implicitly or explicitly selects languages in order to win an audience towards his/her point of view.

<sup>8</sup> This is when the manner in which a journalist write explicitly betrays their emotional reaction to the story/issue they are writing about as well as the manner in which they evaluate/judge people and human behavior by use of some conventionalized norms. (White, 2000a: 2006).

Heilman, 2007: 139). Typically, editorials according to McCabe and Heilman (2007), are characterised by an overt presence of interpersonal devices, whereas news reports, whilst not entirely disguising authorial presence, attempt to do so and are not typically characterised by a high proliferation of overt interpersonal subjectivities, that is, linguistic resources – both lexical and lexicogrammatical – that do not parade their authorial presence. ‘Hard news’ articles must thus attempt to project an aura of objectivity in comparison to editorials/commentaries whose concerns are to air opinions.

Because of this characterisation of ‘hard news’, we must as a matter of necessity envision distinctions in terms of linguistic choices that the two distinct journalistic text types/genres would make, especially so in the manner in which they make use of language evaluatively. Bhatia (1994) expresses the same views when he argues that we need to observe how typically the manner in which writers of editorial opinions are biased, and that this shows in the manner in which they select linguistic resources that are meant to realise favourable or unfavourable bias towards what they are expressing opinion on and/or about.

The editorial page of a newspaper, Bhatia (1994) argues, is different from the rest of the newspaper in very radical ways. This is so because, ‘whereas the other pages are dedicated to news reporting as accurately and dispassionately as possible, the editorial page offers views and opinions of the newspaper.’ What is important to note here is the fact that the opinion columns or pages of the newspapers are supposedly the newspapers’ ‘analysis, discussion, opinion or verdict’ on the issue of the day and unlike news reports, the communicative goal of the editorials is to provoke some reaction by expressing a strong and biased opinion. Bhatia (1994) makes it clear that the most profound object and characteristic of the editorial as a genre is in the manner in which writers of such make use of linguistic resources aimed at creating a favourable or disfavourable bias in their propositions. Bhatia (1994) suggests that due to the fact that editorials seek to sell to the readership some proposition or stance, they often assume in terms of rhetorical structure the four move structure of discourse similar to that adopted in academic writing, discussed in section **2.4.1.2** and whose moves are; Case, Argument, Verdict and Action.

The four move structure argued for by Bhatia (1994) as characteristic of the editorial genre exudes evidential choices of linguistic and lexicogrammatical structures which are riddled with overt subjectivities. This is evident in the manner in which writers attempt to make favourable or disfavourable particular propositions. Such kinds of propositions tend however,

to be opinionated and as Bhatia (1994) contends, must not be characteristic of news reports which as argued several times earlier on in this thesis, must 'factual', 'accurate' and 'non-opinionated'. This is so because;

The use of this kind of linguistic phenomenon is quite common and appropriate in genres in which the writer argues persuasively to offer views and opinions that he holds and believes in, He takes a position with regards to events around him or issues that may be political, economic, socio-cultural or any other and tries to justify his point of view. (Bhatia 1994: 165).

Bhatia (1994) argues that this four move rhetorical structure that he presents, which is typically a characteristic of academic writing, and seems functional in editorials, is however slowly establishing itself in news articles as well. Of course, Bhatia (1994) maintains still that naturally, a typical 'hard news' story must follow the 'inverted pyramid' structure and in the process should technically and systematically break the rules of chronological sequencing of events. Editorials on the other hand are typified by their overt expressions of subjectivities and the use they make of nominal expressions that refer to concepts that are assumed as part of shared knowledge and are taken to be given in the prior discourse, that is, news reports on which the editorial is based. Because of their subjective nature, editorials, as subjective texts, exhibit at least some of the 'author's value judgments [which] are explicitly revealed in the language.'

This is in contrast with the strictly 'objective' text ('hard news') which is constructed 'in such a way that there is no explicit linguistic evidence of the authors' value judgments.' Thus, according to McCabe and Heilman (2007), when an author writes an event/'hard news' report, s/he will not tend to linguistically encode any value judgments. In the comment/editorial, the author makes use of more overt/explicit tokens of judgment and appreciation as well as through modalities. It is also important to note that in editorials, the author can express judgments on people and their words. Actions are also considered and judged and the goal of the editorial is to urge the participants/parties involved to take action in one way or another. The function of the editorial thus, 'in some way or another affects public policy, while ostensibly the role of the news report does not.'

News reports should as a matter of necessity be straight forward, matter of factly, and must present the facts the way they are/were. In terms of mode of expression and textuality, 'facts' according to McCabe and Heilman (2007) are 'typically presented in a news report, in a monoglossic way, as they were not open to to debate'. This is so because the object of such

stories is to present an appearance of objectivity and thus it would be proper to assume that such writing would encode only ‘contentious’/‘controversial’ proposals through attributions to other sources. In this regard, in the writing of ‘hard news’ reports, opinions must be expressed in the words of others, that is to say, by reporting on what other people have said. Accordingly, in this regard, a marked absence of explicit or implicit tokens of judgement and appreciation should be obvious. Unless of course such subjectivities (tokens) are encoded ‘through [attribution and/or] projection’, they must not be characteristic of hard news reports. In line with the foregoing thesis, White (1998: 9) argues that the ‘hard news’ story ‘demonstrates or rather is constituted of a textuality which is very distinctive in terms of, and with respect to both textual organisation as well as the interpersonal style of its authorial voice.’

## **2.6. The ‘objectivity’ ideal in news reporting/newspaper discourse**

Having discussed the defining characteristics of the two major genres of newspaper discourse that the current study concerns itself with, this section discusses how the notion of ‘objectivity’ is envisioned viz-a-viz the genres. As has been discussed in the previous chapter, the notion of ‘objectivity’ in news reports has been dealt with extensively especially within mainstream journalistic studies. Within such studies, the goals of undertaking such studies have been as wide ranging as the theories in which such studies are couched. This section is devoted to reviewing studies on the notion of objectivity in news reporting. From a journalistic approach, objectivity still remains an elusive ideal. Studies on ‘objectivity’ within journalistic research have been diverse, differing largely in theoretical explanation. Theories informing such studies include among others Lipman’s, (1922) Public Opinion Theory (c.f. Klaehn, 2005: McLuhan and Quentin, 1964), McCombs and Shaw’s (1972) Agenda Setting Theory (c.f. Carroll and McCombs 2003: McCombs, 2004: Miller, 2005: St. John III, 2009), Herman and Chomsky’s (1988) Propaganda Model (c.f. Klaehn, 2005:Chomsky, 2002), Harbermas’ (1991) Public Sphere Theory (c.f. McCombs, 2004).

The notion of ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ however, still continues to be a subject of debate and controversy within journalistic circles. Lukin (2005) for example argues that, despite a long history of debate, ‘bias’, and related terms like ‘objectivity’, ‘impartiality’ and ‘balance’ remain difficult to define and operationalise. Subsequently, the defining parameters for ‘objectivity’ in media have remained somehow elusive. For example Hampton (2008) argues that ‘objectivity’ as a journalistic norm constitutes both a claim to professional

distinction and an ideal of even-handedness and craftsmanship. In other words journalists have to relate to what is. They have to separate truth from falsehood (Bresser, 1992: Bernhard, 2008). Bowman (2006) argues that journalists' professional orientation to the concepts of 'objectivity' and 'neutrality' ignore an independent pursuit of the public interest, and instead reflect the interests of the status quo.

As Klaehn (2005) explains, this is because mass media and other ideological institutions in society are predominantly agencies for the dissemination of ideas, values, perspectives and necessary illusions that affirm existing patterns of power and privilege. In essence, in journalistic discourse, 'objectivity' continues to be viewed as an ambivalent ideal that can only be fulfilled by journalists' adherence to professional ethics and these include unbiased and objective news reporting and allowing the proliferation of diversities of ideas and opinions. The current study however differs from such journalistic concerns. While in most cases these studies either attempt to quantify and qualify 'objectivity' in relation to the 'truth value' of news and the shaping of the readership's opinion, this study focuses on the linguistic discourse of linguistic choice, that is, the manner in which the language selected by reporters in reporting news is lexicalised and grammaticalised evaluatively in conformity with the theoretical explications of Appraisal and Evaluation Theory.

In explaining/defining what 'objectivity' is, Mindich (1998) discusses the metaphors used by journalists to refer to how objective news and news-making are. The metaphors he discusses are that of journalists/journalism as 'the window' through which the readers see the world; journalism/journalists (and their stories!) as 'a mirror' that reflects world realities for the reader; journalists as fishermen...and finally a final metaphor for journalism/news-making as a see-saw. In other words, a view of news-making as aimed at achieving 'balance' and 'factual findings'. Clarifying this, Mindich (1998) argues that,

The idea here is that journalists can find truth by offering two competing truth claims. But who decides who gets to seat on the see-saw? Where does one place the fulcrum? And why a see-saw? Why is there only room for two sides? Does "objectivity" really exist between two subjective sound bites? (Mindich, 1998: 6)

The argument raised here is that, still, journalists are active participants in the creation of news and because they are the ones who select who gets to 'sit on the see-saw', they control the face and character of the news. 'Objectivity' and its un/attainability thus continues to rest in the hands of the journalists, notwithstanding the fact that in using the window, mirror, net

and see-saw metaphors, the idea is to portray journalism as somehow being ‘an ‘objective’ craft and that journalists are engaged in a basically passive endeavour’ (Mindich, 1998). He goes on further to argue that despite an apparent lack of a definition of ‘objectivity’ from journalists themselves, one can discern the various ethics that make up ‘objectivity’. He presents the components as being: *detachment*, *non-partisanship*, *the inverted pyramid*, *naïve empiricism* and finally *balance*. According to Mindich (1998) *detachment* is ‘to make sure that the facts are doing the talking and not the reporter’s preconceived ideas’: *non-partisanship* is when reporters are bound by an ethic that requires that they give ‘both sides of each story’: the inverted pyramid, as also discussed by Thomson et al (2008), is a style of journalistic writing in which a journalist gives the readers the most important facts of a story first, preferably in the lead paragraph: *naïve empiricism* is ‘the reliance on ‘facts’ to report accurately the truth or reality of the events’ and finally *balance* is ‘the impossible yet all-important goal that leads to ‘undistorted reporting.’”

What we can discern from Mindich’s arguments is that the notion of ‘objectivity’ is reliant on journalists electing to follow a set of professional ethics and that the level to which a news story is ‘objective’ is determined by the reporters themselves as they are the ones that decide how ‘balanced’ a new story will be since they are the ones that elect who gets to sit on the see-saw and the language they use to report a story. As Lukin (2005b) citing Fairclough (1995), Fiske (1989), Hall (1970) and Tuchman (1972) notes, ‘perhaps the only dimension of ‘bias’/ [or ‘objectivity’] on which all who use it would agree is that it implies the notion of choice’. In other words, according to Lukin (2005b), every time a charge of bias in the media is made,

“[t]he implication is that a process of selection – of particular words or phrases, of particular facets of a story over others, or regarding the reliance on particular kinds of sources to the backgrounding, or exclusion of others – is involved, and that other choices were available but not taken”. (Lukin, 2005b:3)

This argument questions, in an interesting way, insights into questions of whether ‘objectivity’ can really be attained, on whether indeed reporters are merely ‘observers and recorders’ of news or they are active participants and lastly on how ‘balanced’ an ‘objective’ and ‘balanced story’ is or can be. Observations made by Lukin (2005b) here, are that the journalist/reporter is responsible for the selection of the lexical and lexico-grammatical structure that weave together a story as well as selects the sources and commentators for the

story, processes which are never within themselves innocent and ‘unbiased’. Notable conclusions drawn from Mindich’s arguments also are that there is nothing called ‘pure objectivity’ but a multifaceted number of truth claims. Despite many journalists rejecting the existence of such a ‘pure objectivity’, he argues, ‘they still strive for it, define themselves by it, and practice what media critics call ‘the ritual of objectivity’, a series of professional routines designed to shield journalists from blame and legal action.’ (Mindich, 1998: 10).

Mindich (1998) also expresses the same kind of argument that ‘objectivity’ is an elusive ideal and that journalists are never mere observers but are also active opinion makers in news-making and thus their own opinions filter into the news they write. Lukin (2005b) reinforces this view by further discussing the notion of linguistic choice on the part of the reporter as it relates to ‘objectivity’ and ‘media bias’. She brings out the views that linguistic choice is exercised in the construction of a story and argues that from a linguistic theoretical perspective, it is possible to map out the potential for bias in news, since it is the very basis of linguistic expertise to understand how language is organised.

Hampton (2008) explores the limitations of the notion of ‘objectivity’ in 20<sup>th</sup> century British media. In defining the notion of ‘objectivity’ within such a context, Hampton (2008) explains that the understanding of ‘objectivity’ within English media cultures must be understood from the historical import of such a notion from American media. The notion of ‘objectivity’ it seems, in British media is borrowed from the United States of America. He argues that,

“Among scholars of British media, the concept of ‘objectivity’ in British journalism history is often taken as part of the intellectual heritage of a transatlantic journalism tradition, emerging (as in the United States), in the late 19<sup>th</sup> and early 20<sup>th</sup> centuries (Bromley, 2003, pp. 123, 131; Chalaby, 1998, pp. 130-40; Conboy, 2004, p. 191; McNair, 1998, pp. 64-77; Smith, 1978). Yet the ideal’s existence in Britain has generally been assumed than demonstrated”

The argument here is that, there seems to have been, in the development of the notion of ‘objectivity’, its non-recognition as a professional ethic. To this end, it seems Hampton (2008) further argues that, what stands out in British media, especially the print media is the ‘limited extent to which ‘objectivity’ has been embraced as an ideal by practising journalists’. Hampton argues that the problematic nature of American notions of ‘objectivity’ is embedded in the examination of this norm by Schudson (1995), in which,

“...he describes the ideal of journalistic detachment, corrupted into an obligation to quote contrary authorities without adjudicating between them. Such “objectivity” has been criticised for reaffirming the existing power arrangements in society (as not all perspectives are represented by an “authority”) and for bearing an uneasy relationship to the “truth,” since in the real world “both sides” are not always equally truthful”

Such a perception of ‘objectivity’ premised on giving a ‘voice’ to ‘feuding’ parties in a story, as Hampton (2008) explains, is flawed in its own way. However it is important to note that such a process of attribution and citation of authority is also pertinent to the analysis adopted for this study. Hampton further sheds light on British journalistic practices by observing that instead of adopting the ideal of ‘objectivity’ wholesale, in British media, rather than ‘objectivity’, notions of ‘truth’, ‘independence’ and ‘fair play’ held greater appeal to the 20<sup>th</sup> century British journalist. He contends thus, that the problematic nature of such kind of an outlook was in the fact that these alternative notions, while admirable in the eyes of the citizen, do not constitute a professional ritual of the sort that can help distinguish the journalist from the non-journalist, nor do they proscribe partisanship (Hampton, 2008: 478). The arguments raised by Hampton here are that the notion of ‘objectivity’ in British media did not emerge as a professional ethic/norm but rather a corporate one. Hampton cites in this regard the cases of Reuters and the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC).

Such a perception of the notion of ‘neutrality’ as enunciated by Hampton (2008) is also reinforced by Tuchman (1978) whose proposal is that, because journalists construct ‘neutrality’ as the need to present ‘both sides of the story’ in a bid to achieve ‘balance’, the ‘authoritative’ accounts emanating from institutional sources are more prominent in news accounts. Bowman (2006) contends that such an analysis indicates that, rather than distance the journalist from a particular opinion, such an approach to story construction necessarily favours the status quo. Such studies, he argues, ‘were based on an examination of the final product, completed newspaper accounts, rather than on the process through which such accounts are created.’ (Bowman, 2006). He further contends that ‘[s]uch examinations cannot uncover evidence of journalistic judgement that can emerge through an examination of how journalists *do ‘objectivity’ and ‘neutrality’*” (Bowman, 2006: 628). In examining the notion of ‘objectivity’ by analysing broadcast interviewees through ‘interaction order’ and the Conversational Analysis techniques, Bowman (2006) draws into the conclusions made by Clayman and Heritage (2002) that journalists must blend different understandings of ‘objectivity’. They observe thus, that;

On one hand there is objectivity as impartiality: journalists are expected to be disinterested and neutral in their questioning of public figures. On the other, there objectivity as adversarialness: to achieve factual accuracy and a “balance” of perspectives journalists should actively challenge their sources (Clayman and Heritage, 2002: 29 quoted in Bowman, 2006).

Such kind of a ‘crisis’ in the level to which a journalist should be an active participant in the news that they are reporting and the nature of the relationships that they must establish with the sources as well as the voices of authority in their news reports is pertinent to the understanding of three key concepts of this research, that is, the notions of ‘attribution’, ‘authorial voice’ and ‘objectivity’.

Thorsen (2008) discusses the notion of ‘objectivity’ and/’neutrality’ on Wikinews, an online news site on which individuals can independently post news items. He argues that ‘historically, ‘objectivity’ and ‘impartiality’ have been intrinsic parts of traditional journalistic practice.’ Thorsen’s discussion also argues that the notion of ‘objectivity’ is a ‘theoretical ideal’ which remains a central concept to debates surrounding online journalism. He explains that the notion of ‘objectivity’ as reflected in the nature of the news reports, the reporters, instead of embracing subjective reporting traits that are typically constituted in citizen journalism ‘strive to retain familiar notions of ‘truth’ and ‘accuracy’ associated with traditional journalistic objectivity.’ Thorsen (2008) presents the thesis that, what governs facticity and ultimately objectivity in Wikinews is its conception of ‘objectivity’ that is encapsulated in its ‘neutral point of view’ policy. Of course, Thorsen (2008) acknowledges too, the historical tradition of objectivity in journalistic practice.

Of interest to note in this regard, is the perceived notion of ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ from the point of view of Wikinews as stated in their policy document. As Thorsen (2008) notes, the policy document rejects the idea of a ‘single unbiased ‘objective’ point of view.’ ‘Neutrality’/‘objectivity’ is thus left to the contributors cum reporters ‘to seek collectively to produce a fair representation of all available points of view.’ (Thorsen, 2008). Thorsen furthermore, argues that ‘objectivity’ does not merely entail the ‘representation of a series of conflicting opinions.’ This view resonates with Hampton’s (2008) perception of ‘objectivity’ premised on merely giving a ‘voice’ to ‘feuding’ parties in a story, as flawed. In other words, attribution of the opinions is paramount as well as that there is need for the removal of formal markers of bias from the news story. The notion of objectivity as envisioned by Wikinews is subsumed in the following except from Jimmy D. Wales, the founder of Wikinews:

The neutral point of view attempts to present ideas and facts in such a fashion that both supporters and opponents can agree. Of course, 100% agreement is not possible; there are ideologues in the world who will not concede to any presentation other than a forceful statement of their own point of view. We can only seek a type of writing that is agreeable to essentially rational people who may differ on particular points. (Wikinews, 2005 quoted in Thorsen, 2008)

Jimmy D. Wales, according to Thorsen (2008) also concedes that the notion of the ‘neutral point of view’/‘objectivity’ is merely a process, an ideal rather than a reality that is ‘really achievable’. This, Thorsen (2008: 940) argues, is because ‘the ‘neutral point of view’ as a concept is itself a discursive construct and thus necessarily ideological.’ In other words, the search for ‘objectivity’ becomes in itself a mediated process, understood in terms of the ideological positioning of the story by the contributor as well as ‘in terms of a dialogic in interaction of the people who actually read or contribute to [the news on] Wikinews.’ (Thorsen, 2008: 940). In ensuring the realisation of the ideal of ‘neutral point of view’ when a reporter/contributor posts a story, the role of the other contributors/discussants are fact-finding and adding up to the story ‘to expand or back up the truth claims’ made by the story. The two ways that the news story is edited to conform to the ‘neutral point of view policy’ on Wikinews, according to Thorsen (2008) are that,

“First, ‘value-laden’ words that are considered to reflect the subjective evaluation of the reporter could be removed. Typically, these occur when describing utterances by use of linguistic devices other than the direct quotation of words, or when attributing actions to a particular actant based on allegedly ambiguous evidence. The latter can occur also when actions are attributed selectively to one actant, thus on a larger scale giving a partial account of events. Second, a point of view can be removed by deleting whole paragraphs in dispute or through adding further points of view in order to obtain an overall, ostensibly neutral balance.”

What is of interest to note with this form of pursuit for objectivity is that it is centred on the elimination of linguistic aesthetics of what is perceived to be biased language that encapsulates the invoked judgements and ideological biases of the author. This kind of search for ‘objectivity’ also seems to concentrate more on the pursuit of facticity and the elimination of falsehoods.

In defining ‘objectivity’ as it relates to media, Cunningham (2003) explains that it is an elusive concept, far too hard to describe and define and subject to individual understandings of notions of ‘truth’, ‘fairness’, ‘balance’ and ‘facticity’. He observes the fluidity of the term by observing that,

Ask ten journalists what objectivity means and you'll get ten different answers. Some, like the Washington Post's editor, Leonard Downie, define it so strictly that they refuse to vote lest they be forced to take sides. My favourite definition was from Michael Bugeja, who teaches journalism at Iowa State: "Objectivity is seeing the world as it is, not how you wish it were." In 1996 the Society of Professional Journalists acknowledged this dilemma and dropped "objectivity" from its ethics code. It also changed "the truth" to simply "truth." (Cunningham, 2003: 2)

Cunningham (2003) argues that 'objectivity' is an ideal, an elusive one. He observes the only valid reason that objectivity has persisted is because 'nothing better has replaced it'. He also notes that the pursuit of objectivity leads often to the pursuit of 'truth' which leads in itself to a search for 'balance'. And thus, he argues, in the quest for attaining objectivity, we are forced to rely heavily on 'official sources' and this leads us to, 'in the quickest way', search only for both the 'he said' and 'she said' of a story and claim to have achieved 'balance' – objectivity. This however, Cunningham (2003) argues, often also ropes in power and hegemony issues as for example in writing a story, if being objective means seemingly arguing with say the president or the governor and losing access to them in the process, we become very wary of what and how we write. That inevitably, ropes in our subjectivities. In arguing for the elusiveness of the notion of 'objectivity', Cunningham (2003) describes what he terms the 'brief honeymoon between American journalism and objectivity'. Critiquing the fallacies inherent in perceptions of 'objectivity' as evidenced in mainstream American journalistic practices, he argues (as Mindich (1998) also argues), that by the turn of the twentieth century, the flaws of objective journalism were beginning to show (Cunningham, 2003: 4).

As is evidenced in the foregoing discussion, and as is with the study of news reportage in general there are quite a number of approaches that can be used in the study of 'objectivity' in news reportage. The approach adopted in this study as explained above, is the appraisal theory as developed by Martin and White (2005) and White (2006). The theory looks at the 'journalistic voice' as it is inscribed or evoked in the text. Thomson et al (2008: 220) observe that the notion of 'journalistic voice' is an approach that looks at 'news media texts according to the use they make of certain key evaluative meanings... the various ways in which positive or negative assessments are conveyed or activated.' Thus, the insights of the appraisal theory ('evaluation' and 'the reporter voice'), important for the understanding and analysis of 'objectivity' in journalistic discourse from this perspective, are outlined in Chapter 3 (sections 3.5 and 3.7 respectively).

As the discussion above indicates, the study of ‘objectivity’ in news reportage or journalism is arguably as old as the field itself. Cohen-Almagor (2008) points out that it has been linked with the American Penny Press in the 1830s. Cohen-Almagor (2008) further notes that the Penny Press claimed to be giving dependable and authentic journalism, not tainted by political, economic and social values as the daily papers used to do. In this case White (2000a) resonating the concerns raised above that ‘objectivity’ is dependent on individual journalist’s adherence to professional ethics argues that objectivity has been looked at as ethical reporting, professional writing, and authentic reporting, balanced reporting and so on. As a result, it has been noted to involve several dimensions – accuracy, truthfulness, fairness and balance, and moral neutrality. The notion that seems to recur in the way news is reported, from these dimensions, is the idea that ideal texts are ‘neutral’ in reporting ‘just the facts’. Thus in objectivity, one can and should separate facts from values, though it is quite problematic to separate the two. Giving a general definition of ‘objectivity’, Cohen-Almagor (2008:140) states that ‘objectivity’,

...is concerned with the way news is created and reported in the selection of facts, their arrangement, their framing and formation on public agenda with or without relationship to values.

From the definition we observe the concern that the various dimensions of ‘objectivity’ can be compromised or are difficult to realise. For instance, the notion of accuracy is compromised from the instance journalists start to select and interpret texts. In light of this we observe that journalists do not necessary focus on a commitment to achieve accuracy, but on communicating certain ideologies and reinforcing the solidarity bond with their readers. This thus brings in subjectivities in the manner in which events are reported. Also, the language that is used to ‘express’ events we can argue, has the rhetorical potential to not only inform the readers but to also give them a particular worldview – a particular reading position.

## **2.7. Summary**

The chapter discussed pertinent issues important to the major empirical scopes of the current research. Of paramount significance, the chapter discussed the variances within theoretical frameworks for the creation of taxonomies for genres both within the newspaper discourse as well as other professional discourse communities. The chapter also discusses the notion of ‘objectivity’, that is: What is objectivity? What constitute objectivity? What kind of factors affect objective writing and the general evaluative meanings activated in news media texts?

The goal of doing such an exercise was to be able to lay the basis for contextualising and theorising both the notions of ‘genre’ and ‘objectivity’ within SFL, an exercise that the next chapter seeks to do. The next chapter thus discusses the current research’s specific theoretical foundations for the analysis of texts. It discusses the pertinent issues of ‘objectivity’ and the ‘reporter voice’ as they are theorised within SFL.

## CHAPTER 3

### **Appraisal and evaluation, the ‘reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity’ in newspaper genres**

#### **3.1. Introduction**

The previous chapter examined and reviewed various issues relating to the theoretical debates on ‘genre’. The chapter reviewed the notion of ‘genre’ as it is conceptualised from four main traditions namely, the new rhetoric, Genre Analysis, New Rhetoric Studies, English for Specific Purposes (ESP) and briefly Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL). This chapter extends the discussion of ‘genre’ as it is theorised from within SFL. It reviews, within SFL, the theoretical frameworks of Appraisal and Evaluation, with the aim of providing exposition of the analytical techniques employed in the analysis and examination of textual data in chapters 4, 5 and 6. The goal of the chapter is thus, to review previous research on ‘genre’ as it is conceptualised within SFL, specifically as it has been conceptualised in studies on media/newspaper genres from SFL, Appraisal and Evaluation theoretical perspectives. As such, the chapter explores literature on the related notions of ‘evaluation in news’, ‘the reporter voice’ and ‘attribution’ and how the theoretical propositions these perspectives make within SFL are central to the study of objectivity in news, especially so as that relates to issues addressed in this study.

Although some theoretical explications of SFL were presented in the previous chapter, this chapter sets off by giving a brief general description of SFL as a theory. The chapter is concerned with specific tenets of the theory. It begins by giving an overview of SFL from which the major theoretical propositions of Appraisal and Evaluation used in the interpretation and analysis of data in the following chapters emerged. The Appraisal framework is an extension of the linguistic theories of M.A.K Halliday and his colleagues (Systemic Functional Linguistics) and therefore it would only be prudent, this research believes, to begin by outlining the major theoretical tenets of the theory from which it developed. This chapter will review in this regard, previous research on evaluation in news, the notion of ‘objectivity’ as it is theorised within SFL as well as the notion of the ‘reporter voice’ as conceptualised both in SFL and in the current research.

The progression of the chapter thus is organised around the consideration to first explicate the theoretical tenets that inform and guide the analysis of data in the current study by

contextualising it within studies of media discourse that adopt the same framework and whose research concerns cohere with those of the present study.

### 3.2. Systemic Functional Linguistics: An Overview

As noted before, the current research investigates, employing the Appraisal framework of the SFL theory, the manner in which languages is used evaluatively in news reporting in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and (isi)Ndebele. This is done in order to examine instances when such use of language exposes the underlying subjectivities of the reporter through the analysis of the notion of ‘reporter voice’ as it relates to our understanding and conceptualisation of the notions of ‘objectivity’, ‘facticity’ and ‘neutrality.’ This section discusses the major theoretical explications of SFL in order to locate and contextualise the frameworks of Appraisal and Evaluation within the broader theoretical framework of SFL, from which they developed (*see* Martin, 2000: Martin and Rose, 2003: Martin and White, 2005: Thomson and White, 2008: Thomson, White and Kitley, 2008). SFL is a linguistic theory of discourse analysis that takes into account the contextual dimensions of language. Chappel (1998) observes that SFL is a theory that views language as a social semiotic, a resource people use to accomplish their purpose(s) by expressing meaning through it. At the core of SFL thus, is ‘language’ (Chappel, 1998). Halliday (1985) explains that SFL views language as a systematic resource for expressing meaning in context. It focuses on meaning making in interactions and how people exchange meanings through interactions – the use of language.

According to Halliday (1975), ‘language has developed in response to three kinds of social-functional ‘needs.’ The first is to be able to construe experience in terms of what is going on around us and inside us. The second is to interact with the social world by negotiating social roles and attitudes. The third and final need, is to be able to create messages with which we can package our meanings in terms of what is *New* or *Given*, and in terms of what the starting point for our message is, commonly referred to as the *Theme*. Halliday (1978) calls these language functions *metafunctions*, and refers to them as the *ideational*, *interpersonal* and *textual* functions of language. In essence, the arguments posited by Halliday as well as within SFL are that particular aspects of a given context, such as the topics discussed, the language users as well as the medium of communication, define the meaning likely to be expressed and the ‘language’ (code) likely to be used to express those meanings.

SFL as ‘a theory of language [is] centred on the notion of language functions. While SFL accounts for the syntactic structure of language, (describing the nature of lexical and lexicogrammatical resources within syntactic structures), it places the function of language as central (that is, what language does, and how it does it), in preference to more structural approaches, which place the elements of language and their combinations as central. SFL starts at social context, and looks at how language both acts upon, and is constrained by, this social context.<sup>9</sup> SFL thus, is a study of functions and semantics which is claimed to be the basis of human language and communicative activity. Instead of focusing on the analysis of the syntactic structures of texts, SFL is more oriented towards the ‘exploration into social contexts in which language is made use of to construct meanings and move on from there to look at how language acts upon, and is constrained and influenced by this social context’. An important observation with regards to this approach is its emphasis on the ‘context of situation’ which obtains ‘through a systematic relationship between the social environment on the one hand, and the functional organization of language on the other.’ (Halliday, 1985:11). The analysis of context within SFL is broken down into *‘field’*, *‘tenor’*, and *‘mode’*, elements which collectively constitute the ‘register’ of a text. (Halliday, 1985:12).

By definition and within SFL, *‘field’* refers to what is happening, the nature of the social interaction taking place: that is to say, what it is that the participants are engaged in, in which language figures as an essential component. *‘Tenor’* foregrounds those taking part in the interaction, that is, the social roles and relationships of participants, the statuses and roles of the participants and *‘mode’* denotes the symbolic organization of the text, rhetorical modes (persuasive, expository, didactic, etc) – the channel of communication, such as spoken/written, monologic/dialogic, computer-mediated communication, telephone, face to face, etc.

White (1998: 9) sums up the description of SFL as follows:

SFL is directed towards explaining language as a mode of social action. Its theoretical formulations are organised so as to explain linguistic phenomena by reference to their use. It assumes that both the language and the social context in which language is operating are systems of meaning (semiotic systems) and construes the relationship between the two as one of realisation. Language realises social context (termed, ‘context of situation’) but equally acts to construe social context.

---

<sup>9</sup> <http://www.isfla.org/Systemics/definition.html>

This is to say the social context of any communicative exchange is substantially constituted by that communication.

In light of the argument that SFL is concerned with the processes of meaning making through language use within a social context(s), the theory also postulates that there are three kinds of meaning that are generated through these kinds of meaning making processes. These are categorically referred to as the *metafunctions* of language and are, the *Ideational*, *Interpersonal* and *Textual* functions of language. Conceptualised within SFL the *ideational* function is the ‘content function of language’ (Halliday 2007: 183). It is realised in transitivity<sup>10</sup> and serves to represent situations and events in the world and the entities, actions and processes involved. ‘Ideational’ resources are concerned with construing experience – what is going on, including who is doing what to whom, where, when, why, how and the logical relations of one going-on to another. (Martin and White, 2005). It is in the ideational function that the text-producer embodies in language their experience of the phenomena of the real world (Halliday 1973: 106).

The *interpersonal* function, which is central to, informs and guides the current research, is the ‘participatory function of language’ (Halliday 2007: 184). It allows for the analysis of the ‘expression of attitudes and evaluations’ and as earlier intimated, ‘is realised by mood and modality’. ‘Interpersonal’ resources are concerned with negotiating social relations, that is to say, how people are interacting, including the feelings they try to share (Martin and White, 2005). This function also allows the expression of a relation set up between the text-producer and the text-consumer that is, between the writer and the reader. (Halliday and Matthiessen, 1999).

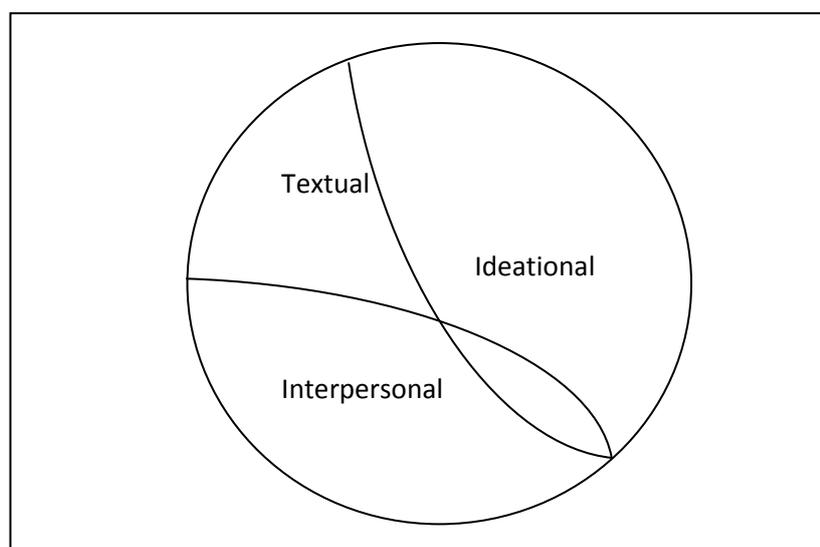
The *textual* function of language is an enabling one (Halliday and Matthiessen, 1999). It is in the textual function that ideational and interpersonal meanings are actualized (Halliday 2007: 184). ‘Textual’ resources are concerned with information flow, that is, the ways in which ideational and interpersonal meanings are distributed in waves of semiosis, including interconnections between waves and between language and attendant modalities (Martin and

---

<sup>10</sup> In SFL ‘transitivity’ is much more than the traditional distinction between transitive and intransitive verbs; it is concerned with the type of process involved in a clause, the participants implicated in it, and, if there are any, the attendant circumstances. Transitivity is thus the relationships established between the processes, the participants and the circumstances encoded in the clause

White, 2005). The *textual* function thus in this regard is realised in information structure and cohesion, in other words through how an author's choice of lexical and lexicogrammatical resources coheres and generates meanings within the social context in which the text occurs/is created.

According to Muntigl and Ventola (2010) it is important to observe that any use of language makes use of all the three metafunctions of language, that is to say, 'calls into play all the three metafunctions simultaneously'. Martin and White (2010) schematically represent the relationship between these three metafunctions of language as follows:



*Figure 3.1: Ideational, Interpersonal and Textual metafunctions of language. (Adapted from Martin and White, 2005)*

The appraisal framework, the major theoretical analytical resource used for the analysis of newspaper texts lies within the interpersonal metafunctions of language. White (2007) argues that it is.

...directed towards developing the account of interpersonal functionality, with extending descriptions and understandings of those aspects of language by which speakers/writers construct for themselves particular identities or personae and by which they position themselves and those they address.

In short, in fulfilling the interpersonal function of language, Appraisal, as shall be discussed in section 3.3, 'is concerned with evaluation – the kinds of attitudes that are negotiated in a text, the strength of the feelings involved and the ways in which values are sourced and readers aligned' (Martin and Rose, 2003). Authors/speakers employ the resources of appraisal

for negotiating their social relationships, in other words, how they feel about things and people involved in the discourse and this is evidenced through linguistic choice – the choices of linguistic resources they choose to express themselves through.

### **3.3. Appraisal framework as developed from SFL**

Appraisal, as discussed above, informs the analysis of newspaper texts in the current study. Appraisal theory, according to White (2001),

...is concerned with the linguistic resources by which texts/speakers come to express, negotiate and naturalise particular inter-subjective and ultimately ideological positions. Within this broad scope, the theory is concerned more particularly with the language of evaluation, attitude and emotion, and with a set of resources which explicitly position a text's proposals and propositions interpersonally. That is, it is concerned with those meanings which vary the terms of the speaker's engagement with their utterances, which vary what is at stake interpersonally both in individual utterances and as the texts unfolds cumulatively.

From the definition provided by White (2001) we discern that the theory is concerned with the resources with which we can understand the manner in which speakers/writers construe for themselves particular authorial identities through the way(s) in which they align with or dissociate themselves from actual or potential respondents and or audiences (Martin and Rose, 2003). As intimated earlier on, the framework is concerned with the analysis of the manner in which the subjective presence of the author is visible from the manner in which they 'adopt' a positioning with regards to the material they are presenting (speaking/writing about) as well as those with which they are communicating. Bednarek (2006) for example, argues that the appraisal analysis provides revelations for and of the context as well as 'the interpersonal character of evaluation as well as the communicative importance of evaluation itself'. Martin and White (2005) shed more light on this when they argue that Appraisal is a major discourse semantic resource construing interpersonal meanings.

Appraisal has been widely employed in the analysis the notion of 'authorial stance' (White, 2006: Martin, 2000: Martin and Rose, 2003: Martin and White, 2005: Thomson and White, 2008: Thomson, White and Kitley, 2008). The notion of 'authorial stance' is quite central to the current study. It is a notion which construes how the author/speaker have responded emotionally to the subject of evaluation, be it a person, event or situation. In short, the appraisal resources make it possible to analyse and 'evaluate' these instances in a text which

point towards some form of attitudinal and ideological positioning that the speaker/writer assumes towards the subject of their text.

Insofar as it concerns itself with the study of embedded emotions and reactions to phenomena within texts, and is a theoretical model that can explain in the best way possible the way language construes attitude and enables writers and speakers to position themselves evaluatively with respect to the viewpoints of potential respondents and other speakers/writers (White, 2008; Thomson, White and Kitley, 2008), the Appraisal framework is a system constituted of three interacting domains of ATTITUDE, ENGAGEMENT and GRADUATION (Martin and White, 2005; White, 1998). ATTITUDE, which is central to the analysis in the current study because it is concerned with feelings, including emotional reactions, judgement of behaviour and evaluation of things, is constituted of three subdomains or categories of feeling – AFFECT, JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION<sup>11</sup>.

With this in mind, the theory is apt for this study as it has explanatory potential due to its ability to ‘provide a broad framework in which news articles can be explored in terms of both their interpersonal styles as well as their textual organization’ (White, 1998). GRADUATION is concerned on the other hand, with ‘attending to grading phenomena whereby feelings are amplified and categories blurred’ (Martin and White, 2005). It thus concerns itself with the manner in which the linguistic resources of a text position the proposition of the text and examines the ways in which the speaker/writer ‘engages’ with their listener/reader/utterance(s). The ENGAGEMENT system, on the other hand, is modelled out of Bakhtin’s (1981) notions of ‘dialogism’ and ‘heteroglossia’ which place meaning-making within the context of the multitude of ‘voices’ or texts on the same subject. It thus concerns itself ‘with the sourcing attitudes and the play of voices around opinions in discourse’ (Martin and White, 2005). Martin and White (2005) schematically represent the Appraisal system as follows;

---

<sup>11</sup> AFFECT refers to the characterisation of phenomena by reference to emotion, JUDGEMENT is the evaluation of human behaviour with respect to social norms and APPRECIATION is the evaluation of objects by reference to aesthetic principles and other systems of social value (White, 1998, 2009, 2010).

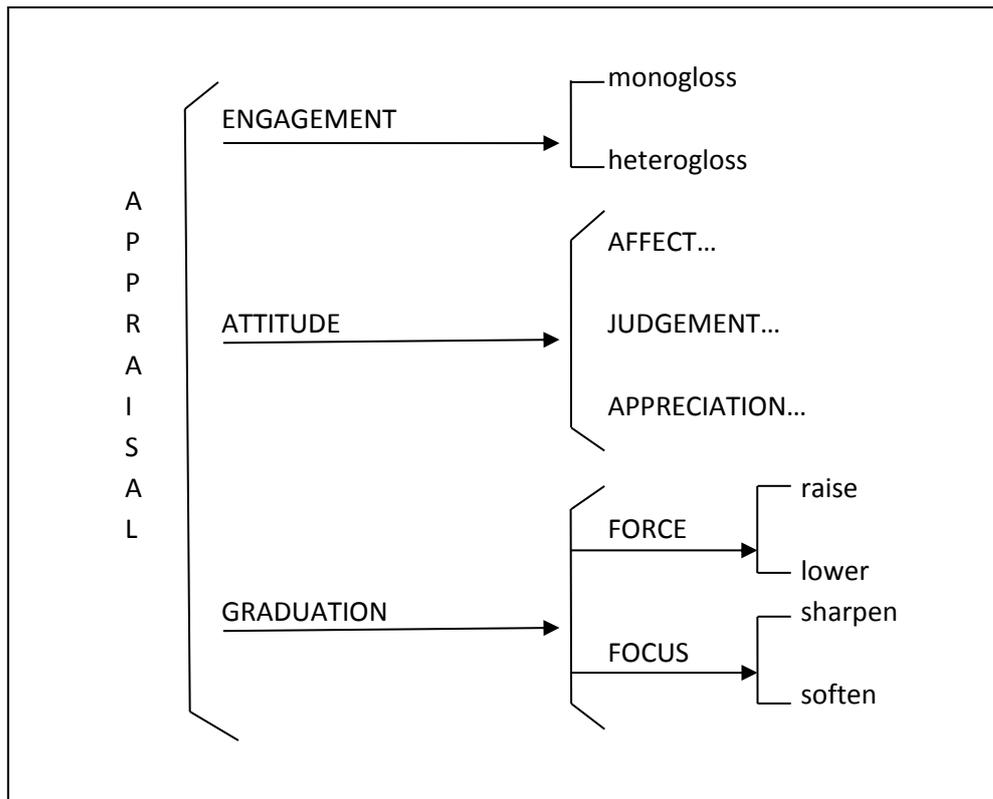


Figure 3.2: An overview of the Appraisal system/resources (Adapted from Martin and White, 2005: 38)

Important to observe is that, the analysis of the notion of ‘authorial stance’ by which the current study builds from in the analysis of the authorial subjectivities embedded in ‘factual’ and ‘neutral’ news articles does not necessarily only observe instances where the author/speaker explicitly exhibits linguistic resources that betray their ideological and emotional positionings but also, as shall be discussed in below, instances where we can discern these as ‘invoked’ – instances in which the subjectivities manifest themselves through what Caffarel and Rechniewski (2010) refer to as ‘a regime of strategic impersonalisations by which the author’s subjective role is backgrounded.’ In other words, these subjectivities are in most instances not overtly expressed. As shall be illuminated in the discussion to follow in section 3.4, through the appraisal resources, we are able to identify and analyse such instances of this ‘invoked’ attitude.

### 3.4. Appraisal resources (or Sub-domains)

The appraisal system is, as discussed above in section 3.3 and as also schematised in Figure 3.2 above, constituted of three major sub-systems of ATTITUDE, ENGAGEMENT and GRADUATION. This section discusses in more details the propositions made by these sub-

domains. It would prudent to point out at this point that the discussion of these sub-domains gives more prominence to ATTITUDE as it is of the three, the one more central to the research concerns of the present research. Of course as expressed in the discussion in section 3.2, the three sub-domains are always in interaction – any use of language entails a use of all the three of them. With this in mind, the section also discusses the other two sub-domains.

### 3.4.1. Attitude

Within the Appraisal framework, the sub-domain of ATTITUDE concerns itself with the construal of feelings, including emotional reactions, judgements of behaviour and evaluation of things. Within ATTITUDE are three categories of JUDGEMENT (focused on the evaluation of human behaviour with respect to social norms), APPRECIATION (concerned with the evaluation of objects by reference to aesthetic principles and other systems of social value) and AFFECT (which refers to the characterisation of phenomena by reference to emotion). Bednarek (2006) and White (2001) contend that ATTITUDE is concerned with the analysis of the values by which writers/speakers pass judgement and associate emotional/effectual responses with participants and processes. In light of this and focused on the written texts that the current research analyses, these emotions can be realised as belonging to the reporter himself/herself (foregrounding the notion of the ‘reporter voice’ which is key to the current research and is discussed in section 3.7 of this chapter) or attributed to an external source through a process known as ‘attribution’.

In the construal of attitudinal meanings within the three sub-domains of the ATTITUDE system of Appraisal, it is important to note that such forms of emotional and ideological positionings can be explicit, that is to say ‘inscribed’ or implied within the linguistic resources that constitute the textuality of the text, that is to say ‘invoked’. Also important to note is that each of the three forms of ATTITUDE can be realised as either negative or positive authorial ATTITUDE. For example, following Tran and Thomson (2010), ‘*authorial inscribed judgement*’ would refer to ‘explicit positive or negative assessments by the author of human behaviour in terms of social norms’, ‘*inscribed appreciation*’ would mean ‘explicit positive or negative assessments by the author of objects, artefacts, events and state-of-affairs by referring to aesthetics and other systems of social valuation’, ‘*authorial affect*’ would refer to ‘the announcing by the author of his or her own positive or negative emotional reaction’ to people, events, state-of-affairs and so on, while ‘*observed affect*’ refers to the emotional

reactions of others as observed by the author (and this is quite key to our analysis of ‘attribution’ in the analysis of the ‘reporter voice’ in the newspaper texts).

### 3.4.1.1. Judgement

As a subsystem of ATTITUDE, ‘JUDGEMENT’ is concerned with the assessment of human behaviour based on a set of established social norms and expectations. It is ‘the evaluation of human behaviour with respect to social norms (White, 2001). ‘It deals with attitudes towards behaviour, which we admire or criticise, praise or condemn.’ (Martin and White, 2005). It is realised in expressions in which a speaker/writer makes attitudinal evaluations of human behaviour based on social expectations and often this is construed through ‘judgements’ based on legality/illegality, morality/immorality, politeness/impoliteness as these are configured within a cultural, institutional or social context. White (2001) expresses the configuration of ‘judgement’ by observing that,

The attitudinal subsystem of JUDGEMENT encompasses meanings which serve to evaluate human behaviour positively and negatively by reference to a set of institutionalised norms. Thus JUDGEMENT is involved when the speaker/[writer] provides an assessment of some human participant with reference to that participant’s acts or dispositions... The social norms at risk with these JUDGEMENT assessments take the form of rules and regulations or of less precisely defined social expectations and systems of value. Thus, under JUDGEMENT we may assess behaviour as moral or immoral, as legal or illegal, as socially acceptable or unacceptable, as laudable or deplorable, as normal or abnormal and so on. (White, 2001: 5-6)

‘JUDGEMENT’ as with the other subsystems of AFFECT, and as indicated before, can either be positive (admiration) or negative (criticism) in nature. It can also manifest itself as either inscribed (explicit) or invoked (implied). White (2001) sums this up when he contends that, JUDGEMENT ‘concerns itself with linguistic resources ‘which criticise or praise, which condemn or applaud the behaviour – actions, deeds, sayings, beliefs, motivations etc. – of human individuals and groups.’ These evaluations of human behaviour foregrounded by the ‘JUDGEMENT’ subsystem of ATTITUDE fall into two broad categorisations, that is, ‘social sanction’ and ‘social esteem’.

‘Social esteem’ concerns itself with what Iedema et al (1994) describes as ‘esteem in the eyes of the public’, that is, expressing ‘judgment based on how ‘unusual’, ‘special’ or ‘customary’ an individual is (*normality*), how ‘capable’ or ‘competent’ an individual is (*capacity*) or how ‘resolute, dependable and well-disposed’ an individual is (*tenacity*) (White, 2001). ‘Judgements’ based on esteem ‘involve evaluations under which the person judged will be

lowered or raised in the esteem of their community, but which do not have legal or moral implications. Thus, negative values of social esteem will be seen as dysfunctional or inappropriate or to be discouraged but they will not be assessed as sins or crimes’ (White, 2001). In short these evaluations, manifesting themselves largely in adjectival form, are also occurring in both positive and negative assessments. These evaluations are expressed schematically by White (2001) as follows:

<b>Social Esteem</b>	positive [admiration]	negative [criticism]
<b>normality</b> (custom) ‘is the person’s behaviour unusual, special, customary?’	standard, everyday, average...; lucky, charmed...; fashionable, avant garde...	eccentric, odd, maverick...; unlucky, unfortunate...; dated, unfashionable ...
<b>capacity</b> ‘is the person competent, capable?’	skilled, clever, insightful...; athletic, strong, powerful...; sane, together...	stupid, slow, simple-minded...; clumsy, weak, uncoordinated...; insane, neurotic...
<b>tenacity</b> (resolve) ‘is the person dependable, well disposed?’	plucky, brave, heroic...; reliable, dependable...; indefatigable, resolute, persevering	cowardly, rash, despondent...; unreliable, undependable...; distracted, lazy, unfocussed...

Table 3.1: The ‘social esteem’ system of ‘Judgement’ (Adapted from White, 2001)

On the other hand, evaluations based on ‘social sanction’ concern themselves with the manners in which humans exhibit ‘honesty’ and ‘truthfulness’ (categorised as *veracity*) and how ‘ethical’ an individual and their conduct/behaviour is (categorised as *propriety*). White (2001) provides a schema to represent such categories of judgement/evaluation represented as follows;

<b>Social Sanction</b>	positive [praise]	negative [condemn]
<b>veracity</b> (truth) ‘is the person honest?’	honest, truthful, credible...; authentic, genuine...; frank, direct ...;	deceitful, dishonest...; bogus, fake...; deceptive, obfuscatory...
<b>propriety</b> (ethics) ‘is the person ethical, beyond reproach?’	good, moral, virtuous...; law abiding, fair, just...; caring, sensitive, considerate...	bad, immoral, lascivious...; corrupt, unjust, unfair...; cruel, mean, brutal, oppressive...

Table 3.2: The ‘social sanction’ system of ‘Judgement’ (Adapted from White, 2001)

The importance of reviewing such forms of evaluations is invaluable to the analysis of how inscribed and invoked attitudinal meanings of ‘JUDGEMENT’ are construed in the news articles to be analysed.

### 3.4.1.2. Appreciation

As a sub-system of ATTITUDE, ‘APPRECIATION’ concerns itself with the examination and analysis of linguistic ‘resources that construe values of things including natural phenomena and semiosis’ (Martin and White, 2005) specifically focusing on non-humans. It is ‘the evaluation of objects by reference to aesthetic principles and other systems of social value’ (White, 1998, 2009, 2010). White (2001) summates the attitudinal goals of APPRECIATION when he points out that,

APPRECIATION is the system by which evaluations are made of products and processes... encompass[ing] values which fall under the general heading of aesthetics, as well as a non-aesthetic category of ‘social valuation’ which includes meanings such as *significant* and *harmful*. APPRECIATION can be thought of as the system by which human feelings, either positive or negative, towards products, processes and entities are institutionalised as a set of evaluations.

We discern from the definition that APPRECIATION resources foreground the manner in which the linguistic resources that a speaker/writer uses construe their attitudinal positioning towards the subjects of their text. APPRECIATION values are usually realised in three broad categorisations, that is (a) the manner in which things ‘captivate us, please us, inspire us’ (*reaction*), (b) how balance and complex expressive resources are (*composition*) and finally (c) how truthful, genuine, innovative and authentic things are (*value*). Also as with JUDGEMENT, APPRECIATION attitudinal resources also manifest themselves as both negative and positive and as both inscribed and invoked.

### 3.4.1.3. Affect

As a sub-system of ATTITUDE, AFFECT resources are concerned with the construal of ‘emotional reaction to events, for example, feelings of shock, elation and so on’ (Martin and White, 2005). According to White (2001) ‘the general outlines of the grammar and semantics of AFFECT are well understood. ‘AFFECT’ is concerned with emotional response and disposition, and is typically realised through mental processes of reaction.’ In essence, our analysis of the resources of AFFECT are concerned with the identification of instances of both explicit (inscribed) and implicit (invoked) instances of a writers/speakers emotional reaction to the subject/events of their text. Evaluatively this can also cover the emotional reactions of

the sources within the text (attributed text) as ‘observed by the writer.’ As with the other subsystems of ATTITUDE, AFFECT resources also manifest themselves as either positive or negative emotional reactions. Martin and White (2005) espouses that within the AFFECT subsystem, emotional reactions can be identified as belonging to categorisations based on six dimensions. These, explained below, Martin and White (2005) refer to as ‘affectual variables’:

- Emotional reactions culturally or contextually categorised/identified/construed as positive (enjoyable) [e.g. She was *happy*] or negative (unenjoyable) [e.g. She was *sad*].
- Emotional reactions that manifest themselves in the form of paralinguistic behaviour patterns or mental states, and are a reaction ‘to some emotional surge’ [e.g. *She broke down crying* (behavioural reaction): *She was distraught* (mental reaction)].
- Emotional reactions responding to some specific stimulus.
- The intensity of emotions/feelings on a scale from low to high intensity.
- Emotions/feelings involving intent with respect to stimulus that has not been actualised (irrealis) as opposed to those involving actual stimulus (realis).
- Emotion grouping based on three major variables of (a) un/happiness [covering emotions involving what Martin and White (2005) refer to as ‘affairs of the heart’ – *anger, sadness* and *love*], (b) in/security [covering emotional reactions concerned with social well-being – *anxiety, trust, confidence, fear*, etc. and (c) dis/satisfaction [concerned with emotional reactions to the ‘pursuit of goals’ – curiosity, respect, displeasure etc.]

The current research considers such resources as pertinent to the categorisation of the writer’s response(s) to the emotional stimulus that events, state-of-affairs, people and objects of their text stimulate. As earlier on argued, the analysis of authorial stance involves the analysis of all the three subsystems of ATTITUDE since their resources cohere and act in complementarity. Despite, of course, these subsystems of ATTITUDE being defined here autonomously in terms of the manner in which they construe attitudinal meanings, it is important to observe that because AFFECT is viewed as the primary resource and that the other two act in complementarity, AFFECT thus is at the heart of these three broad semantic domains as it is the one that ‘is at the heart of institutionalised meanings’ (Martin and White, 2005)

### 3.5. Appraisal and Evaluation in news discourse

As alluded to earlier on in this chapter, ‘appraisal is one of the major discourse semantic resources construing interpersonal meaning’ (Martin and White, 2005). This section reviews the manner in which the appraisal framework has been used in the evaluative analysis of texts within the discourse of news-making. Researches on the language of the media have been many, and are diverse in both their focus and empirical scope. Bednarek (2006) observes that the non-linguistic researches in media are often concerned with issues of ideology, mediation, mass communication (van Dijk, 1988a), the semiotics of the news (Hartley, 1982), the concept of popular culture (Conboy, 2002) and media standards (Sparks and Tulloch, 2000). Bednarek (2006) contends however that though most of these studies shed light on the ‘nature of mass media and media bias, they offer little in terms of a systematic linguistic analysis of media language.’

Of course, as Bednarek (2006) also observes many linguistic studies of media discourse have also been undertaken and she discusses the following of such, which she argues form the eight chief approaches to studying media language; (a) ‘the critical approach studies that works to reveal power relations and ideology and often invoke a call to social responsibility (e.g. Hodges 1979, Trew 1979, Fairclough 1988, 1995a, 1995b, Fowler 1991, Talbot 1995, van Dijk 1988a, 1988b, White 1988, Weiss and Wodak 2003, Caldas – Couthard 2003)’; (b) ‘the narrative/pragmatic/stylistic approach: work which focuses on discourse-level elements and explanations, concerned with the structure and language of news discourse (often involving pragmatic analyses, discussions of presentation and perspective, genre status, style and register) (e.g. Crystal and Davy 1969, Verschueren 1985, Carter 1988, Bell 1991, Almeida 1992, Ljung 1997, White 1997, 1998, Ungerer 2004)’; (c) ‘the corpus - linguistic approach: research on newspaper discourse with the help of corpora (e.g. Short et al 1999, Schneider, K. 1999, Schenider, D. 2000, Minugh 2000, Ljung, 2002, Ni 2003, Biber 2003)’; (d) ‘the practice – focused approach: work on aspects of newsmaking practices (e.g. Bell 1991)’; (e) ‘the diachronic approach: research on the history of newspaper discourse (e.g. Cotter 1996, Schneider 1999, Schneider 2000, Herwig 1999)’; (f) ‘the sociolinguistic approach: studies on the correlation between style and social factors (e.g. Bell 1991, Jucker 1992)’; (g) ‘the cognitive approach: analyses of the relations between cognitive processes, conceptual metaphor, social meaning and discourse (e.g. van Dijk 1988a, 1988b)’; (h) ‘the conversationalist approach: research on media discourse with the methods of conversational analysis (e.g. Clayman 1990, Greatbatch 1998).

Bednarek (2006) explains that none of these approaches however have been interested in evaluation, except a few that are couched within the CDA and Appraisal theoretic insights. Bednarek (2006) thus discusses 'Evaluation in media' which she argues is a new useful insight to understanding subjectivities within media discourse. She discusses the relevance of 'evaluation' to understanding how we can discern a writer's/speaker's subjectivities in a text. According to Bednarek (2006) 'evaluation', broadly speaking, is defined as concerned with self-expression, i.e. the expression of the writer's/speaker's attitudes, beliefs, feelings, emotions, judgements, will, personality etc. Studies on 'subjectivity' according to Bednarek are usually concerned with three aspects of language which are; the writer's/speaker's perspective as shaping linguistic expression, the speakers expression of AFFECT towards propositions contained in utterances/texts and finally the speaker's expression of modality or the epistemic status of the propositions contained in the utterance/text.

Bednarek (2010) also observes that within the linguistic analytical framework of Evaluation, in concerning itself with the expression of a writer's/speaker's opinion, we are therefore able to trace the evaluations that are made through language to either a journalist, a news actor or a source. Analyses of media texts, according to Bednarek (2010), exhibit instances which express/expose a journalist's attitudes and opinions with respect to different meaning dimensions. 'Evaluation' thus, in this case, is a term that can be used to express as Thompson and Hunston (2000) and Bednarek (2010) regard as,

...the expression of the speaker's or writer's attitude or stance towards, viewpoint on, or feelings about the entities or propositions that he or she is talking about. The attitude may relate to certainty or obligation or desirability or any of a number of other sets of values.

Bednarek (2010) discusses twelve parameters through which, within the theoretical explications of Evaluation, we can discern the journalist's subjectivities, attitudes or feelings towards the propositions he or she makes in a news story. She labels these as Comprehensibility, Emotivity, Expectedness, Genuineness, Importance, Necessity, Possibility, Reliability, Causality, Sourcing (evidentiality), Sourcing (style) and Mental state. Bednarek observes that through the analysis of a news story, we can undertake what she terms 'evaluations of comprehensibility'. These, in media discourse are concerned with 'the degree to which journalists, news actors or sources evaluate entities, situations, states-of-affairs, or statements in stories as being within or outside the grasp of their understanding.

### 3.6. 'Voices' and control in Zimbabwean media[ted] discourse

This section reviews the notion of 'voices' in texts as understood from different theoretical insights as well as scholarly domains. This is done in order to locate the theoretically 'correct' conceptualisation of 'voice(s)' within SFL and appraisal, especially so within the theoretical framework of the 'reporter voice' configuration. According to Tjupa (2010) the concept of the study of 'voices' in the analysis of texts was first introduced to Western literary studies in 1921 by Lubbock, who considered that 'the author can make use of both his own language and the languages of his characters'. Mikhail Bakhtin in his work on Dostoevsky (1973) and in his studies on the genre of the novel is also credited with introducing the notion of 'voices' to Russian literary studies. Bakhtin (1986) argues, within the theory of 'dialogism' that there are always preceding utterances 'with which a given utterance enters into a kind of relation or another (builds upon them, polemicizes with them, or simply presumes that they are already known to the listener). Any utterance is a link in a very complexly organised chain of other utterances.' Bakhtin's interpretations of the concept of 'voices' are expressed from two interacting perspectives – as one of the products of the general language – producing 'language – intention' of the speaker as well as a special stylistically realised 'language' of a speaker – a language with its own picture of the world (Tjupa, 2010).

The conceptualisation of the notion of 'voice' has thus become quite closely associated with Bakhtin's (1973, 1981) concepts of 'narratology' and 'dialogism', especially that of 'heteroglossia.' The notion of 'heteroglossia' as theorised by Bakhtin shares close affinities with the notion of 'intertextuality', a notion that regards texts as reflecting 'a plenitude of speech' (Bakhtin, 1981). Roland Barthes (1973) complements Bakhtin's (1981) views and thus conceptualises texts and language as 'a multiplicity of voices surrounding a text – as no more than a "new fabric woven out of old quotations' (Tjupa (2010). 'Narratology' as a concept that explains the narration underlying a text also relates to Kristeva's (1966) notion of 'intertextuality', which Kristeva expresses as referring to 'the link which is thought to exist between a particular text and previous or anticipated ones'. In a manner of speaking, coining the term in her 1967 account of Bakhtin's works, *Rabelais and his World* and *Problems of Dostoevsky's Poetics*, Kristeva sought to 'address a concept radically different the traditional romantic conceptions of the literary work in which the text was autonomous and had one identifiable author' (Seghezzi, 2007). In light of this Seghezzi (2007) observes that 'intertextuality' is the relationship between one text and another. In the analysis of news reports however, Seghezzi argues that 'it is the presence of others' words in a text'

The exploration of the notions of 'intertextuality' and 'dialogism' ('voices') to the study and interpretation of media texts has not been without its own forms of criticisms. The main criticism has been that in media studies, the notion of the subject as an author is in many ways less significant than in literary contexts, where the two concepts have largely been applied and developed. However, Tjupa (2010:1) argues that despite this 'the category of heteroglossia has entered the scholarly apparatus of narratology because the verbal presentation of the narration necessarily possesses certain linguistic characteristics that create the effect of a voice.' Tjupa (2010:1) further iterates that narration does not only take place from a particular standpoint in time and space, but also invariably has a 'certain stylistic colour, a certain tone of emotion and intention that can be described as 'glossality', and this is directed at the reader's ability to hear'. 'Narration' reflects thus, the ideological orientation of those involved in it as well as their agenda(s). This results from the observed fact that more often than not, the manners in which we conceive and conceptualise the world around us differ, and subsequently our expression of the world differ. Tjupa (2010:1) notes thus,

"Heteroglossia is a 'dialogical', agonal structure of verbal communication whose essence lies in the fact that "within the arena of almost every utterance an intense interaction and struggle between one's own and another's word is being waged" (Bakhtin, 1973: 1981); a struggle, that is, involving two or more codes between which links of selection and connotation emerge."

Fairclough's (1995) definition of 'voices' as 'those speaking or whose speech is represented' gives credence to the existence of 'voices' in media texts such as news reports. Observing the proliferation of 'the presence of others' words in news texts' (Seghezzi, 2007), Fairclough contends that a single news item, 'weaves together representations of the discourses of a number of people'. It follows then that news texts represent a multiplicity of voices. This corroborate Bakhtin's (1981) notion of heteroglossia which, as expressed above, emphasises 'plenitude of speech'. The notion of 'voices' in the media and media texts is also closely linked to the concept of 'representation'. White (1997) views the 'voice' as the language of reporting in 'hard news' stories, implying that news reporting is seen as some form of narration. He points out that media training texts, practising journalists and media commentators frequently claim that 'the language or 'voice' of the hard news report should be factual, neutral and free of subjectivities'.

The term 'representation' is defined by Burton (1990:2) as referring to 'ways in which the media construct views of the world and of social groups in particular'. 'Representation'

through the media is not ideologically neutral. As Kyong Kim cited in Griffin (1991) points out, '[o]ne should not forget that unlike nature, the media's reality is always political.' 'Representation' has a strong bearing on the balance of power and the construction of social relations and identities of social groups. The same is also observed by Griffin (1991) who argues that those who shape meaning tend to have more power than those who receive it. In the media, meaning is shaped by journalists as they narrate events, and at the same time, it is shaped by the 'voices' of the news report, mainly the reporter's as well of the sources which are quoted and the commentators consulted. Seghezzi (2007) expresses that, because journalists seek to detach themselves from what is said in the news reports, they often tend to adopt somebody else's words as if they were their own. Accordingly, Fairclough (1995) notes that most of the media output in news, current affairs and documentary consists of 'the mediation of the speech or writing of mainly, prominent people in various domains of public life – politicians, police and lawyers, many categories of experts and so forth'.

Arguing from a Critical Discourse Analysis (CDA) perspective, Burton (1990) points out that, '[r]epresentations usually give us a selective view of their subject matter, one that fits the dominant social and cultural views of that subject.' This view is reinforced by White (1997) who argues that the hard news report 'inflects the events it describes with cultural and ideological meaning' such that it 'acts to construct and naturalise a model of social stability, morality and normality.' The selective representation of a web of 'voices' through the media, which priorities certain interests or views over others manifests the agenda-setting role of the media. According to Griffin (1991:341), after considering what people were saying, what people were not saying, and who got to say it, Foucault discovered that 'throughout history, not everyone in society had equal voice and power'.

The phenomenon of media representations is revealed through the manner in which only selective views of the subject matter (who oftentimes are largely evaluative in tone), and in particular those consistent with the dominant ideology, particularly that of the 'reporter voice' and the editorial policy, are given prominence. This is in concomitance with the linguistic notion of the 'reporter voice' (discussed in detail in section 3.7) and which is a configuration concerned with the exposition of authorial subjectivities through the analysis of the evaluative/attitudinal use(s) of language and what the journalistic theoretic perspectives refer to as 'Agenda-Setting'. Baran (1998:108) notes that the journalist theoretic interpretation of 'agenda-setting' is concerned with how the media influence not only 'what we think but what

we think about'. Burton (1990) sheds more light on this concept by defining it as 'the process by which the news media define which topics (the agenda) should be of main interest to the audience, by selecting these topics repeatedly for news materials.' With regards to this, McCombs and Shaw cited in Griffin (1991) maintain that the mass media 'have the ability to transfer the salience of items of their news agendas to the public agenda.' This shows how strongly the media can shape public opinion through their representation of different 'voices' and issues.

Burton (1990) contends that, the fact that news organizations set up an agenda of topics as well as ideological positions for reading them from that form, 'opposes the idea that news is somehow a collection of truthful events and facts from 'out there.' This view is also expressed by Fairclough (1995) who argues that media texts do not merely 'mirror realities' as is sometimes naively assumed, but 'they constitute versions of reality in ways which depend on the social positions, interests and objectives of those who produce them'. This shows the link between media representation and ideology. According to Baran (1998), '[n]ewspapers tell readers what is significant and meaningful through their placement of stories in and on their pages.' Hall cited in Griffin (1991) notes, in line with this observation, that the primary function of discourse is to make meaning and that meaning is influenced by the intentions of the person(s) who generate(s) it.

Words and other signs contain no intrinsic meaning, Griffin (1991) argues, but people ascribe meaning to them. In news reporting, this can be revealed, for example, through the inflection of views of sources with reporting verbs such as 'claimed', 'alleged' and 'believes' which influence the readers' interpretation or perception of what is being represented. As a result, Griffin (1991) argues, it is not enough that we simply recognize that meaning is created in discourse, but we must also examine the sources of that discourse, especially the originators or 'speakers' of it. Perception management in news reporting is typical of agenda-setting. In this vein, Burton (1990) points out that omission is a form of representation too. He contends that if one omits the representation of given groups within the population then one is saying something about their lack of importance, as well as about the relative importance of those who are represented – those whose 'voices are expressed'.

The views expressed above on representation in the media have a bearing on the power of the media in shaping public opinion. A fuller understanding of this power is more understandable through exploring its background, which is rooted in Marxism. The power of the media in

shaping public opinion was emphasised by Althusser (1970), a neo-Marxist social theorist, in his exploration of the concept of 'Ideological State Apparatuses' (ISAs). ISA refers to 'a certain number of realities which present themselves to the immediate observer in the form of distinct and specialised institutions.' These institutions belong either to the private domain, for example family or the public domain, for instance the media.

Althusser distinguishes ISA from Repressive State Apparatus. ISAs, according to Althusser (1970), 'function massively and predominantly by ideology, but they also function secondarily by repression, even if ultimately, but only ultimately, this is attenuated and concealed, even symbolic'. Althusser dwells on how the Repressive State Apparatus function 'massively and predominantly by repression (including physical repression), while functioning secondarily by ideology.' In line with this, Althusser asserts that 'no class can hold state power over a long period without at the same time exercising its hegemony over and in the ISAs.' He further contends that all ISAs, whatever they are, contribute to the same result – the reproduction of the relations of production, that is, capitalist relations of exploitation. However, in the context of this study, the influence of the ISA is not being viewed from the point of view of economic determinism, but rather in terms of how it promotes the ideological hegemony of those in control of mass media production – considering especially how such ownership patterns influence ideological positionings.

Hall, cited in Griffin (1991), contends that 'it is folly to divorce communication from the cultural context in which it is found and ignoring the realities of unequal power distribution in society'. Gramsci's concept of 'hegemony' expresses the link between the cultural aspects of social life and ideology. According to Fairclough (1995) 'hegemony' is a term used by Gramsci and others for describing power and struggles over power. He further maintains that 'hegemony' emphasizes forms of power which depend upon consent rather than coercion and is sustained ideologically. Burton (1990):261) argues in this context that, the media have the effect of 'endorsing the dominant ideology, the dominant view of power, relationships between groups in society, the dominant view of how things are run.' Burton (1990) argues that the media is an important part of hegemony. He also maintains that media professionalism is tied up with the values that inform the organization such that in this sense professionalism becomes ideological. Fairclough's (1995) sentiments suggest that, hegemony is sustained in the common sense assumptions of everyday life. Burton (1990) reinforces this

view by suggesting that, 'what hegemony does is to naturalise ideology itself, and all the values and beliefs built into ideology.'

The effect of the naturalisation of the dominant ideology is that it becomes invisible. This explains why people tend to believe what they hear from the media without questioning it. The media has the muscle to change the perception of the public on different issues. 'The media affect our beliefs, attitudes, values and behaviour directly or indirectly' (Burton 1990). Habermas' concept of 'the public sphere', while largely biased towards notions of democracy, is also fundamental in shedding light on this power of the media. What Habermas terms 'the bourgeois public sphere' consists of social spaces where individuals gather to discuss their common public affairs and to organize against arbitrary and oppressive forms of social and public power. The essential principle of the public sphere was open discussion by members of the public in order to reach a consensus on issues affecting them for the public good.

This 'public sphere' is contemporarily represented by the media since they remain the major arena facilitating maximum public participation and debates over key issues affecting the public. The media provide(s) evidence of political events, issues and activities, thereby enabling us to understand the operation of politics in our society and to work more constructively in that political process (Burton, 1990). The implications of this are that the media promote(s) participatory democracy. This view of the role of the media is consistent with what, according to White (1997) is the claim made by journalist themselves that the news report is 'an objective, neutral and impersonal mode of meaning making'. Burton (1990) opines, however, that the evidence given by the media on political events gives us the illusion of participating in the political process, but actually merely endorsing the authority of those who continue to run over our lives unquestioned. He goes on to argue that the media are capable of mobilising public opinion by raising issues that the public may not have thought of and they can also suggest a way of looking at those issues. As such, the media are capable of shaping public opinion about political events and issues.

From a CDA perspective, van Dijk (1998) explores the 'undeniable power of the media.' This is similar in orientation to what McQuail (2000) terms 'media power' and interprets as 'a potential for the future or a statement of probability about effects, under given conditions.' Having power is having the capacity to do something, but not necessarily doing it. However, even if that power is conceived in terms of probability it cannot be denied at all. Fairclough

cited in Wetherell (2001) notes that CDA can be seen as an application of the critical analysis which has developed within Western Marxism to language in particular. He further asserts that Western Marxism highlights cultural aspects of social life as it views domination and exploitation as established and maintained culturally and ideologically. Bakhtin views linguistic signs as ‘an arena of class struggle’, and one focus of class struggle is over the meanings and words. Bakhtin’s theory emphasises that texts are dialogical – a notion that Kristeva (1986) terms ‘intertextuality’.

Many theorists find in Bakhtinian notions of ‘dialogue’ ‘a multiplicity and diversity of voices’ (Zappen, 2000). This phenomenon has been referred to as ‘heteroglossia’ and as Bakhtin (1981) argues, is based on the view that ‘language is alive and still in the process of becoming’. Zappen (2000) further expresses that, ‘the larger context in which Bakhtin situates his discussion of rhetoric suggests the possibility of a dialogised or dialogical rhetoric that views all human activity and all human discourse as a complex unity of differences.’ He also argues that the characteristic forms of heteroglossia are the expression, juxtaposition, or negotiation of our individual and our cultural differences. This shows the power of discourse in influencing changes, especially in social relations.

Bakhtin (1981) also distinguishes dialogue from monologue. According to Zappen (2000), Bakhtin views monologue as ‘single – voiced’ discourse while he regards dialogue as ‘double – voiced’ discourse. He argues that monologic discourse is discourse that recognizes only itself and its objects, discourse that does not recognize other people’s words. On the other hand, dialogic discourse is discourse that contains a deliberate reference to someone else’s words. Many linguistic theories, Appraisal and Evaluation included, have also drawn from all these insights and many others provided by different theorists owing largely to how they shed light on the close link between discourse and ideology.

The multi-faceted nature of the CDA theory for many a study seems quite appealing because it gives great depth which sheds light to the conceptualisation of what informs ‘voices’ in news. The perceived power of the media has instigated a lot of critical research to date. While some of these studies have been conducted within the journalistic scholarship, others have been carried out in other disciplines such as linguistics. Most of such critical studies, which tended to focus more on the media representations of women and minority groups have traditionally tended to be based on a content – analytical approach – concentrating on biased and stereotypical images of such social groups in the media. According to Bloor and Wood

(2006:58), this method is ‘concerned with the surface meaning of the document rather than the hidden agenda’ and is also largely quantitative.

Van Dijk (1998) notes that the first studies of media language focused on easily observable surface structures such as the biased or partisan use of words, the description of ‘us’ and ‘them’ along socio-political lines. However, according to Van Dijk (1998), more critical studies have increasingly emerged, though not strictly discourse analytical. Such studies are able to critically assess, as he puts it, ‘the sometimes subtle biases of the official media in favour of employers and nationalism, for example, by comparing who was interviewed, how, in which location or with what camera angles.’ Many other critical studies on media representations have been conducted with some of them quite popular and very influential. More often than not, most of them were carried outside the paradigm of discourse analysis. Cases in point are the studies conducted by Stuart Hall which were done within the framework of cultural studies.

Critical studies on the media in the United States have paid little attention to discourse structure. A notable case is that of Chomsky and Herman (2002) who, in their ‘Propaganda Model’ criticise the United States foreign policy. According to van Dijk (1998) Chomsky and Herman (2002) do not propose a fully-fledged analysis of media discourse but merely ‘occasionally refer to the use of persuasive and biased words such as euphemisms of atrocities committed by the US and its ‘client state’. In view of all this, van Dijk laments the fact that in most critical studies of the media, there is very little inspiration from linguistics, semiotics or discourse analysis. He argues that in most cases, analysis does not go beyond perceptive but essentially impressionistic ‘readings’ of the news or practically relevant but undertheorised stories about well-known cases of bias. He also notes that most of the methods used are usually the quantitative content analysis approach of the social sciences such that there is often lack of detailed analysis of the actual news stories.

The current research notes that due to their social scientific inclination, most of the studies on media representations in Zimbabwean media that have been conducted so far have also not taken into consideration the discursive role of ‘voices’ in news reporting (see Chiumbu, 2004: Mano, 2005). Fairclough introduces the concept of ‘voices’ in his ‘intertextual analysis of media texts.’ Done within a CDA framework Fairclough’s (1995) analysis argues that intertextual analysis is a bridge between the ‘text’ and discourse practice dimensions in CDA. In other words, intertextual analysis is an analysis a text in terms of the ways in which genres

and discourses are woven together and embedded into the text being studied. He thus defines ‘voices’ as the identities of particular individual or collective agents.

Fairclough (1995:77) notes that ‘one striking feature of news discourse is the way in which it weaves together representations of the speech and writing of complex range of ‘voices’ into a web which imposes order and interpretation upon them.’ The notion of ‘voices’ is the focus of Fairclough’s (1995), critical discourse analysis of a news report broadcast on BBC. He observes that reports are ‘rarely even-handed’ with all the various voices represented. Fairclough argues, ‘some are given prominence, and some marginalized. Some are used to frame others. Some are legitimized by being taken up in the news reader’s or reporter’s voice, others are not.’

The issue of ‘voices’ in news reporting is also explored in an analysis the language of ‘hard news’ reports in English broadsheet print media conducted by White (1997, 1998). White (1997, 1998) examines the generic organization of these reports and the social and ideological objectives which this organization seeks to achieve. The ‘voice’ is conceptualised as the ‘language’ of news reporting. According to White (1997, 1998), this ‘voice’ should ideally be ‘neutral and objective.’ He notes that in the mainstream English-language broadsheet press, in a significant proportion of hard news texts, the author avoids or at least minimises interpersonal meanings which might reveal his subjective involvement in the meaning being expressed by the text. Among the meanings that are avoided are explicit value judgments by the reporter about the morality, competence and normality of participants. He also argues that such meanings are alternatively confined to the attributed comments of external voices.

Within the theoretical explications of Systemic Functional Linguistics (SFL) Thomson et al (2008) also explore the use of evaluative language in ‘hard news’ reports focusing on the notion of ‘voices’. Thomson et al (2008), envision the notion of ‘voices’ as referring to ‘a particular pattern in the use and co-occurrence of evaluative meanings.’ In other words, similar to White (1998), ‘voices’ are viewed as the language of reporting the ‘journalistic voice’ or ‘styles’. Thomson et al (2008) distinguish between what they call ‘reporter voice’<sup>12</sup> and ‘correspondent voice’ in news reporting. ‘Reporter voice’, according to them, is seen in ‘hard news’ coverage of events such as accidents, disasters, protests, crimes, court proceedings and other related events. This hard news reporter voice involves substantial

---

<sup>12</sup> This is a notion fully explored in section 3.7

minimisation of the use of explicit attitudinal meanings, especially those that reflect the reporter's value judgments. 'Correspondent voice' is seen by Thomson et al (2008) as involving some minimisation of inscribed attitude, but the constraints are less extensive than in reporter voice. It follows that journalists reporting in correspondent voice will 'on their own behalf, explicitly assess human behaviour by reference to notions of human capacity, tenacity and normality, but will refrain from explicitly making ethical judgments about right and wrong, good and evil' (Thomson et al, 2008). Thomson et al (2008) identify a third voice called 'commentator voice', which they argue is usually found in overtly argumentative and subjective text types namely opinion pieces, commentaries and editorials but is less prevalent in news texts. This type of voice involves no restrictions on the expression of attitudinal meanings.

Comparing the language of hard news reporting across languages and cultures, Thomson et al (2008:22) observe that 'authorial neutrality' can be found operating not only in English-language reporting, but also in the hard news reporting of a range of different languages, but only when 'neutrality' is perceived as a 'strategic constraining of a certain subset of attitudinal language.' It is vital to bear in mind that, although neutrality and objectivity in news reporting are associated with ethical practice, in actual fact they remain an ideal. This is a view also expressed by Burton (1990) who opines that 'media professionalism is tied up with the values that inform the organisation.' This is further reinforced by White's (1998) observation that 'the 'hard news' report inflects the events it describes with cultural and ideological meanings.' This implies that the discourse of news reporting invariably constructs a particular view of the reality being presented.

Torck (2001) cited in Bloor and Wood (2006) discusses the notion of 'voices' in a cross-cultural study focusing on the representation of the 'voices' of homeless people in street newspapers. In Torck's (2001) assessment, the conceptualisation of 'voices' involved was apparently that of 'voices' as identities of particular individuals or collective agents as defined by Fairclough (1995). Torck's analysis is couched within CDA and interrogates the balance of power reflected by media representations. The study explores how newspaper topics as well as genres are framed to reinforce the negative social ethos of the homeless. It found out that where, for instance, homeless people are given a platform for their 'voices', they are usually restricted to personal narratives and poetry. Torck (2001) observes that the

emphasis on feelings and pathos in the ‘voices’ of the homeless was less prevalent in the American compared to the European newspapers.

After evaluating and exploring the two different conceptualisations of ‘voices’, that is, ‘voices’ as the language of news reporting on the one hand and ‘voices’ as identities of particular individual or collective agents on the other, this research adopts a complementation of theory in exploring the concept in the analysis of data. The study largely framed in SFL also makes use of CDA theoretical tenets in the analysis of data. The main reason is that, unlike in the cited studies where SFL constituted the basis for analysing some of the media texts, in this particular study these texts will be analysed from both SFL and CDA perspectives which, in line with the notion of ‘reporter voice’, is largely interested in the dialectic nature of discourse. It follows that it will be necessary to investigate not only the relationship between the ‘voices’ of the different external sources being represented, but also how these voices are avenues through which evaluative expressions are made. This will be done in an attempt to analyse how, as Thomson et al (2008) put it, the analysis of such is useful in interpreting and recognising the subjective positions of news reports as expressed through ‘the reporter voice’ configuration. Understanding this complex interaction of ‘voices’ sheds light to the ideological position of the newspapers under study in terms of how attitudinal and evaluative linguistic resources are made use of in newspaper discourse.

A host of critical literature has been written so far focusing on analysing the Zimbabwean media’s reportage of political and economic issues since the year 2000 when the emergence of remarkable opposition politics hogged the media’s attention to political issues and resulted in the ‘worst’ form of media plurality the country had/has ever witnessed after the attainment of independence. However, these studies most of which have taken the form of “watchdog” reports of the media representations published periodically, though critical to some extent, have tended to be confined to mere content analysis. Moreover, although the issue of ‘voices’ has been incorporated in some of these critical commentaries, it has not been dealt with in such detail as to reveal the dialectic nature of media discourse, that is, to show how media representations affect the reading positions assumed by the readership as well as how such representations are an ideological tool for agenda-setting.

In the electronic media, reviews of media representations have been availed through a programme entitled ‘Media Watch’ on Zimbabwe Broadcasting Corporation Television (ZBC TV). In the print media, they have been published predominantly by private-owned

newspapers, namely *The Standard* and *The Zimbabwe Independent*. As such, merely by virtue of the ownership patterns of these media organizations which broadcast or publish them, they have tended to show political bias either in support of the then ‘ruling party’ or the ‘opposition’. The analysis given in reports compiled by such independent media monitoring agents as the Media Monitoring Project Zimbabwe (MMPZ) have also not always been ‘objective’ either, although the MMPZ maintains in the introduction to one of its reports that its mission is ‘to attempt to measure the performance of the media against generally accepted professional, ethical and legal standards.’ For instance, the MMPZ, in the report on the media coverage of the 2002 Presidential and Mayoral elections in Zimbabwe, makes one important observation that the media in Zimbabwe were polarized along political lines not only in the run-up to the 2002 elections but also ahead of the February 2000 constitutional referendum and June 2000 parliamentary elections. However, part of its analysis exhibits a deliberate refrain from remaining ‘neutral’. This is highlighted by one of the comments in the above-mentioned report which reads, ‘[s]ometimes the public media, especially *The Herald* would discuss the latest “gaffe” made by the MDC’s Morgan Tsvangirai, or else gleefully reporting the results, the paper would discuss the “swing” between 2000 and today’. The word selection of the JUDGEMENT/APPRECIATION resource ‘**gleefully**’ reflects the MMPZ’s value judgment which seems to be sympathetic to the MDC. Further exemplification of such is evinced by another comment in the same report on the reportage of the government-owned media during the same period which reads,

Journalists and broadcasters abandoned the most elementary standards of truthfulness in order to create stories that not only suited the government’s point of view, but also seemed calculated to incite a violent response to the government opponents.

While it cannot be denied that what the report terms ‘the language of violence’ was prevalent across all sections of the media during that period owing to their political polarization, to accuse journalists working for the public media of actually conniving with the government to incite violence is tantamount to turning a blind eye on the role played by the so-called ‘government opponents’. Observations of such evaluative and highly attitudinal uses of language can be argued to provide evidence of inherent subjectivities as the reports by these media commentators are seemingly not always ‘objective’. In spite of having a social scientific rather than linguistic orientation, the generality of the periodical commentaries on media representations in Zimbabwe since the year 2000 have underlined the existence of media polarization along political lines ahead of past elections. In these commentaries, the

public-owned media have been shown to be aligned to the ruling Zimbabwe African National Union Patriotic Front (ZANU-PF) party while the private-owned media have been revealed to be sympathetic to the then ‘opposition’ party, the Movement for Democratic Change (MDC).

This research notes the existence of other studies that have also been conducted on media representations of political issues in the country from a linguistics perspective. Although some of these studies have been carried out from a CDA perspective, hardly any one of them has dwelt on the aspect of ‘voices’ as well as the analysis of the use of attitudinal and evaluative language in news reports. The general trend in these studies seems to be largely concentrated on comparing the reportage of two or more newspapers (in most instances newspapers from both government-owned and private-owned media houses) and in the same content based analysis style of the periodic media reviews which have been discussed above. This of course is another gap that the current research also hopes to fill. This research as has been explicated several times before theorises ‘intertextuality’ as expressed by Fairclough (2003). Fairclough (2003) explores the notions of voices through what he terms ‘manifest intertextuality’, by providing the following definition;

The intertextuality of a text is the presence within it of elements of other texts (and therefore potentially other voices than the author’s own) which may be related to (dialogued with, assumed, rejected etc) in various ways [...] The most common and pervasive form of intertextuality is reported speech (including reported writing and thought), though there are others (including irony). Reported speech may or may not be attributed to specific voices, and speech (writing, thought) can be reported in various forms, including direct (reproduction of actual words used) and indirect report (summary).

Conceptualised as such, ‘intertextuality/ is used in the analysis of how authors employ a variety of strategic impersonalisations in a bid to remain seemingly neutral in their reports. This is achieved by ensuring that the rhetorical and structural arrangement of materials in the news reports are presented in such a way that evaluative and highly attitudinal evaluations are presented through the ‘voices’ of others than the author’s own – through intertextualisation of the texts.

### **3.7. The ‘reporter voice’ and objectivity/media[ted] bias**

The current study focuses on the notion of ‘reporter voice’ as it applies to the study of ‘objectivity’ in ‘hard news’ reports. The notion, as has been highlighted in discussions in the previous chapters and in previous sections of this chapter, is espoused from within the

theoretical explications of SFL, in particular Appraisal and Evaluation. This section reviews literature on the notion of ‘reporter voice’ with two chief concerns: (a) to understand what it is all about and (b) to create working definitions and parameters for understanding the notion as conceptualised within the current study. Within SFL the notion of ‘reporter voice’, according to White and Thomson (2008), manifests itself as ‘a device by which it becomes possible for an author to advance a particular value position while at the same time backgrounding his/her attitudinal role, at least to the extent that explicit authorial judgements are avoided.’ What we discern from this observation is that, as part of the ‘factual’ and ‘neutral’ news report that the ‘hard news’ genre is, our study and analyses must not only point to those instances in which there is clear explicit expressions of a standpoint on the part of the reporter as we would expect to find in an opinion piece. In elaborating this, White and Thomson (2008: 19) argue that,

“...in this it [the ‘reporter voice’] stands in a contrast to correspondent news items for ‘voice’ which do less to background the author’s subjective role and in contrast to commentator voice texts where the author’s subjective role is fully on display.

The underlying arguments that we draw from these argumentations are indicative of the fact that the study of the notion of the ‘reporter voice’ in news discourse is largely interested in the identification and analysis of texts which are not saturated with overt instances of explicit authorial judgement (Caffarel and Rechniewski, 2008). Such kind of a configuration is expressed schematically by White (2001) as follows:

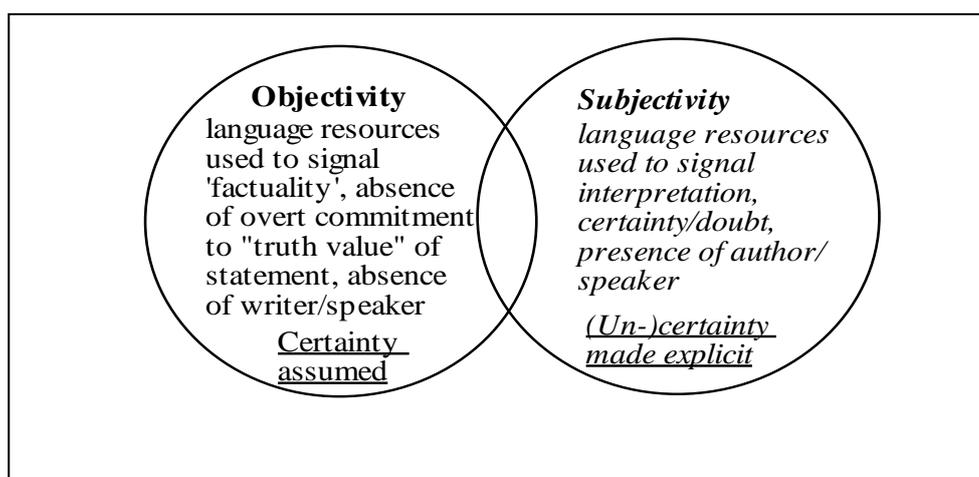


Figure 3.3: Comparing and contrasting objective and subjective stances/resources (Adapted from White, 2005)

According to Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008), following Martin and White (2005), ‘the evaluative key of ‘reporter voice’ in hard news reporting is characterised by an attitudinal configuration which includes a low probability of authorial inscribed judgement, no authorial affect, some inscribed authorial appreciation and some ‘observed’ affect.’ In simple terms, when there is an oversaturation of instances in which there is explicit judgement on the part of reporter, it becomes immediately apparent that the ‘hard news’ text does not display the configuration of the ‘reporter voice’ which Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008) and Martin and White (2005) contextualise above. This is so because it would have flouted the configuration of the ‘reporter voice’ which Martin and White (2005) and White (2000) observe to be largely operational within the ‘hard news’ genre news report within English broadsheet media. An important observation made by Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008) is that ‘the configuration of the ‘reporter voice’ is more typically the style adopted in contexts such as crime, police and law reporting. It frequently does not occur within news reporting of political events in English broadsheet media.’

The style that is largely manifest in news reporting covering political reporting, according to Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008), is one in which explicit authorial judgement occurs with some regularity. Following Iedema (1994), White (2000) and Martin and White (2005), Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008) refer to this kind of style characteristic of ‘hard news’ reporting, ‘the commentator voice’ because of the explicit authorial judgement, appreciation and affect that permeate through and characterise the stories/reports. Based on the appraisal resources used in the identification and analysis of the notion of ‘reporter voice’ White (2001) presents a schema of the notion as follows:

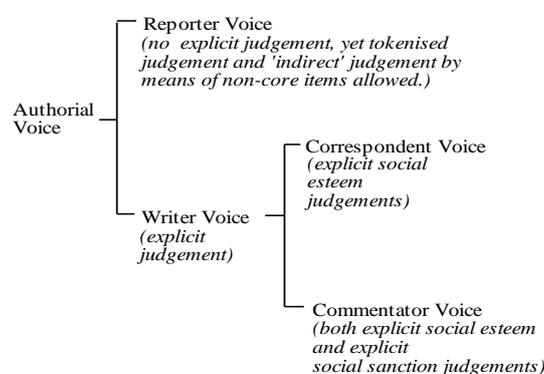


Figure 3.4: The reporter voice (Adapted from White, 2005)

Studies of the 'reporter voice' as it relates to the possibilities of attaining 'objectivity' in non-English journalistic cultures are not many. Despite this however, the few that have been undertaken bring in new insights as to both the textual organisation of 'hard news' as it compares to how it is in the English journalistic culture. Thomson and Fukui (2008), for example, analyse the 'reporter voice' in news reporting in two Japanese lead stories. The analytical tools they use as discussed in the previous section, are an Appraisal analysis (White, 2000: Martin and White, 2005) and the generic structure potential analysis (Hasan, 1996).

From their analysis, they argue that the analysis demonstrates that the stories are far from being 'objective' and 'neutral' as each of the two reporters writing the stories take evaluative positions in relation to the event they are reporting on. They argue that the positions of the two reporters are not overtly expressed but are rather presented through different rhetorical strategies construing to covert arguments, but within similar organisational structures. From their analysis, they assume the definition of 'reporter voice' as enunciated by Martin and White (2005), in which the 'reporter voice' is seen as 'a regime of strategic impersonalisations by which the author's subjective role is backgrounded'.

The argument that they present is that, the 'reporter voice' configuration as enunciated by Martin and White (2005: 178) 'has an attitudinal profile which includes a low probability of authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT and inscribed APPRECIATION with no authorial AFFECT and some 'observed' AFFECT'. In other words, this again plays into the argument raised by Caffarel and Rechniewski (2008) that the 'reporter voice' configuration must as a matter of necessity not espouse clearly distinct and explicit exposures of the reporter's subjectivities and ideological positioning. Also, by referring to 'strategic impersonalisations', Thomson and Fukui (2008) present the argument that the lexical and lexicogrammatical resources that a reporter selects to use to report on an issue or event are critical to our ability to explore how the reporter attempts to conceal his/her subjectivities 'strategically'.

Following the definition of 'hard news' Thomson and Fukui (2008) proffer, which describes the news genre as news articles that share specific kinds of generic structure and which achieve their informational and rhetorical objectives 'through a non-linear, orbital structure in which dependent 'satellites' elaborate, explain, contextualise and appraise a textually dominant 'nucleus', the importance of reviewing this study is in the realisation that it is one of the research goals to, using the 'reporter voice' configuration described by Thomson and

Fukui (2008) in analysing ‘hard news’ stories within the Zimbabwean newspapers across languages, ask the question: Is the ‘hard news’ report a narrative (Bakhtin, 1981), and does it act to ‘construct and naturalise a model of social stability, morality and normalcy’ (White, 1994; Thomson and Fukui, 2008) in line with conceptualisations of ‘genre’ within SFL while at the same time maintaining an ‘objective’, ‘neutral’ and ‘impersonal’ mode of meaning making (White, 1997)? Since the concerns of the current research are the analysis of texts (‘hard news’ reports), this will be done on two levels – firstly, from an appraisal point of view in a bid to explore the interpersonal meanings of the texts and secondarily, the generic elements of structure (textual organisation) and rhetorical organisation ‘are investigated to reveal their structural organisation.’ In light of this, the research poses the question of whether ‘hard news’ texts in Shona, Ndebele and Zimbabwean English are structurally similar to their ‘equivalents’ in the English journalistic culture, especially so based on the framework established by Iedema (1994), White (1997, 2000) and Martin and White (2005).

Explaining the rhetorical strategies (also highlighted by Thomson and Fukui, 2008) important for exploring the ‘reporter voice’, Sano (2008) distinguishes between ‘hard news’ and editorials in terms of how they reflect opinion and ideological positioning. Sano (2008) contends that, in editorials/commentaries, ‘the writer of the editorial advocates their ideologies and viewpoints on an event. Editorials are identifiable by the manner in which persuasive or rhetorical strategies are used by writers in order to advocate their ideological positioning on the issues under discussion.’

In short, following the observations made by Thomson and Fukui (2008), Sano (2008) argues that editorials differ from ‘hard news’ articles in the manner in which in the former there is explicit authorial judgement, appreciation and affect geared towards persuasion to view the world and the events under discussion in the manner that the writer sees them. This, as Sano (2008) and Thomson and Fukui (2008) concur, is attainable through the manipulation of rhetorical/linguistic resources that achieve this goal. Exploring these rhetorical strategies, Sano (2008) argues, is achieved by observing the text’s (a) textual organisation (b) the semantics and (c) the evaluative expression contained within the editorials. The current research, adopting the approach suggested by Sano (2008) here seeks to identify and examine the rhetorical strategies and how these are represented by semantic, lexical and lexicogrammatical resources.

### **3.8. Summary**

The chapter discussed pertinent issues regarding the construal of subjective positionings that manifest themselves through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. It observed that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration manifests itself through the presence of low probabilities of inscribed authorial stances and is located within ‘strategic impersonalisations’. Important to note is the fact that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration does not present itself through explicit commentaries, subjective ones. It however manifests itself through invoked and evoked impersonalisations and attempts at ‘clandestine’ subjectivities. Often, it manifests itself through the words of ‘others’ – authoritative sources and commentators. This is achieved through ‘appraising in the words of others’ (Jullian, 2011). The chapter also discussed the difference theorisations from both journalistic and linguistic perspectives from which news texts are generically classified. Lastly, the chapter discussed the theoretical frameworks of Appraisal and Evaluation as well as the configuration of the ‘reporter voice’ as they are explicated within SFL. In doing this, the chapter sought to present and discuss the theoretical tenets of SFL within which the analysis of data in this research will be made.

## CHAPTER 4

### **Evaluating the ‘reporter voice’ and ‘controversy’ in reporting the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru and the aftermath in Zimbabwean newspapers**

#### **4.1. Introduction**

The previous chapter discussed the theoretical formulations of SFL, appraisal and evaluation, the orbital structure as well as the ‘reporter voice’ configuration, in which the analysis of data in this study is couched. This chapter forms the first of three chapters in which ‘controversial’ printed ‘hard news’ reports from Zimbabwean Shona, (isi)Ndebele and English newspapers are analysed. The analyses seek to comparatively evaluate the proliferation of authorial attitudinal subjectivities/biases in the news reports in the three languages as expressed by the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Focus of analysis will also be on comparing the rhetorical and structural arrangements of news matter in news reports. This chapter analyses ‘controversial’ news reports ‘announcing’ the ‘controversial’ death of one of Zimbabwe’s most decorated liberation war heroes, Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru and the aftermath in Zimbabwean newspapers in Shona, (isi)Ndebele and English. As set out in Chapter 1, this chapter (as is the case with the research) focuses on the analysis of ‘controversial’ news in these Zimbabwean newspapers specifically focusing on the analysis of ‘objectivity’ through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration as accounted for in Appraisal (and Evaluation) Theory. The focus in this, and the other two analysis chapters, is to explore how an analysis of appraisal resources in the news reports are a means to determining the extent to which journalists adhere to the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration and by extension to the ideal of ‘objectivity’ as expressed by the orbital structure of ‘hard news’. The chapter thus also compares and contrasts the rhetorical move structures and the textualities of the ‘hard news’ reports in newspapers in the three different Zimbabwean languages/journalistic cultures.

Mujuru allegedly died in a fire accident that occurred at his farmhouse on the outskirts of the capital, Harare. Mujuru’s death aroused a huge media frenzy as he allegedly died in ‘suspicious’ circumstances, circumstances that culminated in an inquest at the behest of his family, led by his wife, one of the two Vice Presidents of the Republic of Zimbabwe, Joice Mujuru. There were, following his death, intimations of foul play in light of the ‘controversial’ as well as ‘strategic’ position he held in both ZANU-PF and national politics

from which position he was allegedly suspected of harbouring intentions to dethrone the incumbent president. The inquest eventually culminated in calls for the exhumation of the late hero as the family and the nation at large allegedly were not satisfied with the results proffered by the state pathologists as the cause of death i.e. that Mujuru died as a result of burns sustained during this ‘fire accident’. News reports on the death are thus, abound with ‘controversy’ surrounding his death and its aftermath.

The chapter presents a linguistic discourse semantics analysis of newspaper reports on the ‘announcement’ of the death of Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru and the developments of his death emanating therefrom as reported in Zimbabwean newspapers in Shona, (isi)Ndebele and English and as realised by appraisal theoretic resources, focusing specifically on the notions of ‘reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity’. The analyses in this chapter are broken down into three sections. Section 4.5 analyses news reports of the ‘announcement’ of Mujuru’s death and the circumstances surrounding the death. Sections 4.6 and 4.7 are analyses of the news reports on the aftermath of the death, that is, the beginning of the inquest into the causes of his death and the ‘suspicions’ of foul play in his ‘controversial’ death and how it plays out in the newspapers across languages and the release of the results of the inquest, respectively.

By focusing on ‘news breaking’ newspaper reports announcing the death of Mujuru and news reports on the subsequent developments culminating from his death in Zimbabwean English language newspapers (*Herald*, *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent*), and the Shona and Ndebele newspapers (*Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa* respectively), the analyses (as well as the next two chapters) seeks to raise, in line with the set objectives, the questions: What is the notion of ‘reporter voice’ and how is it realised in news reports? How do journalistic realities arise? Do journalists simply record events or are they inevitably active participants? Is objectivity a useful myth or ideal? How do we discern the ‘reporter voice’ in news that is supposedly factual? How is such an examination of the ‘reporter voice’ relevant to the analysis of ‘objectivity’ in ‘factual’ news reports? To what extent do ‘hard news’ reports conform to the ‘reporter voice’ configuration? Lastly, how does the notion of ‘reporter voice’ assist us theoretically in understanding ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ in news? The notion of ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’ as has been discussed in the preceding chapters continues to be a subject of debate and controversy, especially within journalistic circles. Subsequently, its defining parameters have remained somehow elusive. For example Hampton (2008)

argues that ‘objectivity’ as a journalistic norm constitutes both a claim to professional distinction and an ideal of even-handedness and craftsmanship.

In other words, journalists ‘have to relate to what is’. They have to separate truth from falsehood (Bresser, 1992: Bernhard, 2008). Bowman 2006 argues that journalists’ professional orientation to the concepts of ‘objectivity’ and ‘neutrality’ ignore an independent pursuit of the public interest, and instead reflect the interests of the status quo. As Klaehn (2005) explains, the reason for this view is that mass media and other ideological institutions in society are predominantly agencies for the dissemination of ideas, values, perspectives and necessary illusions that affirm existing patterns of power and privilege. In essence, in journalistic discourse, ‘objectivity’ continues to be viewed as an ambivalent ideal that can only be fulfilled by journalists’ adherence to professional ethics and these include unbiased and objective news reporting and allowing the proliferation of diversities of ideas and opinions. The investigation of ‘objectivity’ undertaken in this and the next two chapters differs from such journalistic concerns. While in most cases they would either attempt to quantify and qualify ‘objectivity’ in relation to truth and shaping of the readership’s opinion, the current research focuses on the linguistic discourse of linguistic choice, that is, the manner in which the language selected by reporters in reporting news is lexicalised and grammaticalised evaluatively in conformity with the theoretical explications of Appraisal and Evaluation Theory.

While most of the studies in the existing corpus have sought to establish the extent/levels of truth in news reports while some have questioned if at all facticity, the ideal the myth of objectivity exists in news reports, the examination of news reports conducted in this study digresses from such kinds of outlooks on ‘objectivity’ and seek to question the construction of journalistic reality from a linguistic perspective, specifically from analysing how the lexical and lexico-grammatical choices that journalists use reveal their ideological positioning both in terms of what they are reporting of/on as well as the context of the news that they are reporting about. The paper thus also seeks to, through the theoretical spectacles of Appraisal Theory, explore how the ‘reporter voice’ exhibits itself in news reports through both inscribed and invoked attitudes that also to a large extent include ‘attribution’.

In doing this, the chapter analyses instances of authorial attitudinal evaluation – attitudinal resources that present as ‘reporter voice’, espousing subjective positions which we can attribute to the ideological leanings of the reporter. As far as ‘attribution’ goes, the research

seeks to also analyse instances where evaluations by the 'reporter voice', exhibiting their subjectivities, are appraised through the words of 'others' (sources and quotations). This is in line with observations made by Jullian (2011: 766) that, 'attributions are not evaluative outlets for sources only, but indirect means of appraisal for journalists as well, who support or reinforce the points they want to make through these voices. Quotations help them imprint their personal views on the events and ultimately serve an ideological function in the text'.

#### **4.2. Contextualising Mujuru's death: A brief biography/background**

Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru (May 1, 1949 – August 15, 2011) died in a fire inferno on his farm on August 15, 2011. Mujuru, alias Rex Nhongo (nom de guerre) is revered as one of the prime architects and outstandingly decorated heroes of the Zimbabwean nationalist liberation struggle, the second Chimurenga (the war which won the independence of Zimbabwe from the British colonial hegemony in 1980). General Mujuru is largely famous for having led the Zimbabwe African National Union (ZANU) Shona speaking ZANLA<sup>13</sup> forces together with Josiah Tongogara in the strategising of the guerilla war during the period 1964 – 1974, a decade through with Robert Gabriel Mugabe, the incumbent president of Zimbabwe, was imprisoned in Rhodesian prisons. Mujuru, also known for having actively participated in the escape of Mugabe from Rhodesia into Mozambique soon after his release from prison, is credited as having been the 'Kingmaker' to Mugabe ascendancy to the leadership of the Zimbabwe National African Union Patriotic Front (ZANU PF) and subsequently the presidency of the newly independent Zimbabwe. Mugabe was allegedly not popular with the guerrillas, most of him had never seen him<sup>14</sup>. "It is universally accepted in ZANU PF that without Solomon's active support, Mugabe would have been a nobody. Solomon and the late Josiah Tongogara led the ZANLA forces".<sup>15</sup>

---

<sup>13</sup> Zimbabwe National Liberation Army.

<sup>14</sup> "Following the assassination of the party chairman, Herbert Chitepo, in Lusaka and the detention of most of the ZANLA High Command by the Zambian government, Rex Nhongo [Mujuru] slipped out through Malawi to Tanzania, and was the top ranking commander outside of prison. He rebuilt a temporary command structure, maintained close contact with the imprisoned leaders, and put his signature to the document that emerged from the Zambian prison and the training camps in Tanzania, known as the Mgagao Declaration, that announced the support of the young freedom fighters for Robert Mugabe as leader of the armed struggle for independence. The leaders of the War Council (Dare reChimurenga) in Zambia's Mpima prison subsequently issued a "Declaration formally pledging support to Comrade Robert Mugabe's leadership of the Zimbabwe African National African Union (ZANU)", which was distributed to the guerrilla camps and party branches." - "Mujuru: His courage in the struggle for independence" - *The Herald*, Thursday 18 August, 2011

<sup>15</sup> *Sunday Tribune*, Sunday January 9, 2005.

Mujuru, after the attainment of independence in 1980, assumed command of the Zimbabwean army and led it for 10 years retiring in 1990 to focus on his growing business empire. He is alleged to have owned, at the time of his death, between 6 and 16 large commercial farms and to have been the only man who could challenge Robert Mugabe openly as evidenced by his ‘controversially’ influencing the ascendancy of his wife, Joice to the Vice Presidency despite she having claimed a 55% disability during the war veterans’ compensation period of 1997<sup>16</sup>. This was possible for Mujuru to accomplish, as it is argued that because of the role he played in Mugabe’s rise to the Presidency, ‘as a result Mugabe owes (Solomon) Mujuru an eternal favour.’<sup>17</sup> Mujuru was also ‘popular’ for his alleged ability to exercise political tolerance and indulgence across the political divide as evidenced by his engaging of the opposition political parties in dialogue alas to the displeasure of his fellow comrades in ZANU PF. He was also revered as one of the biggest businessmen in the country<sup>18</sup>.

The suspicions of foul play in his death arose from the recognition of his strategic position as the only man that could challenge Mugabe and do it publicly. It is because of this ‘ability’ and the ‘fact’ that, in Zimbabwean politics, it is believed that Mujuru was leading a faction/crusade within ZANU PF to end Mugabe’s reign by lobbying for the ascension of his wife, the vice president to the highest office in the land. Such speculations allegedly have a history from the ZANU PF annual congress of 2007 in which, as documentation suggests, Mujuru allegedly challenged the re-endorsement of the incumbent president, Robert Gabriel Mugabe, as the party’s representative in the 2008 presidential elections and sought to force his retirement. It is in the current political era, in which Zimbabwe is heading for possible elections and in which again the succession dispute in ZANU PF has taken centre stage with allegations of factional based lobbying within the party rife, that Mujuru’s death was viewed as ‘suspicious’ and ‘controversial’ and thus consequently captured media attention from both the state-owned and private-owned newspapers and other news outlets.

### **4.3. Contextualising the ‘Announcement’ of the death of Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi Mujuru in the Zimbabwean press.**

In undertaking the current analysis, two observations are important to highlight. Firstly, documented studies on the Zimbabwean media environment indicates a high level of polarity

---

<sup>16</sup> <http://nehandaradio.com/2011/07/22/new-cio-boss-98-disabled/>

<sup>17</sup> *Sunday Tribune*, Sunday January 9, 2005.

<sup>18</sup> “Mujuru was an economic pillar” – The Herald, Thursday 18 August, 2011.

along political lines, a polarity that traces its roots to the pre and post 2000 harmonised presidential and parliamentary elections in the country. During this period, the then ruling party, the Robert Mugabe led ZANU PF faced the biggest opposition ever in the history of its existence as well as the short existence of the nation, a nation which attained independence in 1980, from the Morgan Tsvangirai led Movement for Democratic Change (MDC). Such polarity of the media emanating from these events, and which arguably exists still in the present, saw the state owned publications developing ideological leanings with ZANU PF whereas the independent owned media literary became mouthpieces of opposition political parties, the MDC in particular.

It is well argued (see for example, Chiumbu, 1997: MMPZ, 2002: Hondora, 2003: Mano, 2005: Wadahl, 2005 and Mutingwende, 2010), that in Zimbabwean private - owned press, news reports are 'deeply influenced by the editorial lines' of the publications whereas in the government - owned press, by the 'government' or in the current scenario, ZANU PF. I argue that ZANU PF here, in light of the nature of the current political dispensation in Zimbabwe which is characterized by a Government of national Unity (GNU) formed after the violence marred 2008 presidential elections. Both parties, ZANU PF and MDC are now part of 'government' in a power sharing settlement and yet still, paradoxically, the 'public' press still expresses ZANU PF rhetoric, lauding the party on whatever pretext with complete and utter disregard and the private - owned press still continues on the anti-ZANU PF path. This had resulted in a very 'toxic' and 'contaminated' media landscape and it is in such a context that the analysis undertaken in this study is made. For example, in a report on the harmonised Presidential and Mayoral Elections of 2000, and its investigation of the media treatment of political issues during this period, the Media Monitoring Project of Zimbabwe (MMPZ) (2002, 11), concludes that;

...the epithetic nature of language used in the public press, especially *The Sunday Mail* was thoroughly and unacceptably biased in favour of the incumbent Government. No longer is it adequate to say their language is politically biased or that they are failing to scrutinize adequately the shortcomings of the Government. They have become more or less active accomplices in the theft of a national democratic right, the right to objective news.

In line with the same conclusion, the Media Institute of Southern Africa - Zimbabwe (MISA) added that this kind of biased reporting biased and hate reporting has become more apparent and the readership no longer believes in the press.

The language games in the press today have meant that journalists write biased stories and this has resulted in some of the stories being dismissed by the readers, the majority of which are elite and seem to have a better understanding of the situation on the ground. This ultimately results in the loss of credibility on the part of the newspapers. Political stories accordingly become superficial and haphazard and in some cases distorted.

Mazango (2005) argues that the media 'language games' in the country today have been used to restrain growing political opposition and maintain the ruling party's supremacy. Mazango contends that this has seen the public press lauding the ruling party on whatever pretext guising this as patriotism and defences of national sovereignty while demonising the opposition and the West (especially Britain and America) through the use of epithetic language aimed towards mudslinging them. MMPZ (2000, 2) thus describes the private media as,

...a voice for those who oppose the Government although it is careful not to be seen as blatantly anti-Mugabe or pro-MDC.

Secondly, Mujuru's stature in Zimbabwean politics cuts across the political divide. He is regarded as one of the 'true nationalists' even from opposition parties' points of view. It is also documented that he sought to force Mugabe to retire at the ZANU PF congress of 2007. It is thus no surprise that death, in a fire 'accident', of the iconic Retired General Solomon Tapfumaneyi 'Rex Nhongo' Mujuru, regarded as the nationalist cadre who 'embodied the liberation struggle itself'<sup>19</sup> was 'announced' as news headlines in almost all of the Zimbabwean newspapers across languages.

His death, in the fire, stimulated 'controversial' debates across the Zimbabwean media landscape with regards to the manner in which he died, especially so considering his military stature, with some sections of the Zimbabwean populace questioning how a man who had survived the liberation war could not escape from his own house on fire, given the proximity of several accessible escape routes. This did not come as a surprise given the colossal figure that he cast on the Zimbabwean political landscape, regarded as the brains and omni-strategist behind the second Chimurenga.

Regarded also as the 'Kingmaker' for his alleged role in the rise to presidency of the incumbent president of Zimbabwe Robert Gabriel Mugabe and the rise to the Vice Presidency

---

<sup>19</sup> "Cde Rex Nhongo embodied the liberation struggle itself" – *The Herald*, Friday, 19 August 2011.

of his wife, Joice ‘Teurai Ropa’ Mujuru, Mujuru’s place as a historic figure and founding nationalist ‘is without doubt’. The death of Mujuru through a fire breakout at his farm also comes with lots of ‘controversy’ as news reports from some quarters, especially the private owned media ‘screamed’ ‘foul play’ in what they termed, ‘the mysterious death of Mujuru’<sup>20</sup>.

#### 4.4. Analytical key for analysing news reports in the current study

As expressed in section 4.1, the analyses of news reports in this study are done within the theoretical explications of appraisal theory and the orbital structure of hard news. The Appraisal analyses in this and subsequent chapters adopt the analytical key proposed by Van and Thomson (2008: 55) which is reproduced below:

##### **KEY**

**bold underlining** = inscribed (explicit) negative attitude

**bold** = implicit (implied) negative attitude

*italics underlined* = inscribed positive attitude

*italics* = invoked positive attitude

**boxed material** = heterogloss (material attributed to an external source)

The subtype of the attitude is indicated in square brackets immediately following the relevant span of text:

[j] = judgement (positive/negative assessment of human behaviour in terms of social norms)

[ap] = appreciation (positive/negative assessment of objects, artefacts, events and states of affairs in terms of systems of aesthetics and other systems of social valuation)

[af] = affect (positive/negative emotional response); 1<sup>st</sup> af = first person or authorial affect; 3<sup>rd</sup> af = observed affect, i.e. the reporter describing the emotional responses of third parties.

##### **Kinds of attribution**

<ack> = ‘acknowledgement’: material is attributed to some external source by means of quotation and related formulations. Nothing in the lexicogrammar of the words by which the quotation is framed indicates where the writer stands with respect to propositions being presented – i.e. there is no overt indication of the writer favouring or disfavouring the attributed material. It is however possible that the writer’s position vis-à-vis the attributed material will be indicated elsewhere in the text. Attribution is typically via a formulation involving reporting verbs – for example, “X stated that...”, “X argues that...”, “X believes that...” or through adjuncts such as “according to X...”

<end> = ‘endorsement’: material is attributed to an external source – as is the case with acknowledgement – but the framing is such as to indicate that the writer holds the material as true or valid – for example by means of ‘factive’ reporting such as ‘to prove’, ‘to show’ or ‘to demonstrate’;

<dist> = ‘distancing’: material is attributed to an external source – as in the case of acknowledgement – but the framing is such as to indicate that the writer holds the material to be still open to question, as not yet proved. Distancing in English is typically achieved by the use of the reporting verb ‘to claim’ and by the use of so called ‘scare quotes’.

\*\*\* There is a notion of ‘proclamation’ <proc> which Van and Thomson (2008) describe as those instances when the reporter makes overt interventions into the text which “present themselves as challenging or dismissing some alternative viewpoints.”

<sup>20</sup> “Mujuru to be exhumed?” – *Newsday*, Thursday, 20 October, 2011

The orbital structure analysis on the other hand, focuses on the analysis of ‘satellites’ in ‘hard news’ reports. This is in line with White’s (1998) observations that materials in ‘hard news’ reports function as ‘satellites’ that are linked in one way or another to the propositions of the news report as expressed in the nucleus (headline and lead). The satellites perform, as discussed in section 2.4.1.3, the functions of: *Elaboration* or *Reiteration*, *Cause and Effect*, *Consequences*, *Contextualisation* and *Appraisal/Attitudinal assessment*. There shall, in the analysis, be a column that marks and explains the functions of sections of the news reports as ‘satellites’. Because of the nature of the structure of news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages, which characteristically constitutive of large sections of narratives that do not perform the functions of satellites as discussed above, this study has established another form of satellite to express the functions of such sections of narrative. As such there shall be, in the orbital structure analysis, another form of satellite which has been termed ‘*Intertextualisation*’. This satellite denotes instances where extratextual narratives are used to not necessarily specify the propositions of the nucleus (headline and lead) but to contextualise propositions or claims of other satellites within the news reports within a broader context.

#### 4.5. Analysing the news reports ‘announcing’ Mujuru’s death

This section presents an analysis of reproduced ‘news-breaking’ stories of the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru from the five newspapers under study. The section (as with all the other analysis sections) progresses in such a manner that it presents the individual texts from the newspapers and undertakes the evaluation of the proliferation of attitudinal meanings within the texts and using the key established above and the orbital structure. The analyses are then comparatively discussed and summated in a general discussion following the individual stories’ analyses. It is important to point out at this point that line numbers in the analyses reference the texts of the original news reports, even where translations are used.

##### 4.5.1. *The Herald* (16 August, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Solomon Mujuru dies <i>Herald Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announcement that Mujuru has died.)
005	Former Zimbabwe National Army Commander Retired General Solomon Mujuru has died. He was 66.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the propositions of

		headline.)
	Cde Mujuru who was a member of the ZanuPF Politburo, died in a <b>suspected</b> [ap/3 <sup>rd</sup> af] fire outbreak at his farm in Beatrice early Tuesday.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Restates the propositions of headline. Provides evaluation of circumstances of death)
010	He was alone at the farm with the maid who stays in separate quarters away from the main farm house when the incident happened.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death)
	The house has 18 rooms and was <b>severely damaged</b> [ap]. Nothing was recovered save for sofas.	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration/Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation and further specifications of the circumstances surrounding death)
015	The maid, who received a message about the fire, reported the case to the police around 3 am.	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death)
	Police rushed to the farm and on arrival found the house already <b>engulfed</b> [ap] by the inferno. <b>His body was burnt beyond recognition</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death)
020	Police and pathologists removed his remains from the house at around 11 am.	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death)
	Reports say <ack> <b>the Fire Brigade arrived at the farm without water and had to fetch it in surrounding areas.</b>	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death)
025	A <b>sombre atmosphere</b> [ap/3 <sup>rd</sup> af] <b>engulfed</b> [ap] the farm.	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death)
	Senior Government officials including his wife Vice President Joice Mujuru and other family members were present at the farm.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
030	Also present were Co-Home Affairs Minister Kembo Mohadi, State Security Minister Sydney Sekeramayi, Media, Information and Publicity Minister Webster Shamu, Youth Development, Indigenisation and Empowerment Minister Saviour Kasukuwere, Zimbabwe Defence Forces Commander General Constantine Chiwenga, Air	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
035		

040	Force Commander Air Marshal Perrance Shiri, Director General of the Central Intelligence Organisation Retired Major General Happyton Bonyongwe, ZanuPF national spokesperson Cde Rugare Gumbo, ZanuPF Mashonaland East provincial chairman Cde Ray Kaukonde among others.	
045	Said Cde Sekeremayi:<ack> "It is <b>hard to believe</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] he is no more. We came here early in the morning and I initially thought he was badly burnt, only to see <b>charred remains</b> [ap] on arrival. One of Zimbabwe's <i>greatest sons</i> [j] is no more."	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of emotional impact/reaction to the death as well as evaluation of state of burns on body leading to the death of Mujuru)
050	Cde Kaukonde described Cde Mujuru's death as <ack> a <b>great loss</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] to Mashonaland East province.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death)
055	"It's a <b>tragedy</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/ap] for us in the province. We have lost our man and a <i>pillar</i> [j] in the province. He tried to guide us a lot," <ack> said Cde Kaukonde.	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
	Cde Shamu said <ack> Cde Mujuru was a <i>military strategist</i> [j] and <i>commander par excellence</i> [j].	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru)
060	<ack> "Cde Rex Nhongo's name was synonymous with the liberation struggle. This is a <b>tragedy</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/ap] which is <b>difficult to fathom</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. His name is synonymous with the history of the whole liberation struggle. We have lost a <i>military commander</i> [j] and a <i>strategist par excellence</i> [j].	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru and evaluations of emotional impact/reaction to the death)
065	He was a very <i>brave fighter</i> [j] and <i>illustrious</i> [j] <i>son of the soil</i> . [j]"	
070	Cde Gumbo said:<ack> " <b>We have lost</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] a <i>resolute</i> [j], <i>gallant</i> [j] and <i>committed cadre</i> [j] who <i>contributed innocuously</i> [j] to the liberation struggle and to the economy of Zimbabwe. He was a farmer and <i>businessman</i> [j].	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluations of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru and of Mujuru and Mujuru's legacy)
	"This <b>loss</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/3 <sup>rd</sup> af/ap] is not only to the	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal</b>

	Mujuru family but also to the party and nation as a whole. We will miss his contribution in the Politburo."	(Attributed inscribed evaluations of emotional impact/reaction to the death)
--	---	--

#### 4.5.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

*The Herald* news report seeks to ‘announce’ that Retired General Solomon Mujuru has died. As an ‘announcement’ of death, the news report is characterized by a low probability of the authorial evaluative key. It makes for a ‘decent’ ‘announcement’ and is not inundated with authorial attitudinal judgements, evaluations and subjectivities. There are no observed instances of authorial evaluative/attitudinal key, as evaluative expressions occurring in the news report are framed in attribution. This gives evidence of authorial attempts at the pursuit of the ideals of ‘objectivity’ – presenting the necessary factual information with little or no inscriptions that suggest journalistic/authorial subjectivities. Irrespective of the balance issues that always protrude in the newspaper due to the newspapers’ ownership demands for subjectivity, it is a story that largely utilizes the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Attitudinal evaluations in the story are largely found in the attributed material, attributed in this regard to external sources, which are in all instances, quoted and named. The news report gives evidence of attempts by the reporter to ‘appraise through the words of others’. As such, compelling voices are called upon to make evaluative expressions, largely those of AFFECT and JUDGEMENT.

In this news report, little journalistic inscriptions are made use of, and little if any of these, point to opinionated thoughts on the part of the reporter. Emotional reaction to the death, AFFECT resources are framed in attribution. AFFECT resources are attributed to a variety of authoritative and compelling external sources to express evaluations of the emotional reactions to the death of Mujuru. An exemplification of such attributed affectual evaluations is as follows (044 – 065):

Said Cde Sekeremayi:<ack>	"It is <b>hard to believe</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] he is no more. We came here early in the morning and I initially thought he was badly burnt, only to see <b>charred remains</b> [ap] on arrival. One of Zimbabwe's <i>greatest sons</i> [j] is no more."
Cde Kaukonde described Cde Mujuru's death as <ack>	a <b>great loss</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/ap] to Mashonaland East province.

"It's a **tragedy** [1<sup>st</sup> af/ap] for us in the province. We have lost our man and a pillar [j] in the province. He tried to guide us a lot," said Cde Kaukonde <ack>.

Cde Shamu said <ack> Cde Mujuru was a military strategist [j] and commander par excellence [j].

"Cde Rex Nhongo's name was synonymous with the liberation struggle. This is a **tragedy** [1<sup>st</sup> af/ap] which is **difficult to fathom** [1<sup>st</sup> af]. His name is synonymous with the history of the whole liberation struggle. We have lost a military commander [j] and a strategist par excellence [j]. He was a very brave fighter [j] and illustrious [j] son of the soil. [j]"

Through such kinds of attribution, the news report gives evidence of attempts to distance the authorial voice from making attitudinal and evaluative assessments of both AFFECT and JUDGEMENT. JUDGEMENT evaluations, which are also occurring as attributed material, are used to express evaluations of the inimitable position that Mujuru holds in the country's political narrative. Evaluations of Mujuru as 'one of Zimbabwe's greatest sons' (047 – 048), 'military strategist and commander par excellence' (056 – 057), 'strategist par excellence' (063), 'a very brave fighter' (064), 'an illustrious son of the soil' (064 – 065) and 'a resolute, gallant and committed cadre' (066 – 067) serve as evidence of such attributed positive JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru. There are no observed instances in which the reporter makes use of authorial inscribed AFFECT resources as we can observe that these resources are all occurring as either first person affect [1<sup>st</sup> af] or observed affect [3<sup>rd</sup> af]. The only instances of observed authorial attitude are the authorial evaluation of the emotional impact of the death of Mujuru through authorial inscribed AFFECT and APPRECIATION (025 – 026),

A **sombre atmosphere** [3<sup>rd</sup> af/ap] **engulfed** [ap] the farm.

as well as the evaluations made of the circumstances surrounding the death, the cause of death as 'suspected fire outbreak' (007), the state of damage on the house from the fire as 'severely damaged' (013) and of the body of Mujuru as '[h]is body was burnt beyond recognition' (018 – 019). The news report, in terms of the orbital structure analysis, can be observed to use most of its satellites as attributed expressions of both JUDGEMENT and AFFECT essentially satisfies the 'reporter voice' configuration in that the proliferation of evaluative reporter subjectivities are kept at a low.

4.5.2. *Newsday* (16 August, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru <b>burnt</b> [j] to death <i>John Nyashanu, News Editor</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline</i> : Proposition that Mujuru dies amid suspicions of agency)
005	Retired army General Solomon Mujuru died a <b>gruesome</b> [ap] death in a house fire early this morning.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates and provides authorial inscribed evaluation of the propositions of the headline and the death)
010	NewsDay witnessed police removing his <b>charred remains</b> [ap] from the dining room of the <b>gutted</b> [ap] 18-roomed house at Alamein Farm in Beatrice, south of Harare, in a <b>heart-rending</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] moment.	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluations of the extent of burning leading to death, and emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
	His body was found close to the door, meaning that he could have been fighting to get out. Police put what remained of his body into a plastic bag.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the circumstances surrounding the death)
015	The late General's wife Vice President Joice Mujuru, <ack> could only say: <b>Zvakaoma</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] mwanangu zvaitika pano. Zviri mumba umu <b>hazvitarisiki</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. Mwari ega ndivo vanoziva (What has happened here is <b>difficult to fathom</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. What is in there is <b>unbelievable</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. Only God Knows). <sup>7</sup>	<b>Satellite 3: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
020	While police spokesman Wayne Bvudzijena was unavailable for comment, his subordinate Oliver Mandipaka <b>declined</b> [j] to comment.	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further details of circumstances surrounding the death)
025	But a source at the scene <ack> said the fire was <b>so intense</b> [ap] that it could only have been caused by either fuel or an electrical fault. The source added <ack> <b>serious foul play</b> [j] was <i>suspected</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluations of cause of death – the fire, and of the circumstances surrounding the death)
030	A maid at the farm, Rosemary Shoti, said <ack> Mujuru arrived at the farm around 8pm last night and asked for kitchen keys which she gave him.	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (Prior situation and context leading to the death)

	<ack> [“We were awakened at around 3am by the sound of exploding asbestos sheets and I came out to investigate only to find the house engulfed in fire.”]	<b>Satellite 7: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of prior situation and context leading to the death)
035	[“We tried to put it out using buckets of water from a bowser together with his security personnel, but to no avail. After failing to put out the fire we then phoned Beatrice Police Station and the Fire Brigade, but when they arrived, it was too late.”] <ack> Shoti said.	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration/ Contextualisation</b> (Further specifications of prior situation and/or context in which the death occurred)
040  045	State Security minister Sydney Sekeramayi, who was at the scene said: <ack> [“It’s <b>hard to believe</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] but he is no more. It is a <b>hard situation</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. We came here early in the morning initially thinking that he was badly burnt only to find his charred body.”]	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of emotional impact/reaction to the death)
	[“One of Zimbabwe’s greatest sons [j] is no more.”]	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
050	Information minister Webster Shamu said <ack> [Zimbabwe <b>had lost</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] one of its <i>illustrious sons</i> [j], <i>great fighter</i> , <i>military commander</i> [j] and <i>strategist par excellence</i> [j].]	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death and JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
	[“To us Comrade Rex Nhongo’s name was synonymous with all the history of the liberation struggle.”]	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Attributed tokenised JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
055	Zanu PF spokesperson Rugare Gumbo said: <ack> [“It’s a <b>tragedy</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/ap] which has befallen us.”]	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death)
	Mujuru was among Zimbabwe’s <i>most powerful</i> [j], <i>wealthiest</i> [j] and <i>feared</i> [j] persons – in his own right and especially as a couple, with wife Vice-President Mujuru.	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
060	Mujuru was a former army chief, often seen as Zimbabwe’s <i>“king-maker”</i> [j] in the Zanu PF	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of

	<b>power matrix</b> [ap].	Mujuru)
065	Mujuru joined the Zimbabwe African People's Revolutionary Army (Zipra) in the 1960s, before moving to the Zimbabwe National Liberation Army (Zanla) in 1971.	<b>Satellite 15: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
070	He became acting <i>commander-in-chief</i> [j] of Zanla in 1975 and joint leader of Zimbabwe People's Army (Zipa) – a united force of Zipra and Zanla in 1976.	<b>Satellite 16: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
	In 1977, he was elected Deputy Secretary of Defence for (Zanu) and eventually became Zimbabwe National Army commander in 1981.	<b>Satellite 17: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
075	He was promoted to full general 1992, before leaving government service to venture into full-time politics.	<b>Satellite 18: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
	His wife, Joice, is the first woman to hold such a <i>high-ranking</i> [ap] role in Zimbabwe of Vice President.	<b>Satellite 19: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
080	If Mujuru wanted to combine power with relative anonymity, he may have opted to back his wife for the top job – a scenario, which many people <ack> <u>believe</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] he was really <b>pulling the strings</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru and attributed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
085	Under his nom de guerre, Rex Nhongo, Mujuru was the Zanla acting commander-in-chief during the 1970s war of independence.	<b>Satellite 21: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)
	He is also said <ack> <u>to have played</u> [j] a key role <u>in President Robert Mugabe's rise to the top of Zanu PF.</u>	<b>Satellite 22: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Attributed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru and further extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)

#### 4.5.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The *Newsday* news report represents a theoretical deviation from the pursuit of the 'objectivity' ideal as embedded in the 'reporter voice' configuration because it exhibits some instances of inscribed authorial attitudinal subjectivities. The headline of the story is in itself

‘problematic’ in this regard. The use of the verb ‘**burnt**’ (001) in the headline is oxymoronic in the sense that it is always suggestive of ‘agency’ a ‘claim’ that later manifests itself in attributed evaluations of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru which proffer suggestions of suspicions of ‘**serious foul play**’ (027). Such a sentiment of foul play suggested by the ‘**burnt**’ (001) token in the headline is reinforced through the attributed words of a quoted source (027), a process that Jullian (2011) argues is a strategy through which journalists appraise and evaluate indirectly through quoting voices which support the standpoint or reading position they want to bring out. In this story the reporter uses the voice of an unnamed source to reinforce the negative inscription that suggests the possibility of agency in the death of Mujuru as suggested in the headline. This attributed reinforcement (024 – 027) is expressed in the following extract:

But a source at the scene <ack> said <u>the fire was <b>so intense</b> [ap] that it could</u>
<u>only have been caused by either fuel or an electrical fault. The source added</u>
<u>&lt;ack&gt; <b>serious foul play</b> [j] was <i>suspected</i> [3<sup>rd</sup> af].</u>

From the onset the reporter sets out, it seems, to convince the readers of his/her standpoint regards the death i.e. that there is foul play in the death. I consider the following extract (003 – 010):

Retired army General Solomon Mujuru died a <b>gruesome</b> [ap] death in a house fire early this morning.
<i>NewsDay</i> witnessed police removing his <b>charred remains</b> [ap] from the dining room of the <b>gutted</b> [ap] 18-roomed house at Alamein Farm in Beatrice, south of Harare, in a <b>heart-rending</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] moment.

Suggestions of a ‘**gruesome**’ (004) and ‘**heart rending**’ (009) death, expressed through authorial inscribed AFFECT/APPRECIATION evaluations evince authorial attitudinal biases with regards to the manner in which people and events are evaluated. These inscriptions are loaded with inscribed attitudinal meanings and exhibit the reporter’s subjectivities through the manner in which they evaluate people and events. The bulk of affectual evaluations are expressed through attributed materials. Compelling voices, especially those of high ranking senior government officials are used to express the evaluations of the emotional impact of the death of Mujuru, especially so considering the peerless position he held in the historical and political narratives of the country. Attributed evaluations of the emotional reactions to the death such as ‘**difficult to fathom**’ (018) ‘**unbelievable**’ (019) and ‘**hard to believe**’ (041)

and ‘**hard situation**’ (042) evince such expressions of attributed emotional reactions to the death and which further serve as reinforcements of the position already assumed by the authorial voice with regards to the same.

The only other instances of authorial inscriptions occurs as JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru with regards to the role he has played in the history of the country as well as of his personal attributes. Through the authorial voice, Mujuru is evaluated as ‘**most powerful, wealthiest and feared**’ individual as well as the ‘**kingmaker**’ (061) in ZANU PF politics. Contextualised within ZANU PF politics, such evaluations express an authorial conviction that Mujuru was a critical cog in the political landscape of Zimbabwean, and specifically ZANU PF politics. Such authorial sentiments are reinforced in the news reports through inscribed attributed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru as ‘**one of Zimbabwe’s greatest sons**’ (046), ‘[an] **illustrious son**’ (048), ‘**great fighter, military commander and strategist par excellence**’ (048 – 050). The context from which these evaluations (both authorial and attributed) are framed is in the role that Mujuru played in Zimbabwe’s liberation struggle, a context discussed in detail in sections 4.2 and 4.3. This context is also summed up in the attributed evaluations of Mujuru in (051 – 053):

*“To us Comrade Rex Nhongo’s name was synonymous with all the history of the liberation struggle.”*

This is also espoused further through the use of ‘intertextualisation’ represented by satellites 16 – 22 in the newsreport which function as extratextual contextualisations of the historical narrative of Mujuru’s achievement from which evaluations made of him are framed. Despite having observed that the larger components of evaluative attitudinal expressions are framed in attribution, questions of attempts at ‘objectivity’ regards this story still abound. This is so because most of the evaluations expressed through attributed material seem to serve as reinforcement of already established authorial evaluative positions.

#### 4.5.3. *Zimbabwe Independent*, (18 August, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru death set to up <b>shake</b> [j] political scene <i>By Dumisani Muleya</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised                      Headline: Proposition      that      Mujuru’s

		death will have negative ramifications on political environment in Zimbabwe)
005	THE <b>mysterious</b> [ap] death of Zimbabwe’s <i>most decorated</i> [j] retired army general and <i>political kingmaker</i> [j] Solomon Mujuru in a blaze which <b>burnt</b> [ap] him to ashes in the early hours of Tuesday would almost certainly have <b>far-reaching consequences</b> [j] on Zimbabwe’s political landscape.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal)</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the death, the circumstances surrounding the death as well as reiteration and evaluation of the propositions of headline)
010 015	Given that Mujuru was a <i>towering figure</i> [j] in Zimbabwe’s political scene before and after Independence from Britain in 1980, his <b>shock death</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af], which left <b>emotional scars</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] and <b>anger</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] in its trail, would <b>inevitably fuel</b> [ap] the already <b>vicious</b> [ap] <b>power struggle</b> [ap] within the <b>faction-ridden</b> [ap] Zanu PF which President Robert Mugabe (pictured), <b>gradually</b> [ap] <b>losing control</b> [j] due to <b>old age and ill-health</b> [j], is <b>tenuously struggling</b> [j] to keep together.	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru, the death, emotional impact/reaction to the death, Robert Mugabe and ZANU PF and the political environment in which Mujuru operated)
020	Mugabe’s <b>cutthroat succession battle</b> [ap/j] is <b>increasingly becoming</b> [ap] a <b>clear</b> [ap] and <b>present danger</b> [ap] to Zanu PF and Zimbabwe’s future.	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the political environment in which Mujuru operated and which is ‘set to be shaken’)
025	This is now widely acknowledged within the party, hence <b>agitated</b> [j] and <b>panicky attempts</b> [j] to discuss the issue, particularly ahead of the next critical elections.	<b>Satellite 3: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the political environment in which Mujuru operated and which is ‘set to be shaken’)
030 035	Zanu PF officials <ack> <b>practically impossible</b> [ap/j] for Mugabe to become a candidate if elections are held when they are constitutionally due in 2013. This is why they are <b>desperately pushing</b> [j] for elections before that to ensure Mugabe enters the race when he is still fit to sustain a <b>rigorous</b> [ap] campaign and <b>hectic</b> [ap] schedule.	<b>Satellite 4: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the political environment in which Mujuru operated which is ‘set to be shaken’)

040	Mugabe is <b>beleaguered</b> [j] with <b>old age and ill-health</b> [j/ap]. Officially <ack> <u>he is suffering from</u> <dist> <b>“cataracts”</b> [j/ap] — a clouding of the eye lens which results in poor sight — but some say <ack> <u>he has prostate cancer and other expected</u> <b>old age ailments</b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual authorial and attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Robert Mugabe and of the political environment ‘set to be shaken’)
045	Talk of Mugabe’s <b>health failures</b> [j], compounded by <b>old age</b> [j], has unleashed a <b>new wave of intrigue</b> [j], <b>plotting and manoeuvring</b> [j] in his <b>dynamic</b> [ap] succession issue which has left many <b>ambitious</b> [j] <b>aspirants</b> [ap] licking their wounds, as <b>damaged goods</b> [j] or <b>buried</b> [j] under the <b>wreckage</b> [ap] of <b>ruined</b> [ap] careers.	<b>Satellite 6: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Robert Mugabe and of the political environment ‘set to be shaken’)
050  055	Mujuru, an <i>influential figure</i> [j] in Zimbabwe’s liberation struggle and recent politics who had become <i>very wealthy</i> [j] owning a <i>vast business empire</i> [ap], <i>demonstrated</i> [j] <i>his political muscle</i> [j] in 2004 when he <i>engineered</i> [j] the rise of his wife Joice to the position of vice-president of Zanu PF and the state.	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru)
060	Although his <b>arch-rival</b> [j] Emmerson Mnangagwa was racing ahead before the 2004 Zanu PF congress, Mujuru <i>decisively intervened</i> [j] and turned the tables against a man who had managed to mobilise eight out of 10 provinces to vote for him.	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Specification of prior political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
065	Prior to that Mujuru, working with a consortium of groups and individuals opposed to Mnangagwa, had <i>helped</i> [j] Vice-President John Nkomo to become Zanu PF chairman in 1999. Mujuru also assisted Nkomo to become vice-president in 2009, blocking politburo member Oppah Muchinguri who was running for the same position on the Mnangagwa ticket.	<b>Satellite 9: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of prior political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
070	So since the run of the century, from 1999 onwards, Mujuru become more <i>powerful</i> [j] in Zanu PF as he <i>exerted his influence</i> [j] to largely determine the outcome of congresses around high-ranking posts besides that of Mugabe.	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru)

075	Mujuru <i>tried and failed</i> [j] to <i>challenge</i> [j] Mugabe several times in recent years although his faction succeeded in 2006 during the Goromonzi conference to <b>thwart</b> [j] Mugabe's plan to extend his term of office by two years from 2008 to 2010 without going to elections.	<b>Satellite 9:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Further specification and exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
080	In the run-up to the 2008 elections, Mujuru, working closely with some of his allies in the politburo then, mainly Dumiso Dabengwa and Simba Makoni, <i>fought hard</i> [j] to prevent Mugabe from becoming a candidate at the polls.	<b>Satellite 10:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Further specification and exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
085	Records of politburo meetings mainly between 2005 and 2008 <ack> <u>show Mujuru and Dabengwa as being some of the <i>most vocal officials</i> [j] in the politburo.</u>	<b>Satellite 11:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Further specification and exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
090  095	They <b>wanted</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] Mugabe to step down, arguing <ack> <u>he was <b>old and tired</b> [j] and would lead the party to defeat at the polls</u> — something which actually happened although he succeeded to <i>hang onto power</i> [j] through a <b>campaign of violence</b> [ap] and <b>brutality</b> [j]. Mnangagwa and his faction stood by Mugabe.	<b>Satellite 12:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Further specification and exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
	Mujuru helped to create a <b>groundswell</b> [ap] of opinion within Zanu PF against and even forced for the convening of an extraordinary congress in December 2008 in a bid to oust Mugabe.	<b>Satellite 13:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Further specification and exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
100  105	Dabengwa has confirmed that <ack> <u>Mujuru and himself tried in vain to see Mugabe to convince him to step down but were ignored.</u> Although Mujuru and Dabengwa <i>succeeded</i> [j/ap] in securing an extraordinary congress to try to remove Mugabe, they <b>failed</b> [j] in their main objective as the Zanu PF leader for 34 years now managed to <b>cling</b> [j] onto his position by his fingernails.	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Further specification, evaluation, elaboration, exemplification of prior background/political 'wars' which Mujuru's death is set to further 'shake up')
	The congress was, however, <b>marred</b> [ap] by <b>public</b>	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal/</b>

	<u>wrangling</u> [j].	<b>Elaboration</b> (Further exemplification of prior background/political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
110  115	The late vice-president Joseph Msika and Nkomo almost walked out after a dispute <u>erupted</u> [ap] over the role of the then suspended war veterans leader Jabulani Sibanda. In a fit of rage triggered by a decision to acknowledge and allow Sibanda to address congress, Msika stood up and said “John let’s go” before Mugabe sprung onto action to stop them from storming out.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification, and exemplification of prior background/political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
120	His voice <u>thundering</u> [j] across the Harare International Conference Centre, Mugabe <u>angrily ordered</u> [j] everyone to sit down, anxiously asking: “What will the media say tomorrow about this?”	<b>Satellite 17: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification, and exemplification of prior background/political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
125	Although they <u>eventually failed</u> [j] to topple Mugabe, Mujuru and Dabengwa had the last laugh when their leader lost the first round of the elections in March 2008 to Prime Minister and MDC-T leader Morgan Tsvangirai before resorting to violence and intimidation to retain power.	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification, and exemplification of prior background/political ‘wars’ which Mujuru’s death is set to further ‘shake up’)
130  135	Mujuru was <u>influential</u> [j] in the formation of the inclusive government and the current processes which are expected to lead to <u>free and fair elections</u> [ap]. His power cut across politics and the corporate world in this country. This explains why on Tuesday senior Zanu PF ministers and top government officials <u>thronged</u> [ap] his farm and later Chisipite to pay their last respects. There were also <u>dramatic scenes as ministers wept</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af], creating a spectacle probably a precursor of <u>attention-grabbing</u> [ap] events almost certain to come in months ahead.	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru and authorial inscribed AFFECT evaluations of emotional reactions to the death of Mujuru)
140	In terms of <u>impact</u> [ap/3 <sup>rd</sup> af] and <u>political ramifications</u> [ap], Mujuru’s death is being widely compared to the assassination of Herbert Chitepo	<b>Satellite 20: Cause and Effect/ Appraisal</b> (Specification of the ramifications of the death of Mujuru.)

	and killing of Josiah Tongogara.	
145	Mujuru helped Mugabe to <i>consolidate</i> [j] himself as Zanu PF leader when he arrived in Mozambique in 1975 after the death of Chitepo. He also helped Mugabe to survive internal <b>upheavals</b> [ap], including <b>political coups</b> [ap], which threatened to <b>sweep</b> [ap] the <i>veteran</i> [j] <i>nationalist</i> [j] from power. He was also <i>central</i> [j] to the integration of the three rival armies in 1980 and managing the <b>explosive</b> [ap] process until his retirement in 1992.	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru/Extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
150		
155	Political analyst Dr Ibbo Mandaza said <ack> Mujuru’s death would have a <b>serious impact</b> [ap] on Zimbabwean politics.	<b>Satellite 22: Cause and Effect/Appraisal</b> (Specification and attributed inscribed evaluation of possible consequences of the death of Mujuru)
160	“The departure from the political scene of Mujuru, who died last night (Tuesday) in as yet <b>unexplained</b> [ap] but most <b>tragic</b> [ap] circumstances, leaves a <b>vast political void</b> [ap], with <b>immense ramifications</b> [ap] still to be <b>fathomed</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] and <i>understood</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] in the months ahead,” he said <ack>. “For, he was one of the <i>major pillars</i> [j] in Zimbabwe’s post-independence politics, not least in the foundation and life of the state itself, to this day.”	<b>Satellite 23: Cause and Effect/Appraisal</b> (Further specification and attributed inscribed evaluation of the possible consequences of the death of Mujuru as suggested by headline)
165		
	Mandaza <ack> said Mujuru’s death could <b>shake</b> [j] the political scene although his wife Joice would remain <i>the favourite</i> [j] to succeed Mugabe.	<b>Satellite 24: Cause and Effect/Appraisal</b> (Further specification and attributed inscribed evaluation of possible consequences of the death of Mujuru)
170	“Given the ongoing <b>proverbial</b> [ap] succession debate in Zimbabwe, there will, of course, be much speculation about the balance of forces after his death. Mujuru was a <i>critical factor</i> [j] in ensuring things in Zanu PF don’t fall apart. In the final analysis, it will be <i>necessary</i> [ap] to ensure a constitutional political succession — and transition	<b>Satellite 25: Cause and Effect (Justification)/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification and evaluation of possible consequences of death of Mujuru and reasons for making proposition in headline and lead)
175		

	— in Zimbabwe,” <ack> he said.	
180	<p>“Joice Mujuru <b>has lost</b> [3<sup>rd</sup> af] a husband and <i>critical political mentor</i> [j]. But he leaves her a Vice-President of both Zanu PF and the state, an <i>unassailable</i> [ap] position as long as Zimbabwe stays on the constitutional path, multi-partyism and democratisation process in the months ahead.”</p>	<p><b>Satellite 26: Appraisal</b>                  (Specification and attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)</p>

### 4.5.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The major proposition of the news report, as set out in the headline and lead through the authorial voice, is that the death of Mujuru would have serious political ramifications on Zimbabwe’s political landscape. The repercussions of the death, the news report again through inscribed authorial evaluations contends, are due to the inimitable position that Mujuru held in the politics of ZANU PF and Zimbabwe at large. The tone of the authorial voice is set out in the appraised headline which explicitly evaluates attitudinally that the death is ‘**set to up shake [the] political scene**’ (001). This authorial stance is reinforced through other instances of observed authorial evaluations of the same propositions that the death ‘**would certainly have far reaching consequences on Zimbabwe’s political landscape**’ (007 – 009). The authorial position is further reinforced through attributed evaluations of the same propositions such as attributed evaluations of the death as ‘**would have a serious impact on Zimbabwean politics**’ (154 – 155) and ‘**leaves a vast political void with immense ramifications still to be fathomed**’ (159 – 161). In keeping with Jullian’s (2011) notion of ‘appraising through the words of other’ and by observing that the attributed evaluative material expresses similar ideological positioning with that of the authorial voice, we can argue that this is a strategic manoeuvring used by the authorial voice by using compelling voices to fully establish its ideological position and assume a stance, which is then used to spell out a reading position for the reader.

On the grounds of this view, I seek to argue then, that the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report by far largely fails to satisfy the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Being a private-owned publication and in light of the media polarity based on political ideological inclinations discussed in sections 3.6 and 4.2 as prevalent in Zimbabwe, the news report gives little evidence of attempts at reporter ‘objectivity’ and/or ‘neutrality’. From its opening, instead of evaluating the political ramification of the death of Mujuru as expressed in the headline and

lead, the news report assumes an anti-ZANU PF stance. The news report gives evidence of how, through satellite of intertextualisation (expression of extratextual material) ZANU PF and its membership are vilified and how the events that happened in the party which to some length have no direct bearing on the concerns at hand.

The report exhibits a discernible explicit attempt to use attributed inscriptions as an evaluative strategy. The news report makes obvious that positive inscriptions are only made use with regards to the attributes of the fallen hero, Solomon Mujuru and the abundant negative inscriptions, which are made heavy use of in the news report are ‘reserved’ for ZANU PF and especially so its leader and current president of the country, Robert Mugabe. Despite the story being meant to ‘announce’ that Mujuru has died it steers into a negative attack on the polity of Mugabe as well as his person. The following extract (042 – 048) is evidence of such evaluative extratextualisation:

Talk of Mugabe’s **health failures** [j], compounded by **old age** [j], has unleashed a **new wave of intrigue** [j], **plotting and manoeuvring** [j] in his *dynamic* [ap] succession issue which has left many **ambitious** [j] **aspirants** [ap] licking their wounds, as **damaged goods** [j] or **buried** [j] under the **wreckage** [ap] of **ruined** [ap] careers.

The authorial voice in the news report extratextually espouses negative authorial attitudinal evaluations of the incumbent president and attempts to demonise him in the eyes of the readership. Such authorial evaluative positions are also evinced by the manner in which the death of Mujuru is evaluated in the story, evaluations with negative inscriptions suggestive of foul play in the death. The following extract (003 – 019) provides evidence of such:

THE **mysterious** [ap] death of Zimbabwe’s *most decorated* [j] retired army general and *political kingmaker* [j] Solomon Mujuru in a blaze which **burnt** [ap] him to ashes in the early hours of Tuesday would almost certainly have **far-reaching consequences** [j] on Zimbabwe’s political landscape.

Given that Mujuru was a *towering figure* [j] in Zimbabwe’s political scene before and after Independence from Britain in 1980, his **shock death** [ap], which left **emotional scars** [3<sup>rd</sup> af] and **anger** [3<sup>rd</sup> af] in its trail, would **inevitably fuel** [ap] the already **vicious** [ap] **power struggle** [ap] within the **faction-ridden** [ap] Zanu PF which President Robert Mugabe (pictured), **gradually** [ap] **losing control** [j] due to **old age and ill-health** [j], is **tenuously struggling** [j] to keep together.

Authorial inscribed evaluations of Mujuru's death as '**mysterious**' (003), '**shock death**' (012 – 013), having '**left emotional scars and anger in its trail**' (013) and the expression of the possible political ramifications of such a death in the reporter's opinion, (opinion which falls short of satisfying the 'reporter voice' configuration), are also predicted through the use of heavy negative authorial inscriptions. In short, the reporter exhibits an anti-ZANU PF stance and in doing this also summons the 'voices' of external sources that also exhibit the same sentiments, 'voices' which are either quoted and named sources or documentary. In doing this the news report exhibits what Jullian (2011) refers to as 'appraising through the words of others' due to the fact that the voices summoned ratify the opinionated evaluations that characterize the inscribed sentiments of the authorial voice.

In terms of authorial evaluative positioning, as with *The Herald* and *Newsday* news reports, the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report also makes use of authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluations of Mujuru. Positive JUDGEMENT inscriptions of Mujuru occur as both authorial inscriptions as well as attributed inscription and cast Mujuru in a positive light. Mujuru is, with regards to this, described through attributed positive inscriptions as '**most decorated retired army general**' (003 – 004), '**political kingmaker**' (004 – 005), '**a towering figure**' (010), '**an influential figure**' (049) and a '**critical political mentor**' (077). This again can be seen in the context of his participation in the historical narrative of the country from which he is seen and evaluated as a national hero.

#### 4.5.4. *Kwayedza* (19 – 25 Nyamavhuvhu/August, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ENGLISH TRANSLATION	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<i>Gamba</i> [j] raenda <i>neMunyori weKwayedza</i>	A <i>hero</i> [j] is gone <i>Kwayedza Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised Headline: Proposition that Mujuru – a hero – has died.)
005	RUFU rwaGeneral Solomon Mujuru, avo vakashaya ne-musi weChipiri mamba-kwedza <b>mutsaona yemoto</b> [ap] wakaitika pamba pavo ku-purazi re Alamein, ku-Beatrice <b>rwazunguza</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup>	The death of Solomon Mujuru, who passed away on Tuesday at dawn in a <b>fire accident</b> [ap] at his Alamein farm house in Beatrice has <b>shaken/shocked</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] a lot of people countrywide.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/ Appraisal)</b> (Restatement and authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/ reaction to the death of Mujuru)

010	af] ruzhinji rwevanhu – Zimbabwe yose.		
015	Zanu-PF politiburo yakagara pasi nemusi weChitatu svondo rino <u>ndokuona zvakakodzera</u> [j] kuti vape Gen Mujuru (66) <u>ruremekedzo rwegamba renyika</u> [j] uye vachavigwa kumarinda eNational Heroes Acre neMugovera. Gen Mujuru, avo vaive murume wemutevedzeri wemutungamiri wenyika Cde Joice Mujuru, vakashaika patsaona <u>vasiya veruzhinji vasina mate mukanwa</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	A Zanu-PF politiburo meeting on Wednesday this week <u>unanimously agreed</u> [j] to confer Gen Mujuru with the <u>honours of National Hero status</u> [j] and he will be buried at the National Heroes Acre on Saturday. Gen Mujuru, who was husband to Vice President Cde Joice Mujuru, died in an fire accident that has <u>shocked many and left many dumbfounded</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the ‘heroics’ of Mujuru and authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reactions to the death of Mujuru)
020			
025			
030	Tsaona iyi yakaitika mangwanani apo Gen Mujuru vaive vega kuimba yavo iyo yaive nemakamuri 18.	The accident occurred at dawn. Gen Mujuru was alone in his 18-roomed house.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
035	Sekutaura kwaRosemary Short, mushandi wavo wemabasa emumba uye ari zvakare mumwe wevanhu vakapedzisira kuona Gen Mujuru vari vapenyu zvakare ari mumwe wevekutanga kusvika pamoto uyu, <ack> <u>chiitiko ichi chakavasiya ivo pamwe chete nenharaunda yeBeatrice vasina zvekutaura</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> /3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	According to Rosemary Short, a domestic worker to the Mujurus and one of the people to last see Gen Mujuru alive, <ack> <u>the death has left her and many in the Beatrice area speechless</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> /3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration/Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru and attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reactions to the death)
040			
045	Short anoti <ack> <u>nanhasi haasati abvuma</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] kuti Gen Mujuru vakashaika sezvo <u>pfungwa yekuti</u>	Short says <ack> <u>Up to now she is still in disbelief</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] and finds it hard to accept that Gen Mujuru is nomore	<b>Satellite 4: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/

050	<b>vakafa irikuramba ku-pinda mupfungwa dzake</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	as <b>the fact that he is now dead is difficult to accept</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	reaction to the death of Mujuru)
055	Mushandi uyu anoti <ack> <b>Gen Mujuru</b> , avo muhondo yeChimurenga vaizivikanwa saCde Rex Nhongo, <b>vaka-svika pamba pake paa-nogara panove chinhanho chemakiromita maviri ku-bva kuimba yavakatsvira</b> .	She says <ack> <b>Gen Mujuru</b> , whose nom de guerre during the liberation struggle was Rex Nhongo, <b>arrived at her house, which is two kilometres away from the house in which he got burnt in</b> .	<b>Satellite 5: Contextualisation</b> (Specification of the prior events before the death of Mujuru)
060	“Dzave kuma8 manheru, <b>Mudhara vakasvika pamba pangu vachiti vaida mamwe makiyi sezvo vaiva vakananganwa avo kuHarare. Nda-kavapa makiyi aya vaka-enda kumba kwavo vachiti taizoonana mangwana acho mangwanani,</b> ” <ack> akadaro Short	“Around 8 o’clock in the evening, he arrived at my house asking for spare keys to his house since he had forgotten his set in Harare. I gave him the keys and he went to his house expressing the hope that we would see each other the following morning.” <ack> Short said.	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration/ Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of the prior events before the death of Mujuru)
070	Short, uyo anoti aive ashandira Gen Mujuru kwe-makore anodarika gumi anoti <ack> <b>akazoziviswa runyanhiriri nehanzvadzi yake kuti imba yaGen Mujuru iri kutsva. Apa dzaiswederwa ku3 am. “Chi-riporipotyo [ap/j] takabva tafonera mapurisa eku-Beatrice ini ndokubatana nevamwe tichienda kumba kwaitsva uku. Patakasvika nevamwe vashandi takaona kuti moto uyu wakange waenderera nemba vese usisaite [ap],”</b> <ack>	Short, who says she has worked for Gen Mujuru for more than ten years says <ack> <b>she was alerted by her brother at dawn that Gen Mujuru’s house was on fire. This was around 3am. “Hurriedly [ap/j], we called the Beatrice police and I and some others dashed to the burning house. On arrival, we realised that the fire was spiralling out of control”</b> [ap], <ack> said Short	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration/ Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the prior events before the death of Mujuru. Attributed inscribed evaluation of the cause of death – the fire)
075			
080			
085			

	akadaro Short.		
090	Short anoti <ack> aka- zoenda nekufafitera reku- imba huru yekurara achi- edza kutsvaga kana Gen Mujuru vaive mumba iyi asi anoti akangosangana neme- tiresi yaive <b>yatsva yasara</b> <b>mawaya chete</b> [ap]. Ndipo	According to Short, <ack> she peeped through the bedroom window searching for Gen Mujuru who was in the bedroom but she discovered nothing but an <b>extensively burnt</b> [ap] mattress. That is when we started searched for him in the yard and all over” <ack> said Short.	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration/ Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the prior events before the death of Mujuru. Attributed inscribed evaluation of the cause of death – the fire)
095	patakatanga kuvatsvaga nechivanze chose asi hatina kuvaona izvo zvakaita kuti tivatsvage kwese-kwese,” <ack> akadaro Short.		
100			
105	Short anoti <ack> paka- zovvika mapurisa avo <b>vakazoshandisa chisimba</b> [ap] kuvhura gonhi ndipo pakazoonekwa mutumbi waGen Mujuru uchitsva.	Short says <ack> when the police eventually arrived, and <b>forced</b> [ap] the door open, that is when Gen Mujuru’s burning body was discovered.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration/ Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the prior events before the death of Mujuru. Attributed inscribed evaluation of the cause of death – the fire)
110	Parizvino mapurisa ari <i>kufere- refeta</i> [j] chakakonzero moto uyu. Zvakadaro, mutunga- miri wenyika neHurumende vari zvakare mukuru wema- uto, President Mugabe vakati vaive...Gen Mujuru.	Currently, the police are still <i>investigating</i> [j] the cause of this fire outbreak. In the meantime, the President and Commander in Chief of the Defence Forces, President Mugabe said...Gen Mujuru	<b>Satellite 10: Cause and Effect</b> (Specification of the consequences arising from the death)
115	Gen Mujuru... Aiva <i>munhu</i> <i>anoda kuseka</i> [j], ndati ndikuuedzei kuti <i>munhu ane</i> <i>mushando wakadaro</i> [j] <i>akazvipira</i> [j] <i>akarwira</i> <i>nyika</i> [j]. <i>Musoja chaive</i> [j] anofanirwa kufa nembumb- uru kwete kufa seizvi, <b>kwete izvi Mwari</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af],”	“Gen Mujuru...was a <i>humorous</i> [j] person, I should tell you a <i>person of</i> <i>such reputation, dedicated,</i> <i>fought for the country</i> [j]. He <i>is a true soldier</i> [j] who was supposed to die by the bullet and not like this. <b>God! Not</b> <b>like this!</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]” <ack>	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of Mujuru and of the emotional impact/reaction to the death and the manner and cause of death)
120			

	<ack> President Mugabe vakadaro.	President Mugabe said.	
125	Cde Joice Mujuru vakati <ack> <u>vaivhundutswa</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] nekufa kwemurume wavo vachiti <u>havasati va-mboona zvakadai muhupenyu hwavo</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	Cde Joice Mujuru has said <ack> she is <u>shocked</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] by the death of her husband and <u>she has never seen anything like this in her entire life</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
130			
135	“ <u>Handisati ndamboona kutsva kwakadaro</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af], <u>munhu kutsva kupera kudaro</u> [ap].” <ack> Cde Mujuru <u>yakachema</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] vachidaro.	“ <u>I have never seen anything like this</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af], <u>a person burnt beyond recognition</u> [ap].” <ack> Cde Mujuru said while <u>in tears</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
140	Gavhuna weMashonaland West, Cde Faber Chidarikire vanoti <ack> <u>rufu rwaGen Mujuru rwavavhundutsa</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] zvekuti <u>havana kana chekutura</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	Mashonaland West Governor, Cde Faber Chidarikire says <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru’s death has shocked</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] him, and has left him <u>dumbfounded</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)
145	“ <u>Vaive baba vedu</u> [j] <u>vaitipa gwara rekutora munguva dzose</u> [j], vaive munhu <u>aiterera</u> [j] munhu wese <u>vasina rugarura kana kunyomba</u> [j]. <u>Chaive chido chavo kuona vanhu vese vachifara vakabatana</u> [j].”	“ <u>He was our father</u> [j], a man who <u>always gave us direction and counsel</u> [j], he was <u>attentive</u> [j] to all, was <u>not racist or tribalistic</u> [j]. It was <u>his wish to see all people happy and united</u> [j].”	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT of Mujuru and his status as a ‘hero’)
150	<ack> Cde Chidarikire vakadaro.	said <ack> Cde Chidarikire.	
155	Nhengo yeHouse of Assembly yeUzumba Cde Simbanauta Mudarikwa vakati <ack> <u>chero zvazvo ruzhinji rwuri kuchema</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] <u>zvakanakosha</u> [ap] kuti vanhu vasakanganwe <u>basa</u>	The House of Assembly Representative for Uzumba, Cde Simbanauta Mudarikwa has said that <ack>, <u>even though the nation is mourning</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af], it is <u>important</u> [ap] that people	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT of

160	<u>rakaitwa naGen Mujuru [j].</u>	not forget <i>the great works</i> <u>done by Gen Mujuru [j].</u>	Mujuru and his status as a 'hero')
165	<u>"Aya ndiwo magamba [j] sezvo vakaunza rusunu-nguko munyika [j] chero zvavo vari ivo vakaita basa iri hapana pawaivanzwa vachizvirova dundundu asi vaive munhu akanyorova [j] ari wekuda kuseka chete [j]."</u> <ack> Cde Mudarikwa vakadaro.	<u>"These are the <i>real heroes</i> [j] since they <i>liberated the country and brought peace and tranquillity to the country</i> [j]. Even though he was responsible for such great works, he <i>was never boastful</i> [j] but was <i>humble and humorous</i> [j]."</u> <ack> said Cde Mudarikwa.	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT of Mujuru and his status as a 'hero')
170	Cde Joseph Chinotimba vakati <ack> <u>varasikirwa zvikuru [1<sup>st</sup> af].</u>	Cde Joseph Chinotimba has said <ack> <u>he <i>feels a great sense of loss</i> [1<sup>st</sup> af].</u>	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death)
175	<u>"Tinokurudzira kune vari kufeya nyaya iyi kuti vaite basa ravo kusvika varipedza [ap], kwowa-nikwa chokwadi chezvakaaitika [ap]."</u> <ack> vakadaro Cde Chinotimba.	<u>"We encourage those investigating the matter to do their job <i>thoroughly</i> [ap] until they get to the heart of the matter and <i>the truth of what really transpired</i>, [ap]"</u> <ack> said Cde Chinotimba.	<b>Satellite 17: Intertextualisation/ Cause and Effect</b> (Extratextual specification of the consequences of the death of Mujuru)
185	VaRichard Chabata, mumwe wemabhizimisi evatema anotengesa fodya vakati <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru <i>mumwe wemagamba</i> [j] <i>aikurudzira</i> [j] kuti vatema vatange mabhizimusi avo pane <b>kungoramba vachishandira vachena</b> [ap].</u>	Mr Richard Chabaya an indigenous businessman in the tobacco industry said <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru was <i>one of the heroes</i> [j] who <i>encouraged</i> [j] black people to start businesses and not <b>continue working for the few minority whites</b> [ap].</u>	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
190	Dr Sacha Jogi vanove verudzi rwechiIndia, vakati <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru <i>vaisave munhu aimirira vatema chete asi marudzi ose</i> [j].</u>	Dr Sacha Jogi of Indian origins has said <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru was a person who <i>did not only represent blacks only but all kinds of people</i></u>	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)

195	Uyu aive <u>murume akaoma</u> [j]. Vaive <u>vasina rusarura</u> <u>rwemarudzi</u> [j] chero <u>vaive</u> <u>varwisa nekubvisa varungu</u> <u>pakutonga</u> [j], vaive munhu	[j]. This was <u>a great man</u> [j]. He <u>was not racist</u> [j] and even <u>though he had fought</u> <u>against and toppled white</u> <u>settler hegemony</u> [j], he was	
200	aida kuona zvizvarwa zvose zveZimbabwe <u>zvichiwiwa</u> <u>mikana yakaenzana</u> [ap]. Zvizvarwa zveZimbabwe	a man who wanted to see all Zimbabweans of all colours <u>given equal opportunities</u>	
205	<u>tarasikirwa</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af],” <ack> <ack> Dr Jogi vakadaro.	[ap]. Zimbabweans <u>we have</u> <u>lost a good man</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af],” <ack> said Dr Jogi.	
210	Gen Mujuru vakazvarwa muna 1945 kwaMutusva kuChivhu, vachizoenda ku- zvikoro zveKwenda ne- Rufaro, kuMashonaland East. Muna 1960 vakazoe- nda kuZimuto Secondary uko vakasvika mufomu ye- chitatu vachizopinda mune	Gen Mujuru was born in 1945, in Matusva, Chivhu. He attended school at Kwenda and Rufaro in Mashonaland East. In 1960, he attended Zimuto Secondary in Masvingo where he attended classes up until form 3, when he left and joined Zapu.	<b>Satellite 20:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual specification of the history/background of Mujuru)
215	zvematongerwo enyi-ka mubato reZapu.		
220	Nekuda kwezvematongerwo enyika, <u>vakasungwa</u> [ap/j] ndokuendeswa kuKhami Prison muna1966 vachisu- nungurwa muna1968, vachi- nanga kuBotswana uko vakazoyambuka kuenda kuZambia kunodzidziswa	Because of his involvement in politics, in 1966 he was <u>imprisoned</u> [ap/j] at Khami Prison and only released two years later. After release, he crossed into Botswana from where he crossed into Zambia where he underwent military training.	<b>Satellite 21:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual specification of the history/background of Mujuru)
225	hondo.		
230	Muna 1970 Gen Mujuru <u>vakazotungamira</u> [j] varwi 45 kubva kuMozambique vachipinda munyika uyewo ndivo <u>vaibatsira mukutu-</u> <u>ngamira hondo</u> [j] kuMo- zambique pamwe nemusha- kabvu Cde Josiah Tongo-	In 1970 Gen Mujuru <u>led</u> [j] a group of 45 soldiers from Mozambique into the country. He was also <u>responsible for leading the</u> <u>war</u> [j] from Mozambique together with the late Cde Josiah Tongogara.	<b>Satellite 22:</b> <b>Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru and his status as a hero)

	gara.		
235	Muna 1980 vakava Leiutenant- General, <i>vachi-zoitwa Commander</i> [j] we-mauto enyika yose muna 1990....	In 1980, he was <i>promoted to the rank of Lieutenant General</i> [j] and subsequently to Commander of the national army in 1990...	<b>Satellite 23: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)

#### 4.5.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news-breaking report of the death of Mujuru in the *Kwayedza* is characterized by a high proliferation of evaluative resources of AFFECT. The AFFECT resources, largely framed in attributed material, occur as both first person and authorial observed affect ([1<sup>st</sup> af] and [3<sup>rd</sup> af] respectively). There is also a high proliferation of attributed JUDGEMENT evaluative resources. Attributed JUDGEMENT resources are used as evaluations of Mujuru and his legacy. The late nationalist, as in the rest of the news reports, receives heroic praises for his outstanding role in the country's war of liberation in this news report. Mujuru is cast as '**munhu anoda kuseka**' (humorous person) (114 – 115), '**akazvipira, akarwira nyika**' (dedicated and fought for the country) (118 – 119) and '**musoja chaiye**' (a true soldier/hero) (119) among other positive evaluations. These positive evaluations of Mujuru as a nationalist and a hero are further vivified through a variety of attributed evaluative resources in lines (143 – 150) and (190 – 205). The news report conforms to the 'reporter voice' configuration with regards to these evaluations since they also, like the AFFECT resources, largely occur in attribution. While the evaluative AFFECT resources reflect emotional reactions to the death of Mujuru, and the JUDGEMENT resources reflect evaluative assessments of the person and legacy of Mujuru, they are both largely framed in attribution and therefore do not reflect as evaluative positionings of the authorial voice.

The news report acknowledges the external sources of all these evaluative resources, which also include the highest office in the land, the President, who documentation shows is supposedly the major beneficiary of Mujuru's legacy. The reporter's stance regards the legacy of Mujuru is discernible, in the news report, as some unattributed AFFECT resources also permeate through the news report. These are however downplayed by the high proliferation of attributed AFFECT resources which are in the first person [1<sup>st</sup> af]. Through the use of these attributed AFFECT resources, the authorial voice manages to distance itself from the attitudinal positions of the attributed evaluative emotional reactions and dispositions. Subsequently this

results in the realisation of a very low probability of inscribed authorial judgements and evaluations, in the process satisfying the requirements of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Examples of such attributed AFFECT resources are as follows (125 – 142) and (171 – 173).

Cde Joice Mujuru vakati <ack> **vaihundutswa** [1<sup>st</sup> af] nekufa kwemurume wavo vachiti **havasati vamboona zvakadai muhupenyu hwavo** [1<sup>st</sup> af].

“**Handisati ndamboona kutsva kwakadaro** [1<sup>st</sup> af], **munhu kutsva kupera kudaro** [ap],” Cde Mujuru **vakachemana** [1<sup>st</sup> af] vachidaro <ack>.

Gavhuna weMashonaland West, Cde Faber Chidarikire vanoti <ack> **rufu rwaGen Mujuru rwavavhundutsa** [1<sup>st</sup> af] zvekuti **havana kana chekutura** [1<sup>st</sup> af]....

...Cde Joseph Chinotimba vakati **varasikirwa zvikuru** [1<sup>st</sup> af].

The translation of which is:

Cde Joice Mujuru has said <ack> she is **shocked** [1<sup>st</sup> af] by the death of her husband and **she has never seen anything like this in her entire life** [1<sup>st</sup> af].

“**I have never seen anything like this** [1<sup>st</sup> af], **a person burnt beyond recognition** [ap]” <ack> Cde Mujuru said while **in tears** [3<sup>rd</sup> af].

Mashonaland West Governor, Cde Faber Chidarikire says <ack> Gen Mujuru’s death has **shocked** [1<sup>st</sup> af] him, and has left him **dumbfounded** [1<sup>st</sup> af].

Cde Joseph Chinotimba has said <ack> he **feels a great sense of loss** [1<sup>st</sup> af].

The fact that the news report makes use of attributed AFFECT and JUDGEMENT resources exempts it from flouting the ‘reporter voice’ configuration in the sense that it is not the emotional expression and ideological sentiments of the authorial voice that gets vented out in the news report but those of the compelling voices called upon to make evaluations. However, there are elements of the report that suggest otherwise and can be argued for as ‘appraising through the words of others’ since the attributed material seem to be reinforcing the claims made from an authorial voice.

In terms of the orbital structure analysis, there is evidence of the news report also making use of ‘intertextualisation’. This is because satellites 20 – 23 are used to express extratextual material, specifically in this regard, the historical background of Mujuru. While such a historical narrative seems far removed from the primary propositions of the news report as it

does not directly specify the elements of the nucleus, it provides extratextual and interpersonal information/contextualisation from which we can draw and contextualise the claims and evaluations made in the news report with regards to its major propositions. The use of such kind of a textual arrangement which I have called/labelled ‘intertextualisation’/ ‘extratextualisation’ is a phenomenon that is quite common and characteristic of news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages.

#### 4.5.5. *Umthunywa* (19 – 25 kuNcwabakazi/August, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ENGLISH TRANSLATION	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Ufa emlilweni uMujuru	Mujuru dies in a fire	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announcement that Mujuru has died)
005	Isizwe <u>sehlelwe livezi elimnyama</u> [ap] ngoLwesibili kulandela ukuzwa ngombiko wokufa kuka Retired General Solomon Mujuru obeleminyaka yokuzalwa engu-62.	<b>A dark cloud hung over the country</b> [ap] on Tuesday following news of the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru who died at the age of 62.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal)</b> (Restatement of the death of Mujuru and inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/ reaction to the death)
010	Kubikwa <ack> uRtd Gen Mujuru ufe kulandelela ukugqhamuka kimlilo epulazini lakhe eBeatrice indawo engaphandle kwesogodlo seHarare.	It is reported that <ack> Mujuru died in a fire outbreak at his farm in Beatrice, on the outskirts of Harare.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
015	Kusenzakala lokhu kubikwa <ack> ubayedwa endlini njalo ukukacaci ukuba umlilo ubangelwe yini.	It is also reported that <ack> he was alone in his house and the cause of the fire is still unknown.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
020	Amapholisa <u>aphuthume</u> [j] ayafika emzini kaMujuru <u>kodwa awazange athole isidumbu sakhe</u> [ap].	The police <u>rushed</u> [j] to the Mujuru’s house <b>but could not find his body</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	Kubikwa <ack> uKhomu-redi Mujuru <u>utshe kwasala</u>	It is reported that <ack> Comrade Mujuru was <b>burnt</b>	<b>Satellite 4: Appraisal/</b>

025       030	<p><u>kungasakhanyi isimo sa-</u> <u>khe</u> [ap]. Amapholisa akhi- <u>pe isidumbu</u> [ap] sika Khmrd Mujuru ngezikhathi zehola letshumi lanye ekuseni.</p>	<p><u>beyond recognition</u> [ap] and the police had to remove <u>what remained</u> [ap] of it at around 11am.</p>	<p><b>Elaboration</b> (Further specification and attributed inscribed evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)</p>
035	<p>Uzabekwa eNational Heroes Acre kusasa. Lamuhla isidu- mbu sakhe sizaphathiswa siye kibo koSadza, eChivhu andubana sisiwe njalo eMarondera isigodlo sesa- belo seMashonaland East.</p>	<p>He will be buried at the national Heroes Acre tomorrow. Today his body will be transported to his rural home in Chivhu before being taken to Marondera in Mashonaland East.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 5: Cause and Effect/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru and the consequences resulting from the death)</p>
040	<p>Kubikwa &lt;ack&gt; <u>isidumbu</u> <u>sizalala sesimzini wakhe</u> eHarare silindele ukuya- bekwa ngoMgqibelo.</p>	<p>It is reported that &lt;ack&gt; <u>the</u> <u>body will lie in state at his at</u> <u>his home in Harare, awaiting</u> <u>burial on Saturday.</u></p>	<p><b>Satellite 6: Cause and Effect/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification the consequences resulting from the death)</p>
045       050	<p><i>Imbali kaKhomuredi Mu- juru</i> Imbali yeqiniso yempi kazi- buse, uzibuse lokuphakha- nyiswa kwabansundu kuleli <i>akungeke kubaliswe kuphe- lele ngaphandle kokuthi ku- baliswe njalo ngomsebenzi owenziwa nguKhmrd Mu- juru</i> [j].</p>	<p><i>Comrade Mujuru: A brief history</i> The complete story of the liberation struggle, liberation from the oppression of the blacks by white settlers, <i>cannot be told without reference to the huge role played by Cde Mujuru</i> [j].</p>	<p><b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the qualities and heroics of Mujuru)</p>
055	<p>Wazalelwa eChivhu ngo- mnyaka ka1945. Wafunda eKwenda kunye leRufaro Primary wasesiya eZimuto Secondary phandle kwe- dolobho leMasvingo.</p>	<p>He was born in Chivhu in 1945. He attended school at Kwenda and Rufaro Primary before proceeding to Zimuto Secondary just outside Masvingo.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 8: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual history/ background of Mujuru)</p>
060	<p>Ngenxa <u>yokufisa</u> [3<sup>rd</sup> af] ukukhulula ilizwe waqala ukuphatheka <u>kwezombanga-</u></p>	<p>Because of his <u>deep desire</u> [3<sup>rd</sup> af] to liberate the nation, <u>he joined politics at a very</u></p>	<p><b>Satellite 9: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Authorial inscribed</p>



105	ngukhomanda weZimbabwe People's Army (Zipa). Umsebenzi wakhe wawungowokukhangela ibutho kunye ukuhanjiswa kwawo endaweni ezitshiyeneyo kunye lokuhamba kwebutho kuleli.	Army (Zipa). His main roles and responsibilities were to oversee the operations of the army as well as the deployment of soldiers to various places as well as into this country.	
110	<b><u>Ilizwe lakithi lingakatholi uzibuse</u></b> [ap] ngo1980 uKhmrud Mujuru <u>wakho-khela</u> [j] ibutho elahlela ngokufika kwabakhokheli bePF-Zapu kunye leZanu-PF wahlela njalo indawo okwakuzahlanganwa khona.	<b><u>Prior to the attainment of independence</u></b> [ap] in 1980, Cde Mujuru <u>led</u> [j] the coordination of the coming together of soldiers from PF Zapu and Zanu PF and arranging for the meeting places of the two forces.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the heroics of Mujuru and further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
115			
120	<u>Sekutholwe uzibuse</u> [ap] ukhomanda weZanla waba <u>lomsebenzi omkhulu eku-khokheleni ibutho elaphathisa ukuthi kubunjwe iDefence Forces</u> [j].	<u>After independence</u> [ap], as Zanla commander, he had the <u>huge task of uniting the various forces into a national army, the Defence Forces</u> [j].	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the heroics of Mujuru and further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
125	Indoda le <u>elembali emangalisayo</u> [j/ap] ekutholeni uzibuse kwenza waba ngowesibili ukuba ngukhomanda ngemva kokufa kuka Josiah Magama Tongogara.	Because of his <u>immaculate history</u> [j/ap] in the liberation struggle, he was made second commander after the death of Josiah Magama Tongogara.	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the heroics of Mujuru and further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
130	Waqhubekela phambili ephakamisa <u>izifiso zoku-lwela</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] ilizwe lakithi. Ngenxa yokuthi wathatha ubukhokheli ngemva kuka-Tongogara waphanga wamukelwa <u>ngabalweli benkululeko</u> [j] kumbe ngamaqhawe ayebumbe ibu-	He continued fighting for his achieve his <u>strong desire</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] to liberate Zimbabwe. Because he assumed command of the army after the death of Tongogara he was easily accepted by the other <u>freedom fighters</u> [j] fighting for the liberation of	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the heroics of Mujuru and further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
135			

	tho lakuleli.	the nation.	
140	UKhmrdr Mujuru <i>waphathisa njalo ngesikhathi ku-hlanganiswa amabandla ombangazwe amathathu alwela inkululeko</i> [j].	Cde Mujuru also <i>played a big role in the unification of the three liberation movements</i> [j]. Cde Mujuru had <i>huge responsibilities</i> [j]	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the heroics of Mujuru and further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
145	UKhmrdr Mujuru <i>wayelomsebenzi onzima</i> [j] hatshi owokubumba ibutho kuphela kodwa lokuthi alikhokhele empini.	not only leading the army but also leading them during the struggle. He managed to <i>create a respectful and respected army, dignified and admirable</i> [j].	
150	<i>Wenelisa ukwakha ibutho elihlonipayo njalo elilamasotsha afundiswe ngendlela elohlonzi</i> [j]. Ngenxa yokuthi ukuthula	Because peace was very important in a newly independent country, Cde Mujuru, due to the training he had received	
155	kwakuqakhathekile elizweni elisanda kuthola uzibuse, uKhmrdr Mujuru <i>wakwenelisa</i> [j] lokhu ngenxa yezifundo ayezithole ngesikhathi semp. Ngo 1992	during the war <i>managed to consolidate peace</i> [j]. In 1992 he was <i>promoted</i> [j] to General before he resigned and ventured into business.	
160	<i>wathuthukiswa</i> [j] wabakusibanga sokuba nguGeneral andubana atshiye esengena kwezamabhizimusi.		
165	Ngo 1995 ngoZibandlela wangena kwezombangazwe wabalilunga ledale lePhalamende emele iChikomba.4	In January 1995, he ventured into politics and was elected Member of Parliament for Chikomba 4 district.	<b>Satellite 17: Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual history/background of Mujuru)
170	Ngesikhathi esifa ubesililunga lePolitiburo kuZanupf.	At the time of his death, he was a member of the ZanuPF politiburo.	<b>Satellite 18: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual history/background of Mujuru)

#### 4.5.5.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

A significant observation to make is that, unlike in all the other news reports, the *Umthunywa* news report does not give evidence of attempts to make use of any attributed material. There are no external voices made mention and use of in the news report and the ‘facts’ of the report

are thus expressed through the authorial voice. From the onset it becomes difficult to describe the voice that speaks as the ‘reporter voice’. Instead it reflects more of a ‘writer’ voice due to the proliferation of a high probability of inscribed authorial evaluations. The narrative of the news report is developed from the point of view of the authorial voice. There is no acknowledgement of any external voices/sources sought, like in the other reports in which we negotiate our evaluations of AFFECT and JUDGEMENT through the words of others, including among them family members of the deceased and eye witnesses. Instead there is a high use of authorial observed affect ([3<sup>rd</sup> af]) which makes our appreciation of the effects of the death subject to the author’s personal evaluation (interpretation and opinion).

This observation is also reinforced by the evident absence of first person AFFECT [1<sup>st</sup> af] resources throughout the whole news report. It would seem, through the textual analysis of the report, that the report is not premised on facticity but more on hearsay. The news report evinces authorial attempts to use ‘distancing’ as the tool to achieve this. The continued use of the term ‘**kubikwa**’ (009, 015, 023, 038) loosely translated to ‘it is reported/heard/said that’ in a number of supposedly factual statements raises concerns in terms of the objectivity of the claims made in the ‘report’. The following extracts exemplify this feature:

- (a) Lines (009 – 014),

[**Kubikwa**] uRtd Gen Mujuru ufe kulandlela ukuqhamuka kimlilo epulazini lakhe eBeatrice indawo engaphandle kwesogodlo seHarare.

(**It is reported** that Mujuru died in a fire outbreak at his farm in Beatrice, on the outskirts of Harare.)

- (b) Lines (015 – 018),

Kusenzakala lokhu [**kubikwa**] ubeyedwa endlini njalo ukukacaci ukuba umlilo ubangelwe yini....

(**It is also reported** that he was alone in his house and the cause of the fire is still unknown.)

- (c) Lines (023 – 031)

[**Kubikwa**] uKhomuredi Mujuru utshe kwasala kungasakhanyi isimo sakhe [ap]. Amapholisa akhipe isidumbu sika Khmrd Mujuru ngezikhathi zehola letshumi lanye ekuseni....

**It is reported** that Comrade Mujuru was burnt beyond recognition and the police had to remove what remained of it at around 11am.

(d) and lines (038 – 041)

**[Kubikwa]** isidumbu sizalala sesimzini wakhe eHarare silindele ukuyabekwa ngoMgqibelo.

**(It is reported** that the body will lie in state at his at his home in Harare, awaiting burial on Saturday.)

The remainder of the news reports expresses similar JUDGEMENT evaluations with the rest of the news stories that Mujuru was an iconic figure in the liberation war. The manner in which it is framed in the *Umthunywa* news report presents a deviation from the propositions made by the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. The reason for making this observation is because the use of the authorial observed AFFECT ([3<sup>rd</sup> af]) – the reporter’s assessments of the reaction of third parties, who in this case are the nation – is framed in such a manner that it betrays the authorial voice’s attitudinal convictions and thus plays down the possibilities of objectivity in the news report.

A high proliferation of authorial and attributed attitudinal evaluations is also evident in this news report. These present themselves as instances of the use of JUDGEMENT resources especially so in the description and evaluation of the person and character of Mujuru as well as his political history and role in Zimbabwe. However, as intimated above, the framing of these evaluations make for interesting textual analysis. Textually, the ‘news report’ does not make use of attribution (what, as argued earlier on, Jullian (2011) describes as appraising through the words of others). There is little evidence of attempt made by the authorial voice to veil its ideological inclinations and emotional sentiments through the use of named external voices. Because of this, the story fails to satisfy the ‘reporter voice’ configuration as it is characterized by explicit embedded subjectivities as well as attitudinal resources and meanings. Of course the other papers intimate that the death is a loss to the nation and quote compelling external voices of authority to reinforce such authorial evaluations.

Examples of such attributed evaluations are found in the extracts below. A significant observation to make here is the manner in which, unlike the *Umthunywa* news report, the remainder of the papers frame their claims through attribution.

i. from *The Herald*

Cde Gumbo said: <ack> "**We have lost** [3<sup>rd</sup> af] a *resolute* [j], *gallant* [j] and *committed* *cadre* [j] who *contributed innocuously* [j] to the liberation struggle and to the economy of Zimbabwe. He was a farmer and *businessman* [j].

"This **loss** [ap] is not only to the Mujuru family but **also to the party and nation as a whole** [ap]. **We will miss** [1<sup>st</sup> af] his *contribution* [j] in the Politburo."

ii. from *Newsday*

State Security minister Sydney Sekeramayi, who was at the scene said: <ack> "It's **hard to believe** [ap] but he is no more. It is a **hard situation** [ap]. We came here early in the morning initially thinking that he was badly burnt only to find his charred body.

"One of Zimbabwe's *greatest sons* [j] is no more."

Information minister Webster Shamu said <ack> Zimbabwe **had lost** [3<sup>rd</sup> af] one of its *illustrious sons* [j], *great fighter, military commander* [j] and *strategist par excellence* [j].

iii. from the *Zimbabwe Independent*

Political analyst Dr Ibbo Mandaza said <ack> Mujuru's death would have a **serious impact** [ap] on Zimbabwean politics.

"The departure from the political scene of Mujuru, who died last night (Tuesday) in as yet **unexplained** [af] but most **tragic** [ap] circumstances, leaves a **vast political void** [ap], with **immense ramifications** [ap] still to be **fathomed** [af] and *understood* [3<sup>rd</sup> af] in the months ahead," he said <ack>. "For, he was one of the *major pillars* [j] in Zimbabwe's post-independence politics, not least in the foundation and life of the state itself, to this day."

iv. From *Kwayedza*

Dr Sacha Jogi vanove verudzi rwechiIndia, vakati <ack> Gen Mujuru *vaisave munhu aimirira vatema chete asi marudzi ose* [j]. "Uyu aive *murume akaoma* [j]. Vaive vasina **rusarura rwemarudzi** [j] chero *vaive varwisa nekubvisa varungu pakutonga* [j], vaive munhu *aida kuona* [ap] zvizvarwa zvose zveZimbabwe *zvichipiwa mikana yakaenzana* [ap]. Zvizvarwa zveZimbabwe **tarasikirwa** [af]," <ack> Dr Jogi vakadaro.

(Dr Sacha Jogi of Indian origins has said <ack> Gen Mujuru was a person who
<i>did not only represent blacks only but all kinds of people</i> [j]. This was <i>a great man</i>
[j]. He <i>was not racist</i> [j] and even <i>though he had fought against and toppled white</i>
<i>settler hegemony</i> [j], he was a man who wanted to see all Zimbabweans of all
colours <i>given equal opportunities</i> [ap]. Zimbabweans, <b>we have lost a good man</b>
[1 <sup>st</sup> af],” <ack> said Dr Jogi.)

For the ‘facts’ and ‘truths’ of the news report in *Umthunywa* thus, we are made to rely on the authorial voice, which by its very nature presents as subjective because its choices of linguistic resources are characterised in most instances by a selection of aesthetics that signal interpretation as well as embedded authorial attitudinal subjectivities.

#### 4.5.6. Comparative analytic perspective

We observe from the Appraisal analyses conducted in the news reports ‘announcing’ Mujuru’s death that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration is largely not satisfied by the *Newsday*, *Zimbabwe Independent* and the *Umthunywa* stories. This is because the evaluative key of this configuration that must characterise ‘hard’ news reporting, according to Martin and White (2005) and White (2005), should be ‘characterized by an attitudinal configuration which includes a low probability of authorial inscribed judgement, no authorial affect, some inscribed authorial appreciation and some ‘observed’ affect.’ In simple terms, when there is an oversaturation of instances in which there is explicit judgement on the part of reporter (as is the case with the two stories in question), it becomes immediately apparent that the ‘hard news’ text of such a news report does not display the configurations of the ‘reporter voice’ that Caffarel and Rechniewski (2010) and Martin and White (2005) contextualise as, to mean that, ‘the ‘reporter voice’ configuration manifests itself through the presence of low probabilities of inscribed authorial stances and is located within strategic impersonalisations’. Important to note is the fact that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration does not present itself through explicit commentaries, subjective ones. It however manifests itself through invoked and evoked impersonalisations and attempts at ‘clandestine’ subjectivities.

It is with this background that in terms of the analysis of the attainment of the ‘objectivity’ ideal through an interrogation of the configuration, the following observations, clarified in more detail below are made; first, that using the English hard news story as a yardstick, the *Newsday*, *Umthunywa* and the *Zimbabwe Independent* stories rather than exhibiting a low probability of inscribed authorial appreciation and judgement, are fraught with overt instances

of reporter subjectivities. It would thus be theoretically imprudent to suggest that both these stories employ the evaluative key of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Instead of ‘announcing’ the death of Retired General Mujuru, the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* news reports are loaded with ‘extratextual’ information that express the reporter inclinations and AFFECT positions explicitly. On the other hand, the *Umthunywa* report makes no use whatsoever of named external resources/sources/commentaries and thus reads more like an opinion due to the fact that it is characterised by a high proliferation of both explicit social esteem and explicit social sanction judgements.

Secondly, this characterisation of the news reports is in contrast to what we would normally expect in a ‘notice of death’ news story, in which we would expect the narration of the circumstances of death without the judgmental tones, overtones and overtures. Thirdly, that despite the differences in ownership patterns for all the newspapers examined here, as well as differences in terms of political ideological leanings and editorial policies attributed above to the partisan reporting resulting from the volatile political landscape in Zimbabwe, all the five stories pedestalise the heroics of Solomon Mujuru and the role he played in the liberation struggle that won the country’s independence from the British colonial hegemony. In short, in all the news reports, he is evaluated an inimitable national hero.

#### **4.6. News reports on the beginning of the inquest into Mujuru’s death**

The manner in which the death of Mujuru was covered in the media (as discussed above) as well as the circumstances in which he died, which, as intimated in section 4.1, was viewed as ‘highly suspicious’ and controversial by the private owned media, the nation at large (as reported in the press) as well as the Mujuru family, especially so, given the late veteran’s military history and exploits culminated into a government sanctioned inquest into the General’s death in a bid to determine the ‘real’ cause of his death. This came in the wake of mounting pressure on the government to divulge the ‘real’ cause of Mujuru death as it seemed, as reported especially in the private owned media, ‘the nation’ was not satisfied with the ‘death by fire accident’ explanation proffered by the government through the police and the government pathologist. The Vice President of the Republic and wife to the deceased General led with the demand for satisfactory answers to the cause of the death. The ‘Vice President Joice Mujuru says she will only be consoled if ongoing investigations into her

husband General Solomon Mujuru's death give a satisfactory answer on how he died'<sup>21</sup>. *Newsday* also made similar revelations when it reported that,

Vice-President Joice Mujuru yesterday said she suspected foul play in the tragic death of her husband, Retired Army General Solomon Mujuru, in an unexplained inferno at his Alamein Farm in Beatrice on Tuesday last week.

VP Mujuru — speaking out on the mysterious death of her husband for the first time — said she wanted the truth to be told on what caused his death.

Mujuru told the national women soccer team, Mighty Warriors, the death of her husband was unbelievable and raised a lot of questions.

She said she would never rest until she was furnished with details of what really transpired.<sup>22</sup>

With the foregoing suspicions existing and the alleged ‘reluctance’ by the police to release their report on the death to the public even ‘a month and two weeks after the death of Retired Army General Solomon Mujuru in a suspicious inferno at his Beatrice Farm...’<sup>23</sup>, the government then ordered an inquest into the death. The following are the news - breaking reports of the beginning of the inquest. This section thus, analyses the news reports announcing the beginning of the inquest into the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru in the context of the ‘contriversies’ discussed above. It is important at this point however to note that all the other newspapers under study, save for *Umthunywa*, carried a report on this.

#### 4.6.1. *The Herald* (17 January, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Gen Mujuru inquest: <i>Explosives ruled out</i> [ap] <i>Fidelis Munyoro and Innocent Ruwende</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised headline: Announcement that inquest has begun and that suspicions of foul play have been ruled out)
005	THE <i>inquest</i> [ap] into the death of General Solomon Mujuru opened at the Harare Magistrates Courts yesterday with six witnesses <i>testifying</i> [j] and the State presenting forensic evidence that <i>no trace of explosives or inflammable liquids had been found</i> [ap].	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restatement of headline that inquest has begun and explosives have been ruled out)
	Gen Mujuru died in an <b>inferno</b> [ap] at his farm in	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration/</b>

<sup>21</sup> “Mujuru calls for thorough probe” – *The Herald*, Wednesday, 24 August 2011.

<sup>22</sup> “Mujuru death: VP suspects foul play” - *Newsday*, Wednesday, 24 August 2011.

<sup>23</sup> “Mujuru death findings not ready for public - police” - *Newsday*, Tuesday, 27 September 2011.

010	Beatrice in August last year. Vice President Joice Mujuru, her two daughters, friends and relatives yesterday attended the hearing, presided over by provincial magistrate Mr Walter Chikwanha.	<b>Cause and effect</b> (Specification of why inquest is being held and how it is proceeding)
015	According to a police report submitted to the inquest, <ack> <u>on August 15 last year Gen Mujuru left his home driving an Isuzu KB250 double cab truck, registration number ABT0266.</u>	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest)
020	<ack> <u>He arrived at Beatrice Motel at about 5:30pm and drank four tots of Johnny Walker Black Label whisky, which was diluted with soda water.</u>	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest)
025	<ack> <u>At around 8pm, the General arrived at his farm and Clemence Runhare, who was the guard on duty, opened the gate for him. <b>There was no electricity</b> [ap] on that day.</u>	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest)
030	<ack> <u>There were three ZRP officers on duty - Augustinos Chinyoka, Obert Mark and Lazarus Handikatari. Mark opened the inner gate as the General drove into the yard. Five minutes later, he returned to the gate and the General drove to the eastern gate where another security guard, Samuel Lewis opened the gate leading to the Ruzambo Shopping Complex.</u>	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest)
035	<ack> <u>Gen Mujuru returned from the complex and another guard, Ernest Nyamanja, opened the gate for him as he went to Rosemary Short's cottage where he collected keys to the farmhouse.</u>	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest)
040	<u>He returned to his house at 8:58pm.</u> Police officers say <ack> <u><i>electricity was re-stored at that time</i></u> [ap].	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to death of Mujuru)
	<ack> <u>At around 2am, Chinyoka saw <b>smoke billowing</b> [ap] and <i>discovered</i> [j] that the house was on fire and alerted Mark and Handikatari who in turn informed the farm workers.</u>	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of

		Mujuru)
045	<ack> Mr Tawanda Madondo switched off the electricity at the mains.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
	<ack> People <i>salvaged property</i> [j] from <i>undamaged rooms</i> [ap] and peeping through the window, one of the firefighters saw a burning body.	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
050	State exhibits included a post-mortem report by Dr Gabriel Alvero a pathologist, a fire brigade report, a Zesa report and a report by the ZRP forensic department.	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest into the death of Mujuru)
055	The State also submitted three reports by South African forensic experts.	<b>Satellite 12: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest into the death of Mujuru)
	According to Mrs Sharon Fero, who was presenting the State's information and was assisted by Mr Clemence Chimbare, <ack> Zesa said <ack> <i>the fire was not caused by an electrical fault.</i> [ap]	<b>Satellite 13: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
060	Zesa officials said <ack> <i>there was no evidence that electrical systems in the house were not properly working before the inferno</i> [ap].	<b>Satellite 14: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
065	She said <ack> on September 10 last year, South African forensic experts who came to investigate, took samples of debris, the curtains, and skin and tissue samples from the body for examination.	<b>Satellite 15: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
	On October 12, the South African experts <ack> <i>ruled that no flammable liquid or explosives were used</i> [j].	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of cause and circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
070	She then produced the reports as exhibits.	<b>Satellite 17: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest)

		and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	First to give evidence was Gen Mujuru's driver, Mr Enock Talapenzi. He told the court that <ack> <u>he had been driving the General since 2002.</u>	<b>Satellite 18: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
075	On the <b>fateful</b> [ap] day, Mr Talapenzi said <ack> <u>he saw the General at his Chisipite home in Harare and did errands in town.</u>	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the evidence presented at the inquest as leading to the death of Mujuru)
	Mr Talapenzi said <ack> <u>his wife called him at around 2:50am saying she was trying to call VP Mujuru, but no one was responding.</u>	<b>Satellite 20: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
080	Mr Talapenzi said <ack> <u>his wife told him that the main house at Ruzambo Farm (Gen Mujuru's farm) was on fire.</u>	<b>Satellite 21: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
085	<ack> <u>He called a worker at the Chisipite home who gave him Vice President Mujuru's number and he passed on the message.</u>	<b>Satellite 22: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
090	<u>They drove to the farm with the Vice President and found the house still burning.</u> Ms Portia Kamvura, a bartender at Beatrice Motel, in her testimony, said <ack> <u>on August 15 Gen Mujuru arrived at the bar around 5pm.</u>	<b>Satellite 23: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He parked his vehicle at his usual spot. <u>"He ordered two tots of Black Label Whiskey and a soda water before ordering a pilsener for another patron,"</u> she said.	<b>Satellite 24: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
095	Ms Kamvura said <ack> <u>the General, who came alone, requested two more tots, and intimated that he did not intend to drink much because he had a</u>	<b>Satellite 25: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest)

	journey the following morning.	and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
100	<ack> "I overheard him say he wanted to pass through Beitbridge and around 7pm he bade farewell. As he was leaving, Mr (Blessing) Madzivire, Mr Nyakunu and I accompanied him out," she said <ack>. She said <ack> the General paid her US\$23 for the whisky and the pilsners.	<b>Satellite 26: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
105	Ms Kamvura said <ack> the General was <i>not drunk</i> [j] when he left the motel.	<b>Satellite 27: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
110	Gen Mujuru's nephew, Mr Antony Mujuru, who was in the gallery, asked Ms Kamvura if she noticed the vehicle he was driving and she said <ack> it was a white Isuzu double-cab truck.	<b>Satellite 28: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	The police report confirmed this.	<b>Satellite 29: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
115	Gen Mujuru's elder brother Joel asked the time the other patrons left the bar and she said, "They remained in the bar for quite some time and they left one-by-one".	<b>Satellite 30: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	She said <ack> she was familiar with all the patrons that night as they were regulars.	<b>Satellite 31: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
120	Mr Madzivire, <i>a farmer</i> [j] in the area, said <ack> on August 15 he drank with the General and there were no new faces in the bar.	<b>Satellite 32: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He said <ack> everyone was jovial in the bar and Gen Mujuru left around 5:20pm. He said <ack> he accompanied the Gen to his car with Mr Nyakunu from Zesa and the bar lady.	<b>Satellite 33: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of

		Mujuru)
125	Mr James Mushore, the late General's nephew, asked if there was electricity at the motel, and was told there was none.	<b>Satellite 34: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
	Mr Madzivire said he left before power was restored.	<b>Satellite 35: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
130	Another nephew, Mudiwa Mundawarara, asked <ack> <u>if there was power when he got to his farm</u> and Mr Madzivire answered: <u>"Not immediately on my arrival, but at least five minutes later around 8:55pm".</u>	<b>Satellite 36: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
135 140	The fourth witness, Tongai Chimuka of Blackstone Farm, said <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru was their family friend since 1990 although he had known him for five to six years. He said when he got to Beatrice Motel, he saw the General sitting in his "usual place" in a jovial mood.</u>	<b>Satellite 37: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	Mr Chimuka left the motel around 9pm to 10pm.	<b>Satellite 38: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He said <ack> <u>the General was <i>not drunk</i> [j] when he left.</u>	<b>Satellite 39: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
145	The fifth witness was Clemence Runhare, a security guard who was manning one of the farm's main gates on his own.	<b>Satellite 40: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He said <ack> <u>Gen Mujuru arrived at the farm around 8:05pm and he opened the gate for him.</u>	<b>Satellite 41: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of

		Mujuru)
150	"Before I opened the gate, I saw that he was in the company of another person. I did not identify who the other person was because we got information to the effect that his other driver had gone to Harare so I assumed it was him," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 42: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
155	He said <ack> after five minutes, he saw the vehicle lights going towards Gen Mujuru's shop and he did not see the vehicle return.	<b>Satellite 43: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<ack> Around midnight, he heard noise like exploding bullets from the direction of the main farm house.	<b>Satellite 44: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
160	He said <ack> later, another farm guard came to him and told him that there was fire at Gen Mujuru's house.	<b>Satellite 45: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<ack> They investigated and saw two policemen from Support Unit; one of them said they did not know where the "boss's bedroom" was.	<b>Satellite 46: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
165	"The police told me they did not call the fire brigade as they said they did not have a cellphone. They also said the police radio had broken down," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 47: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	One of the employees found Gen Mujuru's phone in his car and the maid called the Vice President.	<b>Satellite 48: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
170	After the fire had been put out, some high-ranking officials from Beatrice Police pointed at the remains of Gen Mujuru near a door leading to the dining room.	<b>Satellite 49: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of

		Mujuru)
175	Asked by Mrs Fero the identity of the other person in the car, he said <ack> <u>he did not check because he assumed it was the driver.</u>	<b>Satellite 50: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He said <ack> <u>the General <i>did not appear drunk</i> [j].</u>	<b>Satellite 51: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
180	Magistrate Chikwanha asked if they had gone to the main house to investigate what was going on when they heard the noise and Runhare said he did not because they were not allowed to go to the main house.	<b>Satellite 52: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
185	He said <ack> <u>at the time he thought the sound of gunshots was from poachers at the neighbouring farm.</u>	<b>Satellite 53: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	Mr Tendai Mundawarara, the General's nephew, asked if he searched the backseat of the car and Runhare said he had not.	<b>Satellite 54: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
190	After attending the fire, he thought the sounds he heard were from exploding asbestos.	<b>Satellite 55: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
195	When the hearing resumed after the lunch break, Constable Augustinos Chinyoka, who was providing security services for the Mujurus said <ack> <u>he saw Gen Mujuru sometime around 8pm and Constable Mark opened the gate for him.</u>	<b>Satellite 56: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<u>He saw something like a suit hanging in his car.</u>	<b>Satellite 57: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of

		Mujuru)
	Const Chinyoka said <ack> Gen Mujuru drove out after about 15 minutes and collected keys from the maid and told him that he was retiring to bed.	<b>Satellite 58: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
200	He said <ack> there was no electricity at the farm at that time and it was restored some minutes before 9pm.	<b>Satellite 59: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	He said <ack> he patrolled around the house three times while his two colleagues had gone to sleep.	<b>Satellite 60: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
205	Const Chinyoka said <ack> at around 2am, he saw that the roof was on fire and summoned his colleagues.	<b>Satellite 61: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
210	<ack> They broke into the house and realised that the fire was <b>intense</b> [ap] in the main bedroom and when they got inside, they saw the <b>smoke was getting thicker</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 62: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
215	<ack> He sent Const Mark to call the maid so she could show them the main bedroom and when she came she told them that the bedroom had been destroyed by fire.	<b>Satellite 63: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<ack> Some people from the compound were called to help put out the fire, which had now engulfed the house, using buckets of water.	<b>Satellite 64: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<ack> They salvaged a few items, including sofas.	<b>Satellite 65: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)

220	Under questioning by the family lawyer, Mr Takor Kewada of Scanlen and Holderness, who is holding a watching brief, Const Chinyoka said <ack> <u>he</u> and his colleagues could not access all the rooms as the <u>intense smoke</u> [ap] and <u>ferocious fire</u> [ap] that	<b>Satellite 66: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
225	had <u>engulfed the house</u> [ap] <u>overwhelmed</u> [ap] them.	
	Mr Kewada suggested to the witness that <ack> <u>they did not do enough to save Gen Mujuru</u> [j].	<b>Satellite 67: Appraisal</b> (Attributed tokenised evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
230	"I put it you that either you or your colleagues were sleeping, not doing your duty . . . as admitted by you that the fire started small and spread, [j]" <ack> said Mr Kewada.	<b>Satellite 68: Appraisal</b> (Attributed tokenised evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
235	Const Chinyoka said <ack> <u>he</u> could not tell the <u>ferocity</u> [ap] of the fire because it varies depending on the cause.	<b>Satellite 69: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given in the inquest and of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	Said Mr Kewada: <ack> <u>"Neither you nor your colleagues tried hard enough to rescue the General.</u> [j]"	<b>Satellite 70: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
240	Mr Kewada continues questioning Const Chinyoka today.	<b>Satellite 71: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
	VP Mujuru and 10 other witnesses are expected to testify today.	<b>Satellite 72: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
245	Mr Kewada <u>complained</u> [j] to the magistrate in the morning before the hearing was adjourned for lunch that <ack> <u>the State had not given him all the papers, but Mr Chimbare said the State did not know that the Mujuru family was represented.</u>	<b>Satellite 73: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
250	Mr Kewada said <ack> <u>he had also drafted another affidavit for the Vice President and the one drafted for her was inaccurate.</u>	<b>Satellite 74: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)

	Vice President Mujuru was <b>concerned</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] over the delay by the State to give her documents related to the investigation.	<b>Satellite 75: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of emotional impact/reaction to inquest)
255	VP Mujuru told journalists after the adjournment that <ack> <b>she had not been served with the documents presented to the inquest until yesterday afternoon</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 76: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
260	"We now have the papers. We still have time to look at the papers, we still have time to talk and give our input," <ack> she said.	<b>Satellite 77: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
	VP Mujuru described the inquest <ack> <b>as a <i>good start</i></b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 78: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
265	"It was a <i>good beginning</i> [ap], but in between the period of the inquest I was called by His Excellency the President (Cde Mugabe) since I am at work and then I came back later. Therefore some of the witnesses had already finished their business. It's going on very well. I am sure the <i>truth</i> [ap] will come out," <ack> she said.	<b>Satellite 79: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
270	Mr Kewada, said <ack> <b>the family had none of the documents presented to the inquest until lunch hour yesterday, apart from a letter from the police on the statement recorded from VP Mujuru.</b>	<b>Satellite 80: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
275	"That statement was <b>incorrect, not factual</b> [ap]. When I have a watching brief I make notes and report to my client. However, the court said relatives can ask questions that's why I had to grill the witnesses though totally unprepared," <ack> said Mr Kewada	<b>Satellite 81: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation and further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
280	He said <ack> <b>he was in a <i>difficult situation</i></b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 82: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest)

	"It's like putting me into a boxing ring with my hands tied on my back. My client has not seen some of the statements," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 83: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest)
285	Mr Kewada said <ack> the family was <i>co-operating</i> [j] with the police and everybody involved in the inquest.	<b>Satellite 84: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest)
	"We are not here to score points but to get to the bottom of the matter," <ack> said Mr Kewada.	<b>Satellite 85: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest)
290	<ack> "My client wants to know what transpired to her husband. There is a lot of <b>suspicion in the minds of the public</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] because he (Gen Mujuru) was a <i>seasoned fighter</i> [j], who had <i>lived in the bush</i> [j], <i>who could escape in such situations</i> [j]."	<b>Satellite 86: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest)

#### 4.6.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The propositions being made by this story are indicative to be aimed at some form of authorial endorsement of the state's arguments ruling out any foul play in the death of Mujuru. As has been discussed above, the death of Mujuru raised a lot of controversy regards the nature and causes of the death. As the analyses of the news reports of his death in section 4.5 indicate, there was an outcry of suspicion from the private owned media especially, who 'screamed' 'foul play'. For example, the *Zimbabwe Independent* reported on the eve of his death, in light of this, that: 'Mujuru's relatives, friends and political allies who spoke to the *Zimbabwe Independent* since Tuesday have been crying "murder most foul" as facts about the events and circumstances leading to his death become clear, pointing to a damning conclusion of a sinister plot.'<sup>24</sup> Furthermore, on the eve of the conclusion of the inquest the same publication made the conclusions that: 'If anything, the inquest has left Zimbabweans and Mujuru's allies and family crying "murder most foul".'<sup>25</sup> The authorial voice in the news report takes a position that there was no foul play in the death. This authorial position is backgrounded in both the headline of the news report with the declarative '**Explosives ruled**

<sup>24</sup> "Mujuru allies cry 'murder most foul'" – *Zimbabwe Independent*, Friday, 19 August, 2011.

<sup>25</sup> "Mujuru inquest: contradictions, more suspicions" – *Zimbabwe Independent*, Thursday, 9 February, 2012.

**out'** (001) as well as the first paragraph (003 – 008) through endorsements of the authorial evaluative declarative by an external source – the state prosecutor. This is done by calling on the presentation of evidence by the state that there were no indications of explosives or inflammables which would suggest arson or foul play in support of the invoked authorial stance suggested in the title of the news story.

In the subsequent paragraphs, the report chronicles the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru as chronologically narrated by witnesses during the inquest. It does so by ensuring that nothing is said in an inscribed manner by the author. A perfunctory glance at the news story presents evidence that the story attempts to portray a 'neutral' stance. From a configuration of the reporter voice, the report exhibits very little explicit journalistic subjectivities and most of the attitudinal meanings are occurring in attributed material. Despite an establishable ploy to downplay possibilities of foul play, the news report 'controversially' makes use of claims to the contrary though these are framed in attribution. By so doing, it distances itself from the claims made on possibilities of foul play, which subsequently are framed in attribution. Furthermore the report, on a surface level, can be seen to make little, if any, attempts of journalistic subjectivities embedded in attributed material.

On the other hand though, through the choices made at both lexical as well as syntactic levels, we are able to discern a bias towards the notion of no foul play in the death. There are nuances of authorial bias and subjectivities that we can glean from the report that point to an authorial support/bias towards the claims of no foul play committed. A consistent authorial insistence on claim for the lack of evidence of foul play, which is endorsed through attributed material as well as a reliance on the prosecution's claims, while at the same time downplaying arguments and claims to the contrary which are emanating from the family of the deceased and are thus structurally relegated to the last sections of the report, point to such subjectivities. This is so, as in terms of arrangement of matter in news reports, according to the models for hard news such as the 'inverted pyramid' as well as the 'orbital structure', it is information that the report regards as most important that always appears at the beginning of the report and chaff or peripheral issues are relegated to the end of the report, in which, in this case, claims of foul play are treated as such as they are only 'properly' addressed towards the end of the report and all handled through attribution without the authorial endorsements that the 'no foul claim' have.

In terms of evaluations, the news report evinces a low probability of both authorial and attributed inscriptions. The larger parts of the satellites of the news report perform the ‘elaboration’ role and thus serve merely to specify the evidence given at the inquest in a non evaluative manner.

#### 4.6.2. *Newsday* (16 January, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru inquest begins <i>Charles Laiton: Senior Court Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announcement that inquest into Mujuru’s death has begun)
005  010	The <b>long-awaited</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] inquest hearing into the <b>mysterious death</b> [ap] of Zimbabwe’s <i>most decorated</i> [j] army commander, Retired General Solomon Mujuru, opens at the Harare Magistrates Court today with forensic experts from South Africa expected to play a vital role in what will <i>undoubtedly</i> [ap] be the <i>most high-profile inquiry</i> [ap] of the year.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal/Evaluation)</b> (Authorial evaluation of timing of inquest. Restatement of headline – the beginning of the inquest)
015	The hearing is a <b>highly sensitive</b> [ap] matter following the <b>perplexing death</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] of the general, whose nom de guerre during the liberation struggle was Rex Nhongo, in an inferno at his Alamein Farm, Beatrice, in August last year.	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal/Cause and Effect</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the inquest and reasons for the inquest – the death of Mujuru)
020	Walter Chikwanha, a regional magistrate in the Chief Magistrates Office, will, on behalf of the Judiciary Service Commission (JSC), <i>preside over</i> [ap] the <b>highest-profile inquest ever to be conducted since independence</b> [ap], at the Harare Magistrates Court beginning today.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specification of the inquest proceedings and authorial evaluations of the significance of the inquest)
	JSC Deputy Secretary Rex Shana told NewsDay <ack> <u>Chikwanha would be the <i>man in charge</i> [j] of the inquiry.</u>	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
025	Shana said: <ack> <u>Chikwanha will <i>take charge</i> [j] of the proceedings, and I wouldnt know who will stand in for the Attorney-General (AG)’s Office</u>	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)

	since it is a different department.	
030	The Director of Public Prosecutions in the AGs Office, Chris Mutangadura, could not comment as he said <ack> he was out of office, and as such could not discuss the matter.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
035	But, a court official who declined to be named said <ack> area public prosecutor Jonathan Murombedzi could lead evidence from several witnesses lined up that include civilians, security officers and <i>forensic experts</i> [j] from South Africa in Court Number 8.	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
040  045	Hundreds of people are <b>expected to overwhelm the Harare Magistrates Court</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] amid <b>concerns</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] <b>of limited courtroom space</b> [ap] to accommodate interested parties, including the families of the late general and his widow Vice-President Joice Mujuru, relatives, friends, business partners, Zanu PF supporters and top politicians including ministers.	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal/Cause and Effect</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the inquest, and of expected turnout and significance as well as reasons for the inquest – the death of Mujuru)
	It could, however, not be ascertained whether VP Mujuru would attend the hearings and whether she would also present evidence before the magistrate.	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration/ Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual assessment of the inquest)
050  055	The inquest is <b>expected to bring into the open</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] how the <i>highly decorated</i> [j] Mujuru died in August last year [ap]. Mujurus charred remains were found in his farmhouse which was <b>razed down</b> [ap] in <b>an inferno whose cause has remained a mystery</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of expected outcome of inquest, of the cause of death and JUDGEMENT evaluation of Mujuru)
	There was <b>widespread suspicion</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] of <b>foul play</b> [ap] as <b>confusing</b> [ap] and often <b>conflicting statements</b> [ap] were proffered from various quarters.	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation and further specification of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru and evidence presented at the inquest)
060	The Vice-Presidents husband was a <i>vital cog</i> [j] in Zanu PFs <b>divisive political power games</b> [ap] in which he was regarded as <i>the kingmaker</i> [j]. He	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Authorial evaluation and

065	reportedly <ack> <b>led one of the two main factions in the former ruling party fighting to succeed President Robert Mugabe (88).</b> The other faction is widely believed to be led by Defence minister Emmerson Mnangagwa, a long-time Mugabe ally.	extratextual information on Mujuru and his historical background)
070	Since Mujuru's death, Zimbabwe has been <b>gripped with anxiety</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] over <b>delays</b> [j] by the police to release the outcome of their investigations and the opening of the inquest.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reactions to the death of Mujuru)
	The inquest is <b>expected to determine</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af?] whether Mujuru died before or during the fire and further establish what may have caused the inferno.	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reactions to the death of Mujuru and expectation of the outcome of the inquest)
075	After that, the court would recommend the way forward. An inquest is a judicial investigation conducted by a judge or government official into sudden and unexplained deaths.	<b>Satellite 14: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual specification of possible consequences of inquest into Mujuru's death)
080	Mujuru, <i>a key figure</i> [j] in Zanu PF's <b>internal struggles</b> [ap] over President Mugabe's succession [ap], was 67 when he died.	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Evaluation of and extratextual information of Mujuru's historical background)

#### 4.6.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

In line with the tone set out by this publication in its 'announcement' of the death of Mujuru, this news report presents itself as a continuation of the propositions made by the same publication in the earlier reports, that is, that the General's death was suspicious. With a context of the nature of talk within Zimbabwean, particularly ZANU PF politics, the news report is framed in such a manner that attempts to convince the reader that the death of Mujuru could have been a ZANU PF inside job, or at least 'forces' the reader to consider the possibility of such through the continuous invocations of the factionalism and 'divisive power politics' ensuing within the political party. This would not be a far-fetched conclusion especially so considering the incessant claims and 'beliefs' within Zimbabwean society supporting the possibility of such.

Nuances of factional wars give out an aura of possible political execution, something that is not so new in Zimbabwean political discourses. Within the private owned media for example, there were claims made that ‘[i]nside sources have informed ... that the death of former Zimbabwe army commander General Solomon Mujuru may have been the product of a political agenda under fire. Some have suggested that the convenient death of the shrewd politician might have been part of the acrimonious battle to succeed long-time leader President Robert Mugabe.’<sup>26</sup> In the news report, there also are instances in which we might not be able to mark the attitudinal resources, especially those of AFFECT in the text but we encounter statements that are suggestive in an implied manner, where ‘the positive/negative viewpoint is activated via various mechanisms of association and implicature’ (White and Thomson, 2008: 11) and which can be referred to as ‘tokenised statements’.

White and Thomson (2008) refer to them as attitudinal ‘invocations’ or attitudinal ‘tokens’. For example, the use of such resources as, ‘**an inferno whose cause has remained a mystery**’ (054 – 055) as appraisal of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru as well as ‘**long awaited**’ (003), ‘**highly sensitive**’ (011), ‘**the inquest is expected to determine...**’ (072), ‘**[the] inquest is expected to bring into the open...**’ (050) and ‘**[people] expected to overwhelm the...court**’ (039 – 040) as evaluations of the inquest are evidence of authorial attitudinal evaluations suggestive of a lack of satisfaction with explanations of the circumstances of the death of Mujuru on the part of the authorial voice which evoke an attitudinal stance on the part of the ‘reporter’. These are however framed to read as authorial observed ‘reactions of the greater public’ with regards to the official cause of death tendered by the police and government. Of note is that the evaluations of observed anxiety and widespread suspicions on the part of ‘the nation/those in attendance’ made through the authorial voice are not framed in attribution and thus subject to assessments and evaluation of the authorial voice.

Several instances of the propagation of apparent authorial claims are also evident, unsubstantiated by attribution and therefore possible to align to the reporter’s subjectivities, that there is a general public dissatisfaction with the causes of death officially announced by the government through the police. This is espoused through the attitudinal resources such as ‘**long awaited** [inquest]’, ‘**[public] gripped with anxiety**’ which suggest a universal quest to unearth the ‘truth’ as well as in part a sense of universality and unison. This views is further

---

<sup>26</sup> “Mugabe fingered in Mujuru death” – *Nehanda Radio*, Tuesday 13 September, 2011.

substantiated by the proliferation of instances of both explicit and implicit authorial attitudinal expressions used in the text that signal the position of the author regards the inquest as well as the death.

Overt inscribed resources such as the description of the death of Mujuru as a ‘**mysterious death**’ (004) and a ‘**perplexing death**’ (012) evince unattributed tokens of evaluative use of language that can only be ascribed to the authorial voice. The descriptions made of the inquest proceedings themselves as characterised by ‘**widespread suspicions of foul play**’ (056 – 057) and the evaluations of the testimonies of the witnesses as ‘**confusing and often conflicting statements**’ (057 – 058) also express a subjective position of assessment taken by the authorial voice and which subjectively positions the authorial voice in relation to the news report’s propositions and the reading position created by the news report.

#### 4.6.3. *Zimbabwe Independent* (26 January, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru inquest: <b><u>More questions than answers</u></b> [ap] <i>Faith Zaba</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised Headline: Proposition that inquest into Mujuru’s death has yielded evidence of suspicions)
005	THE inquest into former army commander General Solomon Mujuru’s death entered its second week at the Magistrate’s Court, with revelations which can <b>best be described as</b> [ent] <b><u>nothing else but explosive</u></b> [ap].	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/ Appraisal)</b> (Restatement of the propositions of the headline and authorial inscribed evaluation of the inquest so far)
010	Mujuru was <b><u>burnt to ashes</u></b> [ap/j] under <b><u>unclear circumstances</u></b> [ap] at his Alamein Farm in Beatrice on August 16 2011 and <b>the inquest will try to determine the origins of the fire and cause of his death.</b>	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal/ Cause and Effect</b> (Evaluation of the circumstances of the death and specification of the reason for the inquest)
015  020	The <b><u>long-awaited</u></b> [ap] inquest has <b><u>raised more questions than answers</u></b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] into the death of one of Zimbabwe’s <i>most influential politicians</i> [j]. He was one of the <i>faction leaders</i> [j] and a <i>kingmaker</i> [j] in Zanu PF. His death was not only <b><u>robbed his faction</u></b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af], but also Zanu PF of the <i>only remaining person</i> [j] who <i>could challenge</i> [j]	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the timing of the inquest and of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru)

	President Robert Mugabe openly and tell him to retire.	
	The inquest has <i>unravelled</i> [ap] <b>shocking details</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] of the night the <i>national hero</i> [j] died.	<b>Satellite 3: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the evidence presented at the inquest)
025	Blue flame Policemen who retrieved Mujuru's remains from his farmhouse told the court this week that the body was <b>engulfed in blue flames</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the details of the 'shocking' evidence presented at the inquest)
030	<b>The fire was not easily extinguished</b> [ap] and actually became <b>ferocious</b> [ap] when water was poured on it.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the details of the 'shocking' evidence presented at the inquest and evaluation of the cause of death – the fire)
035	Constable Cletwell Garisai of Beatrice Police Station and the officer-in-charge, Inspector Simon Dube, who attended the scene, graphically described the hours after Mujuru's body was found in his <b>razed farmhouse</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specification of the proceedings of the inquest and authorial inscribed evaluation of the cause of death – the fire)
040	Garisai said <ack> [Mujuru's <b>charred</b> [ap] body was <b>engulfed in flames</b> [ap] <b>different in colour from those surrounding it</b> [ap]. The <b>bluish fire</b> [ap] covered the body to a radius of about 30 cm around the body], which he said <ack> [was lying face down with both legs and arms <b>severely burnt</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the circumstances surrounding Mujuru's death: the burnt body of Mujuru, the scene of death and the cause of death – the fire)
045	The two told the court that <ack> [the <b>blue flames</b> [ap] that <b>engulfed</b> [ap] Mujuru's body were so <b>intense</b> [ap] that when they tried to put them out with water, they would reignite. They had to pour at least 10 buckets of water to douse the flames.]	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation and specification of the circumstances surrounding Mujuru's death: the burnt body of Mujuru, the scene of death and the cause of death – the fire)
050	Garisai said: [Some of the people (who were gathered at the scene) identified a <b>bluish flame</b> [ap] in one of the rooms and I peeped through a window and saw an object which resembled a human body with ...arms folded as if to cover the face, as it lay	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation and specification of the circumstances surrounding Mujuru's death: the burnt body of Mujuru, the

	prostrate on the floor.”]	scene of death and the cause of death – the fire)
055	“The <b>bluish flame</b> [ap] emanated from the body, <b>suffice to say the colour of the other surrounding flames was different from that around the area of the body</b> . And the flame was emanating from the remains of the body and also 30 cm around the	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation and specification of the circumstances surrounding Mujuru’s death: the burnt body of Mujuru, the scene of death and the cause of death – the fire)
060	body and there was smoke coming from the abdomen.”]	
065	Dube said: <ack> “Lungs and intestines were <b>burnt extensively</b> [ap] and the head was now just a skull.” He also stated that <ack> he had seen “ <b>strange</b> [ap] blue flames” coming from the General’s abdomen]	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation and specification of the circumstances surrounding Mujuru’s death: the burnt body of Mujuru, the scene of death and the cause of death – the fire)
070	Fire Brigade testimony Station Officer for Harare Fire Brigade Clever Mafoti said <ack> <i>indications</i> [ap] were that the fire could have emanated from two sources, a phenomenon usually associated with cases of <b>arson</b> [ap]. In rare cases, the fire may be as a result of a <b>short circuit</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 12: Elaboration</b> (Specifications of the possible sources of the fire – the cause of death)
075	After being asked <ack> whether it was possible to have two sources of fire, Mafoti said: <ack> “It is <i>possible</i> [ap] if it’s in cases involving <b>arson</b> [ap] when the fire has been started by a person with an <b>unsound mind</b> [j] or in a situation where a <b>short circuit</b> [ap] of electricity would have occurred.	<b>Satellite 13: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the possible sources of the fire – the cause of death)
080	This <b>short circuit</b> [ap] can happen where a number of electrical gadgets would have been overloaded at one point.”]	
085	<b>The key factor</b> Mujuru’s maid Rosemary Short <i>revealed</i> [j] last week that <ack> the key to the front door of the farmhouse was missing from the bunch of keys found in the bedroom. That was the same bunch of keys the General said he had left in Harare. In addition to the missing key, Mujuru’s car was parked near the front door, whose very key was	<b>Satellite 14: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specification of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru and authorial inscribed evaluation of the evidence of the inquest focusing on the ‘more questions that answers’ claim of headline: ‘the key factor’)



120	Does a burning human body naturally produce a blue flame and why was this concentrated on Mujuru's body and area surrounding it? Under what circumstances would this happen? What types of chemicals produce blue fire?	circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru through proclamations)
125	How long does it take for a body to burn to an extent where its left arm is burnt to ashes up to elbow level, both lower limbs burn to ashes up to knee level and most internal organs severely burn and some in cases, are absent?	
130	How long would it take for the fire to burn a body to that level and at what temperatures? There are too many pieces that need piecing. So what happened that night?	
135	<b>INQUEST TIMELINE. . .</b> <b>Day 1</b> Clemence Runhare (security guard) <ack> Gen Mujuru arrives at the farm at 8.00pm. He was in the company of an unidentified male partner. General not drunk. At midnight I heard	<b>Satellite 21: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
140	gunshots.	
145	Augustine Chinyoka (Police officer). <ack> Gen Mujuru was alone and appeared drunk. He had a suit at the backseat. At 2.00am I saw the fire. Had patrolled three times. Fire brigade arrived at 5am after I had phoned them at 2am	<b>Satellite 22: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
150	Obert Mark (Police officer) <ack> Was in cottage at 11.00am. Mujuru was drunk because he stammered as he spoke and had bloodshot eyes. Mujuru went to sleep at 9pm, the same time as Hamandikari.	<b>Satellite 23: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<b>Day 2</b> Inquest halted	<b>Satellite 24: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
	<b>Day 3</b> Rosemary Short <b>breaks down</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] in court	<b>Satellite 25: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b>

155  160	<p>while giving <b>an account</b> [ap] of her reaction on hearing that the farmhouse was on fire. She tells the inquest that &lt;ack&gt; <b>the candle in Mujuru's bedroom</b> was about 7cm long and was properly secured in a <b>saucer</b>. Vice-President Mujuru reveals that &lt;ack&gt; <b>her husband's vehicle had been suspiciously parked</b> [ap] the day he died.</p>	(Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to Mujuru's death and further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
165  170  175	<p><b>Day 4</b> Rosemary Short (housemaid) Tells the court that &lt;ack&gt; <b>General Mujuru did not trust police guards and had considered replacing them. Relationship between Mujuru and the police had deteriorated</b> [ap] after police severely assaulted a farmworker. Says &lt;ack&gt; <b>Obert Mark</b> told her the noise which she thought were gun shots was caused by bursting asbestos. She says &lt;ack&gt; <b>Mujuru's car keys were never recovered. The bedroom keys which Mujuru had said he forgot in Harare were found in his bedroom. Mujuru looked sober though it showed he had had a few drinks.</b> She said &lt;ack&gt; <b>she heard what sounded like gunshots but had thought it was normal as police had previously told her they fire shots to scare intruders or kill snakes.</b></p>	<b>Satellite 26: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
180  185	<p><b>Day 5</b> Tawanda Madondo (gardener) Told the court &lt;ack&gt; <b>he was summoned by police officer at 02:20 am to go and show him the General's bedroom. They took 30 minutes to get to the scene and several buckets of water poured on body to extinguish flames. Saw the general's body through the window and it had been burnt</b> [j/ap].</p>	<b>Satellite 27: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
190	<p><b>Day 6</b> Steven Harinyeni (clerk) Concurred with Madondo and added that &lt;ack&gt; <b>body was still on fire when he saw it.</b> Mujuru family lawyer Thakor Kewada queried &lt;ack&gt; <b>why police wasted time by running three kilometres to compound to ask workers to show them general's</b></p>	<b>Satellite 28: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)

	bedroom instead of breaking windows and try and find the general.	
195 200 205 210	<p><b>Day 7</b> Cletwell Garisai (Police) Tells court &lt;ack&gt; he retrieved the charred remains of General Mujuru from his farmhouse. Disclosed that &lt;ack&gt; there was a gaping hole in the General's abdomen. Also said &lt;ack&gt; the body was engulfed in bluish flames that were different in colour from the surrounding flames. Said &lt;ack&gt; the blue flames were so intense that they would re-ignite when water was poured on them. They poured at least 10 buckets of water to finally douse the flames. Flames came from body and the 30cm area around the body. Smoke was coming from the abdomen. Together with constables identified as Manokore, Gonti and Mhundwa, they were tasked by Deputy Commissioner-General Godwin Matanga to remove the General's remains and put them in a plastic bag.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 29: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)</p>
215 220 225	<p>Simon Dube (Inspector) Concurred with Garisai and added that &lt;ack&gt; legs were burnt up to the ankles. Arms also burnt to area just before the wrists. Instructed to gather all debris that included hard objects and ashes which were taken to One Commando Barracks. Cordoned off the area after the arrival of VP Mujuru, Commander Perance Shiri, Minister Kembo Mohadi and David Parirenyatwa, who all viewed the charred body. Only the chest had bits of flesh. At One Commando mortuary, Doctor Annamore Jamu certified that the remains were those of a human being. Beatrice Police Station did not have transport from March to August 16 2011 and police were forced to ask for assistance from a neighbouring farm.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 30: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings, evidence given and the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)</p>
	Mujuru family lawyer, Thakor Kewada said <ack> it was <b>unlikely</b> [ap] the police guards would have phoned to report the fire.	<p><b>Satellite 31: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)</p>

#### 4.6.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The propositions made in the news report inadvertently overtly position the author subjectively to the claims that there is more to what meets the eye in the story of the death of Mujuru. The news report thus, flouts the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration with regards its propositions to the attainment of an evaluative key that does not position the reporter subjectively. Such a subjective stance is overtly evinced by a high proliferation of both overt and invoked attitudinal meanings that from a cursory glance we can discern from the choices made on both lexical and syntactic resources. For example, such a tone is set out from the onset through the title of the report which suggests that in the inquest there are ‘**more questions than answers**’ (001). Structurally, and in keeping with the prototypical ‘hard news’ report, the propositions made by the headline, that assert an implicit authorial stance that the inquest had ‘**unravelling shocking details**’ (023) of the cause of death of the General, suggesting in the process a reinforcement of the claims made in the earlier reports by the same publication of foul play, are followed through throughout the story. For example, the ‘**more questions than answers**’ (001) claim made in the headline, which is not framed and thus pointing towards subjective authorial assessments and evaluations is reinforced in paragraph 3 of the report through a repetition of the same claim verbatim. Also, it is further reaffirmed through such evaluative statements made through the authorial voice that the death as occurring ‘**under unclear circumstances**’ (009 – 010).

The stance taken by the authorial voice in the news report is suggestive that something is amiss in the explanations tendered as causes of Mujuru’s death, especially so in light of ‘new’ evidence given by witnesses in court is further espoused throughout the news report. There is an incessant insistence on the contradictory manner of the evidence given in court which evinces an authorial attempt to downplay the evidence initially proffered by the police. For example, the use of such evaluative and attitudinal clauses such as ‘**long awaited**’ (014), ‘**raised more questions than answers**’ (014 – 015) and ‘**unravelling shocking details**’ (023) to describe the proceedings and evidence of the inquest explicitly positions the author evaluatively in terms of their stance on both the initial police evidence and the ‘new’ evidence given at the inquest. The choice of descriptive clauses suggests an evaluation by the author of a collective anxiety and dissatisfaction on the part of the nation, a claim that is not substantiated further by attributed material to an external source and which we can thus attribute to the author. This implicit conviction of the author is further evidenced by suggestions that the inquest has ‘**unravelling shocking details**’ (023), an evaluation that is

suggestive that someone is/was withholding pertinent information or that there is/was a hidden dimension to the death of Mujuru and/or the explanation tendered for it.

The news report also makes heavy use of overt authorial proclamations, evidence of which points to a high proliferation of inscribed attitudinal subjectivities on the part of the reporter. Such proclamations, which Van and Thomson (2008) espouses as referent to those instances when the speaker or writer makes overt interventions into the text which ‘present themselves as challenging and dismissing some alternative viewpoints’, are made use of through the approach in which the author questions the manner in which the forensic and fire experts have allegedly failed to determine the causes of a ‘**blue/bluish flame**’ (027, 038, 043, 054, 064) which the authorial voice feels, as textual evidence suggests, is key to finding the ‘true’ cause of Mujuru’s death. Also, the allegedly missing keys to Mujuru’s house and the suspected gunshot sounds are prominently focused on by the news report to the extent of being sub-headed. Such proclamation are evaluatively made through the following sections (109 – 133) of the news report, in which the reporter poses challenging questions to both the evidence proffered by police and other cited experts as well as to the experts themselves in light if the ‘**new shocking evidence**’,

The question which many Zimbabweans are now asking is <proc> why the fire on Mujuru’s body was blue and different from surrounding flames.

<proc> The forensic and fire experts should tell the court when they testify what produced the blue flame and under what temperatures such fire is produced. Can a mere candle, as was initially claimed by the police, produce different colours of the flames?

<proc> Here are some of the questions that beg answers from the fire and forensic experts:

Does a burning human body naturally produce a blue flame was and why was this concentrated on Mujuru’s body and area surrounding it?

Under what circumstances would this happen?

What types of chemicals produce blue fire?

How long does it take for a body to burn to an extent where its left arm is burnt to ashes up to elbow level, both lower limbs burn to ashes up to knee level and most internal organs severely burn and some in cases, are absent?

How long would it take for the fire to burn a body to that level and at what temperatures?

There are too many pieces that need piecing. So what happened that night?

We observe here that the ‘queries’ raised here are not attributed to an external source and are thus attributable to both inscribed and invoked authorial assessments and evaluations of the circumstances under review by the inquest thus, in the process locating the authorial subjectivities through which the news report deviates from both the ‘objectivity’ ideal as it relates to the textual as well as discourse structure of the ‘hard’ news report as well as the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. In addition, the report gives evidence of a deliberate focus on the images and ‘evidence’ that force the reader to take a particular reading position. This position is made clear for the reader through both overt and implicit authorial inscriptions. It is important to observe that the creation of such a reading position is also reliant on what White (1998) refers to as a concern, ‘not so much with the views which are explicitly expressed by the authorial voice, but with the underlying beliefs, systems of knowledge and expectations which the text assumes and relies upon in the construction of meaning’. I present this argument by observing that the manner in which the report is framed echoes the propositions made in the earlier reports in the same publication. Authorial intimations of bias are also demonstrated through the manner in which the news report, through satellites of ‘elaboration’ chronologically reproduces the court proceedings in a manner emphatically grounding especially the testimony that endorses the authorial stance – that there was foul play.

#### 4.6.4. *Kwayedza* (19 Ndira/January, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ENGLISH TRANSLATION	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Tsvakurudzo dzekufa kwaGen. Mujuru dzakatanga <i>neMunyori weKwayedza</i>	The inquest into the death of Gen Mujuru has begun <i>Kwayedza Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announcement that the inquest into the death of Mujuru has begun)
005  010	TSVAKURUDZO dzekuona chakakonzera rufu rwegamba <i>renyika</i> [j], General Solomon Mujuru, avo vakashaika <b><u>munjodzi yemoto</u></b> [ap] gore rakapera muna Nyamavhuvhu dzakatanga neMuvhuro svondo rino kudare reHarare Magistrates’ Courts.	THE INQUEST into the causes of the death of national hero, General Solomon Mujuru who died in a <b><u>fire accident</u></b> [ap] in August last year began at the Harare Magistrates’ Courts on Monday this week.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restatement of the headline – that the inquest into the death of Mujuru has begun)
	Tsvakurudzo idzi dzakatanga	The investigations/inquest	<b>Satellite 1:</b>

015	apo zvapupu zvakati kuti zvakamiswa pamberi pedare iri zvichipa humbowo.	began with several witnesses appearing in court to testify and give evidence.	<b>Elaboration</b> (Specification of the proceedings of the inquest)
020	Gen Mujuru <i>vane nhoroondo yakakura kwazvo munyika ino yeZimbabwe</i> [j] kubvira mumazuva avo vari <i>murwi wehondo yerusununguko</i> [j] <i>pavaitungamirira hondo</i> [j].	Gen Mujuru <i>has a huge history in the country</i> [j] spanning from the days he was a <i>liberation war fighter</i> [j], when <i>he was leading in the war</i> [j].	<b>Satellite 2: Intertextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Specification and authorial inscribed evaluation of Mujuru's history/ background)
025	Vakave <i>mukuru wekutanga</i> [j] wemauto eZimbabwe akabatanidzwa aisanganisira ZIPRA, ZANLA neRhodesian Army <i>pakawana nyika kuzvitonga kuzere</i> [ap].	He was <i>the first commander</i> [j] of the combined ZIPRA, ZANLA and Rhodesian army <i>when the country attained independence.</i> [ap]	<b>Satellite 3: Intertextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification and authorial inscribed evaluation of Mujuru's history/ background)
030	Vakafa muna Nyamavhuvhu gore rakapera mushure mekunge imba yavo yabatira moto izvo <i>zviri kuferefetwa</i> [ap] nedare reHarare Magistrates' Court iri.	He died in August last year after his house caught fire, the fire accident that the Harare Magistrates' Court <i>is currently investigating</i> [ap].	<b>Satellite 4: Cause and Effect</b> (Specification of the reasons for the inquest – the death of Mujuru – and the consequences of the death – investigations)
035 040	Parizvino <i>vanamazvikokota</i> [j] <i>vari kubvumirana</i> [ap] kuti Gen Mujuru vakafa mumoto uyu asi mibvunzo yakawanda iri pamafiro avo, izvo zviri kuda kupepetwa nedare iri.	Currently, <i>experts</i> [j] <i>are agreed</i> [ap] that Gen Mujuru died in a fire but questions abound regards the nature and cause of the death, which again is what this court is investigating.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the initial findings of the inquest and the investigation into the death of Mujuru)
045	Kubva kune zvakubuda kubva kuzvapupu zviri kunzi <ack> <b>hapana zvombo kana mafuta anoputika akashandiswa pakufa kwaGen Mujuru</b> [ap].	From the evidence given by witnesses in court, it is said that <ack> <b>no weapons or flammable fluids were used in the death of Gen Mujuru.</b> [ap]	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Attributed tokenised evaluation and specification of the initial findings of the inquest and the investigation into the death of Mujuru)
	Mai Sharon Fero avo vaimirira	Appearing for the state, Mrs	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b>

050	<p>Hurumende vakati &lt;ack&gt;  kubva pahumbowo [ap]  hwakawanikwa hapana  chairatidza kuti moto uyu  waiva wakonzerwa nekuda  kwekusafamba zvakanaka  kwemoto wemagetsi.</p>	<p>Sharon Fero said &lt;ack&gt;  from the <i>evidence</i> [ap]  collected, there is no  evidence that the fire that  killed Gen Mujuru was as a  result of an electrical fault.</p>	<p>(Specification of the proceeding of the inquest and evidence presented at the inquest)</p>
055  060	<p><i>Huchapupu</i> [ap] hwakapihwa nemapurisa pamwewo nevashandi vepapurazi reGen Mujuru <i>hunotaridza</i> [ap] kuti <b>njo-dzi iyi yakaitika apo magetsi akange adzoka mushure mekunge aenda kwekanguva [ap].</b></p>	<p><i>Evidence</i> [ap] given by both the police and workers at Mujuru's farm indicates that <b>the accident occurred soon after restoration from electricity after a brief power cut [ap].</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 7: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b>  (Further specification of proceedings of the inquest and attributed evaluation of the circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)</p>
	<p>Tsvakurudzo idzi dzichiri kunderera mberi mudare iri. – <i>Kwayedza</i>.</p>	<p>The inquest continues in this court. - <i>Kwayedza</i></p>	<p><b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b>  (Further specification of the proceedings of the inquest)</p>

#### 4.6.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The proliferation of authorial attitudinal evaluations is kept at a bare minimum in this news report. The authorial stance is not overtly expressed. However, nuances that implicitly position the author subjectively are also evident in the news report. In terms of generic structure, that is, the satisfaction of the textual and rhetorical structures as well as the satisfaction of the 'reporter voice' configuration, the news report represent a good case of a 'hard news' report. The news report can thus be judged to be in conformity to the 'objectivity' ideal.

Structurally and rhetorically, the news reports exhibits cohesion between the headline and the lead, which also flows through the rest of the news report. I would observe however, that there are instances of what White (1998) refers to as 'tokenised' authorial inscriptions that point to an authorial conviction that the death was due to a 'fire accident' ('**munjodzi yemoto**') (008) and also that 'there were no weapons or flammable fluids used in the death of Gen Mujuru' ('**hapana zvombo kana mafuta anoputika akashandiswa pakufa kwaGen Mujuru**') (042 – 045). While the latter claims are framed in attribution, attributed to evidence given in court,

we observe that it is in support of the implicit propositions made by the report that the death was due to an accident. Another instance of such veiled evaluation is made through the implicit inscription that, ‘**Huchapupu hwakapihwa nemapurisa pamwewo nevashandi vepapurazi reGen Mujuru hunotaridza kuti njodzi iyi yakaitika apo magetsi akange adzoka mushure mekunge aenda kwekanguva**’ ([e]vidence given by both the police and workers at Mujuru’s farm indicates that the accident occurred soon after the restoration from electricity after a brief power cut’) (054 – 061), a claim that exhibits an authorial attempt to create a reading position from which the fire being a result of an electrical fault becomes a possibility to consider for the reader. These propositions are however countered in the news report but intimations of the inconclusiveness of the initial findings presented by the police captured through the proposition (035 – 040) that,

Parizvino *vanamazvikokota* [j] *vari kubvumirana* [ap] kuti Gen Mujuru vakafa mumoto uyu asi mibvunzo yakawanda iri pamafiro avo, izvo zviri kuda kupepetwa nedare iri.

Loosely translated to,

([c]urrently, *experts* [j] are *in agreement* [ap] that Gen Mujuru died in a fire but questions abound regards the nature and cause of the death [and of the fire], which again is what this court is investigating.)

This thus brings about a sense of balance to the story and exposes veiled nuances of authorial subjectivities. Authorial evaluations are minimal and thus the ‘reporter voice’ configuration is satisfied while the ‘objectivity’ ideal is satisfactorily addressed.

#### 4.6.5. Comparative analytic perspective

The Appraisal analyses of the news reports announcing the beginning of the inquest into Mujuru’ death present us with evidence of the perpetuation of the political power games that have, as has been explained earlier on, for the past decade characterised the Zimbabwean media landscape. Because of the politically volatile nature of the death of Mujuru especially for ZANU PF, especially so considering both the fact that Mujuru was historically an iconic figure within the party as well as the ‘claims’ made by the private owned media on the possibilities of the death being a ZANU PF inside job, the ‘national’ newspaper, *The Herald* as evidence suggests, adopts a ‘neutral’ point of view. Bearing in mind that the initial police report has intimated that there was no suspicions of foul play in the death, *The Herald* adopts

this official position and thus the report is characterised by attitudinal resources of APPRECIATION. There are nuances of authorial evaluations of the evidence given in the inquest and as such an attempt to validate the ‘no foul play’ claim. This evaluative position is also endorsed by the state owned vernacular newspaper, *Kwayedza*, which also though in a subtle way, as discussed in the analysis of its news report on the same done above, assumes an authorial position that also downplays the possibilities of foul play. This is evidenced for example by the endorsement, in *The Herald*, of the witnesses’ as well as the state’s evidence’s claims that there was no foul play. Of significance in this regard, is that despite such a claim by *The Herald*, of such evidence emanating from witnesses, it would emerge during the progression of the inquest that infact, the larger part of the witnesses made testimonies that are suggestive of the contrary.

In making its case for example, *The Herald*, through the use of the resources of APPRECIATION, presents evidence in which there is a reinforcement/endorsement of such a position. Declarative claims such as the headline’s ‘...: **Explosive ruled out**’ and the lead’s ‘**evidence that no traces of explosives or inflammable liquids had been found**’ espouse such an authorial evaluative stance. Such a stance is further reinforced in the news report through confirmations attributed to external sources. Throughout the report, the authorial voice expresses a conviction that there was no foul play. This is done through the deliberate authorial affirmations that there was little that could have been done to save the General. Descriptions of the intensity of the fire and overt expressions of ‘all possible having been done’ reverberate through the news report. On the other hand, the private owned newspapers, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday*, in line with the thesis established before about their political inclinations of aggression towards ZANU PF, continue to assume the authorial role that fingers ZANU PF as responsible for the death of Mujuru. This is manifest through both explicit and implicit authorial evaluations.

A continuation of earlier established positions by the publications can be observed. The continuation by the above news reports from both the publications of the description of Mujuru’s death through resources of APPRECIATION as ‘**perplexing**’, ‘**shocking**’ and ‘**mysterious**’ espouse a perpetuation of the belief established by the newspapers earlier on that there was foul play. Such a conviction in both reports is not only implicitly espoused by material framed in attribution but also through overt inscriptions that opine such a stance too

as well as through instances of evocation and provocation. I argue for example that in the *Newsday* report such evocations as to suggest that,

The Vice-President's husband was a *vital cog* [j] in Zanu PFs **divisive political power games** [ap] in which he was regarded as *the kingmaker* [j]. He reportedly <ack> **led one of the two main factions in the former ruling party fighting to succeed President Robert Mugabe (88)**. The other faction is widely believed to be led by Defence minister Emmerson Mnangagwa, a long-time Mugabe ally.

is a text that can only be read and understood in the context of its co-texts, which have already expressed nuances that are suggestive that Mujuru was 'eliminated' for political reasons. A further endorsement of this authorial position is further expressed in the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report which also makes the observation that,

The **long-awaited** [ap] inquest has **raised more questions than answers** [3<sup>rd</sup> af] into the death of one of Zimbabwe's *most influential politicians* [j]. He was one of the *faction leaders* [j] and a *kingmaker* [j] in Zanu PF. His death was not only **robbed his faction** [3<sup>rd</sup> af], but also Zanu PF of the *only remaining person* [j] who *could challenge* [j] President Robert Mugabe openly and tell him to retire.

The above, we can argue, are tokenised implicit authorial expressions suggesting that there is a link between the death of Mujuru and the factional infighting within ZANU PF, a proposition that features prominently in the reports carried out by the private-owned newspapers, evidence which is found in the news reports that both the *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday* carried for the announcement of the death – news reports which are analysed in section 4.5 of this chapter.

#### 4.7. The end of the inquest into Mujuru's death: Analysing news reports

At the conclusion of the inquest, a lot of tension and suspense had built up due to the alleged inconsistencies/incoherencies in the testimonies given by the witnesses called into the proceeding, further aggravated by the delay by the court and government to issue out the findings of the court. Of the newspapers under study, all the English language ones carried a story on the conclusion of the inquest while both the vernacular newspapers (*Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa*) did not. Of specific significance, as has been discussed above is the fact that the Vice President herself, and a veteran of the liberation war as well as high level member of the ZANU PF political party seemed to be acting against her own party by her calling for, together with her family, the exhumation of the late General's remains for a fresh post-

mortem. The following constitutes the news reports on the conclusion of the inquest into the causes of the death of Retired General Solomon Mujuru in Zimbabwean English newspapers. As indicated earlier on, the conclusion of the inquest was characterised by a lot of suspense, tension and controversy arising from both the alleged inconsistencies in the testimonies given in court by various witnesses as well as the ‘shock’ request made by the Mujuru family, led by the Vice President and wife of the deceased, Joice Mujuru for the exhumation of the late General’s remains in order for an independent South African based pathologist to re-examine it and make a determination on the cause of death. The request by the family was turned down as it was legally noted that ‘it was not the responsibility of the court to make such orders.’<sup>27</sup> ‘Lawyers ... referred to the Inquests Act, which they said did not provide for any contestation of the findings of the court during and at the end of the proceedings. They said exhumation was outside the jurisdiction of the inquest and only the Minister of Home Affairs could grant an order for exhumation.’<sup>28</sup>

**4.7.1. The Herald (7 February, 2012)**

	<b>APPRAISAL ANALYSIS</b>	<b>ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS</b>
001	Inquest can't order Mujuru exhumation <i>Innocent Ruwende: Senior Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announces that the application for the exhumation of the body of Mujuru has been declined at the inquest)
005	<u>NO application for the exhumation of General Solomon Mujuru's remains can be entertained by an inquest</u> , <ack> the presiding magistrate has said	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the information of the headline, that the request for the exhumation of the body of Mujuru has been declined)
	He <b>criticised</b> [j] the Mujuru family lawyer, Mr Thakor Kewada, <ack> <u>for trying to draw conclusions before the ruling.</u> [j]	<b>Satellite 1: Justification/Elaboration</b> (States the reasons for the refusal of exhumation as well as specification of circumstances in which motion for exhumation is made and declined)
	The family - through its lawyer - wanted a South	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b>

<sup>27</sup> “Inquest cant order Mujuru exhumation” - *The Herald*, Tuesday, 7 February, 2012.

<sup>28</sup> “Inquest findings final, says experts” - *The Herald*, Wednesday, 8 February, 2012.

010	African pathologist called by the magistrate to exhume and examine the remains.	(Specifies context in which motion for exhumation is made and declined)
015	But magistrate Mr Walter Chikwanha, who is presiding over the inquest as a coroner, said <ack> <u>it was not the responsibility of the court to make such orders.</u>	<b>Satellite 3: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why motion for exhumation of Mujuru's body is declined)
	He was <b>very critical</b> [ap/j] of Mr Kewada for giving his opinion about the post-mortem conducted by Dr Gabriel Alviero-Aguero before the court made a ruling on his evidence.	<b>Satellite 4: Contextualisation</b> (Specification of the prior situation/context in which application and denial of exhumation are made)
020	Mr Kewada had asked the court to allow South African pathologist Dr Reggie Perumel to testify, but he was told to wait until Dr Alviero-Aguero had given his evidence.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration/ Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of the prior situation/context in which application and denial of exhumation are made)
025	After the Cuban doctor's testimony, Mr Kewada told the court that <ack> <u>Mr Perumel could only give evidence if the court ordered exhumation.</u>	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation/ Elaboration</b> (Specification of the context in which application and denial for exhumation of Mujuru's body are made)
	In his ruling, Mr Chikwanha said: <ack> <u>"He (Mr Kewada) is of the opinion that Dr Alviero-Aguero did not carry out a proper post-mortem."</u>	<b>Satellite 7: Justification</b> (Specifies the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
030	But, inquest laws did not allow the lawyer to make such statements of opinion as the only duty of a lawyer was to help the inquest obtain evidence from witnesses.	<b>Satellite 8: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
035	Mr Chikwanha said <ack> <u>Mr Kewada's statement that Dr Aguero-Gonzalez did not carry out a proper post-mortem breached these inquest laws.</u>	<b>Satellite 9: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
	<ack> <u>"The duty to analyse facts is left exclusively to the magistrate. The opinion he made on Dr Aguero-Gonzalez is not shared by the court.</u>	<b>Satellite 10: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
040	<u>"This is so because the court is still to rule on Dr</u>	<b>Satellite 11: Justification</b> (Further specification of the

	Aguero Gonzalez's evidence and that of other witnesses," <ack> he said.	reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
	The court will come to a conclusion after analysing the evidence.	
045	The findings, he said, <ack> will include Dr Aguerro-Gonzalez's evidence and whether or not he performed his duties properly.	<b>Satellite 13: Cause and Effect</b> (Specification of the consequences of the inquest)
050	<b>Ordering an exhumation before evidence was analysed was tantamount to putting the cart before the horse</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the application for the exhumation and its implications and specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied)
	Mr Chikwanha said <ack> the Inquest Act did not cover exhumation and to make such an order would breach the law.	<b>Satellite 15: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
055	He said <ack> after the inquiry, the court will make a ruling, which he will forward to the Attorney-General's Office.	<b>Satellite 16: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
	"In light of these reasons, I am not able to accede to the application," <ack> he said, adding the inquest had ended.	<b>Satellite 17: Justification</b> (Further specification of the reasons why application for the exhumation of Mujuru's body is denied/declined)
060	Mr Kewada told journalists that he accepted criticism by the court.	<b>Satellite 18: Intertextualisation</b> (Specification of the proceeding of the inquest)
	<ack> "I think when we started this inquest three weeks ago, the general public had doubts [3 <sup>rd</sup> af]: <b>I think we have exposed a lot of things.</b> "	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact reaction to the death of Mujuru and of the inquest proceedings)
065	Earlier, Vice President Joice Mujuru's evidence was admitted in court without her testifying.	<b>Satellite 20: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)

070	In her written evidence, she said <ack> on <u>the fateful day</u> [ap], she was woken by her maid who told her that a driver, Mr Enock Talapenzi, had received a call telling him there was fire at the farmhouse.	<b>Satellite 21:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)
	She tried calling her husband, but his mobile phone was answered by their maid Ms Rosemary Short.	<b>Satellite 22:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)
075	She drove to Ruzambo Farm and the fire brigade arrived at around 5am without water.	<b>Satellite 23:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)
	She said <ack> the fire brigade was totally ineffective and workers helped douse the fire using buckets.	<b>Satellite 24:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)
080	VP Mujuru said <ack> she saw Gen Mujuru's charred remains in the mini-lounge and accompanied them to One Commando Barracks where a post-mortem was conducted while she was in another room.	<b>Satellite 25:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)
085	Her testimony marked the end of the inquest, which saw 39 witnesses testifying.	<b>Satellite 26:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on the inquest proceedings and evidence given in the inquest)

#### 4.7.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

In keeping with the 'neutral' tone that has characterised this publication's news reports on the death of Mujuru and the aftermath, the current report also exhibits some strategic authorial distancing by the authorial voice from affectual as well as attitudinal evaluations. There is textual evidence suggesting an attempt at strategic manoeuvring aimed at authorial detachment from the propositions made by the report. The reason for this views is because the material central to the 'arguments' of the news report are largely framed in attribution. Structurally too, there are correlations between the propositions made in both the headline and the lead, which are followed up and reinforced or expanded on in subsequent paragraphs

which in this instance form the satellites (in conformity with the analytical explications of the ‘orbital structure’).

The news report propagates, in a reinforcing manner, the decision made by the court that ordering the exhumation of the body of Mujuru, which the family, suspecting foul play had ‘demanded’ was beyond the judicial mandate of the inquest. The report reinforces this position through tokenised inscriptions by assuming what I would call a ‘closed yet veiled legal stance’, which carries finality and conclusivity. There are no open ends to the decisions and the voices of the cited compelling legal experts confirm this. In essence, the report focuses exclusively on the ‘facts’ of the matter and thus largely fulfils the ‘objectivity’ ideal as expressed by the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. However, there are also nuances of authorial endorsements of the position which are manifested by the declarative opening of the news report (003 – 005),

NO application for the exhumation of General Solomon Mujuru's remains can be entertained by an inquest, <ack> the presiding magistrate has said.

This exhibits some form of agreement and subsequent endorsement of the result by the authorial voice, which in essence we can argue to be reflective of an assumption of a subjective position. This is also evinced through the use of grammatical metaphor, which also in this regard acts as an authorial token of evaluation (048 – 050),

**Ordering an exhumation before evidence was analysed was tantamount to putting the cart before the horse [ap].**

This highly evaluative attitudinal token is also not attributed to an external voice and thus reveals the evaluative position of the authorial voice.

In terms of the textual organisation of the news report very little use is made of *appraisal* satellites. The larger parts of the satellites are restricted to the functions of *justification* and *elaboration*. These satellites are used to prevent the reasons for the assumption of the position that the magistrate took in terms of the application for exhumation of Mujuru’s body (*justification*) as well as specification of the proceedings of the inquest (*elaboration*). There are no instances of attributed evaluative inscriptions and all such resources utilised in the news report are expressed through the authorial voice.

4.7.2. *Newsday* (03 February, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru inquest ends <i>Senior Court Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Announces that the inquest into the death of Mujuru has ended)
005	The three-week-long inquest into the <b>mysterious death</b> [ap] of Zimbabwe's <i>most decorated army commander</i> [j], Retired General Solomon Mujuru, is expected to end today with the evidence of two forensic pathologists <b>likely to shed light on the cause of his death</b> , NewsDay can reveal.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal/Elaboration)</b> (Restates the information of the headline and authorial inscribed evaluation of the death of Mujuru and the circumstances surrounding the death.)
010	Impeccable sources said <ack> <u>local forensic pathologist, Gabriel Alvero, was yesterday cleared by his Cuban government to testify in the high-profile</u> [j] inquest held at the Harare Magistrates Court.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specification of the inquest proceedings and testimony given at the inquest. Evaluation of Mujuru and the inquest)
015	Another South Africa-based forensic pathologist, Reggie Perumal, who was invited by Gen Mujurus widow, Vice-President Joice Mujuru, to assist in clarifying issues through family lawyer Thakor Kewada, is expected to be the last witness to testify in the hearing.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings and testimony given at the inquest)
020	<b>The inquest has witnessed a record 34 witnesses</b> [ap] giving evidence to clarify issues on the possible cause of death of the General at his Alamein Farm in Beatrice on August 16 last year.	<b>Satellite 3: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Evaluation of the inquest and specification of the inquest proceedings and testimony given at the inquest)
025	Perumal will be the fourth South African expert to testify after other forensic analysts.	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings and testimony given at the inquest)
	Zimbabwe's own forensic experts gave their evidence which regional magistrate Walter Chikwanha, will analyse and give a determination on the way forward as the case closes.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the inquest proceedings and testimony given at the inquest)

### 4.7.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The *Newsday* carried this short news report to mark the conclusion of the inquest into the death of Mujuru. There is very little in the news report that stands out, except the continuation of the perpetuation of the authorial stance assumed in the previous reports by the same publication in the earlier stages of the unfolding of events related to the story. Again, as with earlier reports, there is a continuation of the subjective stance that concludes there is evidence of foul play. This is evinced through the recurrent use of the description of the death as ‘**the mysterious death**’ (003 – 004), an evaluative inscription expressed through the authorial voice and suggestive of a dissatisfaction on the part of the authorial voice with the explanations given officially by the state as causes of the death of Mujuru. I interpret this evaluation as part of authorial attitudinal reflections due to the fact that it is not attributed to an external source and thus the authorial voice does not distance itself from such an evaluation. The subjective stance is further reinforced implicitly through the ‘expectations’ expressed through the authorial voice that the inquest was ‘**likely to shed light on the cause of his death**’ (048 – 050), a clear indication of authorial assessments that, in spite of the official cause of death having already been announced by the government, there was still something that was still to be exposed about the death and the ‘true cause of the death’. Structurally and cohesively, the report conforms to the proposition made by both the ‘orbital structure, as well as the ‘inverted pyramid’ structure for ‘hard’ news reports. In this regard, we observe that satellites are made use of largely as strategies for ‘*elaboration*’ and ‘*appraisal*’ of the propositions of the nucleus (headline and lead)

### 4.7.3. *Zimbabwe Independent* (09 February, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Mujuru inquest: <b><u>Contradictions, more suspicion</u></b> [ap] <i>Faith Zaba/Wongai Zhangazha</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> ( <i>Appraised</i> <i>Headline</i> : Proposition that evidence presented at the inquest into Mujuru’s death is contradictory and suspicious: suggestive of foul play)
005	THE inquest into former army commander General Solomon Mujuru’s death ended this week at the Magistrate’s Court, with <b><u>sharper contradictions and inconsistencies</u></b> [ap], <b><u>deepening suspicions of foul play</u></b> [ap]. Harare magistrate Walter	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal)</b> (Restatement of the propositions of the lead and authorial inscribed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest)

010	Chikwanha ruled that it was not his responsibility to order Mujuru's exhumation after a request by Mujuru's family to have the remains of one of Zimbabwe's most decorated soldiers re-examined.	
015	The family wanted Mujuru's remains exhumed to allow South African pathologist Reggie Perumal to carry out a second postmortem.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration/Contextualisation</b> (Specification of proceedings of the inquest and the context in which the contradictory evidence was presented)
	The inquest into the <b>mysterious death</b> [ap] of Mujuru in a fire at his Alamein Farm in Beatrice on August 16 2011 ended on Monday after 39 witnesses testified.	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the death and of circumstances surrounding the death of Mujuru)
020	<b>But Zimbabweans are still puzzled</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] as to the cause of the fire which <b>burnt Mujuru to ashes</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 3: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional impact/reaction to the death of Mujuru and the state of Mujuru's body)
025	Testimonies from the forensic experts, pathologist, Harare Fire Brigade, and the Zimbabwe Electricity Supply Authority (Zesa) said <ack> <b>their findings</b> were <b>inconclusive</b> [ap], while witnesses from the farm offered <b>contradictory testimonies</b> [ap]. In addition, <b>there is also the issue of the blue flame, which was not unravelled.</b>	<b>Satellite 4: Justification/Appraisal</b> (Specification of reasons why there are contradiction and suspicions. Authorial inscribed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest)
030	The expert witnesses did nothing but <b>raise more questions</b> [ap] into the circumstances under which Mujuru died.	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest Specification of reasons why there are contradiction and suspicions.)
035	If anything, the inquest has left Zimbabweans and Mujuru's allies and family <b>crying "murder most foul"</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 6: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the emotional reaction to the evidence given at the inquest – the contradictions and suspicions aroused by the evidence)
	<i>State of Mujuru's remains</i> A post-mortem carried out by Dr Gabriel Alvero	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the evidence)

	deduced the cause of death as <ack> “carbonation due to open fire, origin unknown.”	given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
040	“The tracheal mucosa was red and black with carbon inside demonstrating that the deceased was alive when the fire started,” <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
045	<b>Post-mortem findings were:</b> <ack> [The right arm was complete but left arm was burnt to ashes up to the elbow level] Both lower limbs were burnt to ashes up to the knee level The lungs were severely burnt and could not be recognised	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
050	The large vessels such as the aorta and vena cava were burnt and could not be recognised The teeth were present but fragile and breaking off The oesophagus was severely burnt and could not be recognised	
055	The stomach was burnt and absent The pancreas was absent The liver and gall bladder were present but severely burnt and charred	
060	A portion of the bowel was present but damaged by action of the fire and heat The kidneys were absent The bladder was absent The prostate was absent	
065	The spleen was absent No endocrine organ was found.	
070	<b>Body position vis-a-vis organs burning to ashes</b> The forensic report by the director of the Forensic Science Laboratory in the Zimbabwe Republic Police Birthwell Mutandiro said <ack> <b>indications were that Mujuru died before the fire spread into the room where his remains were retrieved.</b> The body was lying face down on the floor in the north-south position.	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
	“The carpet beneath the body exhibited less fire	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b>

075	damage compared to other areas. The indication is that the body prevented the carpet from catching fire.” <ack> he said.	(Further specification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
080	According to his report presented in court: <ack> “This physical evidence indicates that the body was lying in that position before the fire progressed.”	<b>Satellite 12: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
085	<proc>However, <b>questions have been raised</b> [ap] as to how the late general’s internal organs, such as the stomach, bladder, prostate and kidneys were burnt to ashes while the carpet beneath his body where he lay face down was less damaged.	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest through proclamations)
090	<b><i>Bungled post-mortem</i></b> Alvero said <ack> he conducted the autopsy without adequate instruments. He said <ack> he could not draw blood for examination given the charred state of the body. This prompted the Mujuru family, who sought assistance from South African pathologist Ganas Reggie Perumal, to ask for exhumation and a second post-mortem.	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and authorial/attributed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
095	<b><i>Evidence compromised</i></b> A South African police forensic analyst, Seonyatseng Jack Maine, said <ack> due to the poor packaging of debris collected at the burnt farmhouse evidence might have been compromised therefore affecting results.	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and authorial/attributed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
100	Maine who tested several things that include burnt ashes, black solid material and cotton wool with black residue collected from different points in the house for accelerants and inflammables said <ack> <b>he could not detect that such material was used.</b>	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and attributed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
105	But he was quick to point out that <ack> due to the fact that the debris was compromised <b>he could not rule out accelerants or inflammables</b> [ap]. He could also not tell what caused the fire from the evidence he analysed.	<b>Satellite 17: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and attributed evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)
110	<b><i>Mystery Passenger</i></b>	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal/</b>

115	<p>There were <b>contradictory statements</b> [ap] as to whether Mujuru arrived alone at the farm. A security guard manning the entrance gate to the farmhouse, Clemence Runhare, told the court that &lt;ack&gt; [Mujuru was accompanied by someone he assumed, at the time, to be his driver]. Runhare said &lt;ack&gt; [there was a male person in the front passenger seat.]</p>	<p><b>Elaboration</b> (Further specification and authorial evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
120	<p>But this was contradicted by police officers at the farm who said &lt;ack&gt; [Mujuru was alone]. They said &lt;ack&gt; [there was a jacket hanging in the car.]</p>	<p><b>Satellite 19: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Further specification, exemplification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
125	<p>So the question many Zimbabweans are asking is &lt;proc&gt; [could Runhare have mistaken a jacket for a person? If indeed, he was in the company of a male person, who was that person and what happened to him?]</p>	<p><b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Authorial evaluation of the proceedings of the inquest through proclamations)</p>
130	<p><b>Gunshots</b> Runhare was the first to tell the court that he heard what sounded like gunshots around midnight on the fateful night.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Further specification, exemplification and authorial evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
135	<p>Rosemary Short, the maid at the farmhouse, concurred saying &lt;ack&gt; [she also heard what sounded like gunshots coming from the farmhouse while at her house, about two to three kilometers away.]</p>	<p><b>Satellite 22: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
	<p>She thought it might have been the police officers who occasionally fired gunshots to scare away intruders or snakes.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 23: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of the evidence of circumstances surrounding Mujuru's death given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
140	<p><b>Missing Keys</b> There is also the issue of the missing front door</p>	<p><b>Satellite 24: Appraisal/Elaboration</b></p>

<p>145</p> <p>150</p>	<p><b>key and car keys which have not been recovered to date. This is in addition to the bunch of keys which Mujuru told the maid he had left in Harare but ended up in the main bedroom where they were retrieved after the fire.</b> Mujuru also parked near the front door whose keys were also missing, which the farm workers found unusual considering that the general had been parking near the kitchen door whose keys he had. What was also <b>unusual</b> [ap] was the fact that Mujuru left groceries and his medication in the car, something which Short said “he would never do”. The car door was unlocked.</p>	<p>(Further specification, exemplification and authorial evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
<p>155</p> <p>160</p> <p>165</p>	<p><i>Arson or not?</i> [j/ap]                  At the close of the inquest <b>the cause of the fire could not be established.</b> Use of incendiary devices or accelerants could not be determined. <b>Experts testified but said their findings were inconclusive</b> [ap]. This left the family and the public even more <b>confused</b> [3<sup>rd</sup> af]. Fire brigade expert Clever Mafoti revealed that &lt;ack&gt; <u>there were two sources of fire - in the main bedroom and the mini lounge, which he said was in most cases due to arson and rarely as a result of an electrical fault.</u> An electrical fault was ruled out by Zesa expert Douglas Nyakungu, while Mutandiro also said &lt;ack&gt; <u>he failed to establish the cause of the fire and could not say whether or not a crime was committed.</u></p>	<p><b>Satellite 25: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b>                  (Further specification, exemplification and authorial evaluation of the evidence given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>
<p>170</p>	<p><i>Inadequate security</i>                  Short also indicated that &lt;ack&gt; <u>Mujuru wanted the police officers guarding the farm house withdrawn.</u> She said &lt;ack&gt; <u>the police officers were not in the general’s good books.</u></p>	<p><b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b>                  (Further specification the evidence of the circumstances of Mujuru’s death given at the inquest that resulted in contradictions and suspicions)</p>

**4.7.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis**

From structural as well as rhetorical perspectives, the news report fulfils the structural demands of the orbital structure and we can clearly establish, within the body of the report,

the satellites that find their origin in both the headline and the lead. From the onset, the tone of the report is set out to perpetuate the same observations and assessments made by the same publication in earlier reports on other related issues. It is evident that the authorial voice, as is the case with the publication's other news reports, assumes a negative evaluative stance towards the explanations proffered officially as the cause of Mujuru's death – that there was indeed foul play in the death of the deceased. While it is evident that most of the arguments presented in regards to justifying this stance are framed in attribution, a phenomenon that distances the author from the evaluations made therein, there is also evidence of authorial intrusion, judgements and evaluation that suggest otherwise. These are espoused through both authorial inscribed evaluations as well as tokenised invocation. The position is further cemented through negative attributed inscribed evaluations.

Beginning from an analysis of the headline, the propositions made by the news report endorse the authorial stance that there was foul play. There is a consistent insistence on the '**contradictions**' (001) in the testimonies given during the inquest – which are made mention of firstly in the headline and are expanded in the body of the report – and a source of '**more suspicion**' (001). Evaluations of the testimony given at the inquest through authorial inscriptions of APPRECIATION as well as observed AFFECT ([3<sup>rd</sup> af]) are exemplified by evaluative expressions such as: '**contradictions, more suspicion**' (001), '**sharper contradictions and inconsistencies**' (006 – 007), '**contradictory testimonies**' (027), '**raise more questions that answers**' (030 – 031) and '**contradictory statements**' (111). The other instances of authorial attitudinal inscriptions are found in the evaluations of the emotional responses of Zimbabweans expressed through the authorial voice. Expressions of the emotional reactions of unnamed Zimbabweans such as, '**deepening suspicions of foul play**' (007 – 008), '**Zimbabweans are still puzzled**' (020) and '**...Zimbabweans crying "murder most foul"**' position the authorial voice subjectively.

The news report creates such a reading position for the reader through the extensive representation of the 'contradictory' evidence given by witnesses focusing specifically on those issues that result in the 'contradictions'. The key issues to such contradictions are highlighted in the report through highly attitudinal and evaluative subheadings. As such, we observe the subheadings such as: '**Evidence compromised**' (094), '**Bungled post-mortem**' (086), '**Mystery passenger**' (110), '**Missing keys**' (139), '**Gunshots**' (127), '**Inadequate security**' (170) and '**Arson or not?**' (154). The formulation of these subheadings speaks

back to the propositions enunciated by previous reports from the same publication. There is evidence of both overt authorial subjectivities as well as those that are tokenised. I observe for example overt subjectivities in such instances as the description of the death still as ‘**murder most foul**’ (034 – 035) and ‘**mysterious**’ (016) as well as tokenised/implicit inscriptions that downplay the official reports of the death. Such is achieved through tokens such as ‘[e]xperts testified but said their findings were inconclusive’ (158 – 159) and that they ‘**could not rule out accelerants or inflammables**’ (106 – 107) - tokens which reinforce the authorial focus on evidence that proves otherwise. Another would be the attributed claim that ‘**indications were that Mujuru died before the fire spread into the room where his remains were retrieved**’ (069 – 071), which suggests, through endorsement that indeed there was foul play in the death of the late General.

Instances of authorial evaluative proclamations are also made use of in the news report, though there is an attempt to attribute them to external sources, that is, unnamed Zimbabweans. The report makes the claims through authorial proclamations (122 – 126) that,

So the question many Zimbabweans are asking is <proc> <b>could Runhare have</b>
<b>mistaken a jacket for a person? If indeed, he was in the company of a male person,</b>
<b>who was that person and what happened to him?</b>

The report expresses this as authorial observed sentiment of Zimbabweans and yet none is acknowledged as the purveyor of such evaluations. This thus becomes part of authorial assessments of the ‘feelings’ of the Zimbabwean people towards the death culminating from authorial ‘observation’ and as such prone to authorial personal subjectivities. In terms of textual structure, we can observe that most of the satellites of the news report serve as ‘*elaboration*’ and ‘*appraisal*’, largely focusing on the specification and exemplification of the propositions of the nucleus (headline and lead) of the news report.

#### 4.7.4. Comparative analytic perspective

Observing the Appraisal analysis of the news reports done above, I argue that, the polarity of the media in Zimbabwe on political grounds plays out in the manner in which journalistic truths are reflected in news reports. It is evident that the state-owned newspapers attempt to portray an aura of ‘neutrality’ and as such, in the news reports from them (*The Herald* and *Kwayedza*) there are, in keeping with the dictates of the ‘reporter voice configuration’, very low probabilities of overt journalistic evaluative inscriptions. Where they do present

themselves, as espoused in earlier discussions above, they do so as veiled implicit evocations and implicit evaluations, largely framed in attribution. On the other hand, reports in the private-owned newspapers (*Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday*) exhibit especially, overt instances of authorial evaluations and subjectivities. Journalistic ideological leanings are evinced through non attributed evaluations reflecting both JUDGEMENT and AFFECT resources.

In the reports above, it is evident that there is overt evidence of authorial stances in relation to the conclusions made by the inquest. While *The Herald* assumes a non-evaluative and ‘neutral’ tone towards the major subject matter of the reports, that is, the application at the behest of the Mujuru family for the exhumation of the late General’s remains for an independent autopsy and its subsequent rejection by the inquest, the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* adopt more evaluative stances that propagate the propositions that there was foul play in the death of Mujuru. *The Herald*, in keeping with such a pursuit of ‘neutrality’ adopts the legal position and the framing of the news report exhibits an implicit authorial reinforcement of the decision of the inquest that the inquest decisions were final and it thus espouses some nuances of reinforcing finality and conclusiveness with regards to the judicial decisions. This is evinced by both the framing of the headline as well as the declatory nature of the news report’s lead – endorsing in the process the stance that is suggested by the headline. Further endorsements of this authorial stance are framed in attribution through the ‘voices’ of legal experts. On the other hand, as exhibited by the appraisal analyses done in-text, there is an abundance of evidence from the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* that supports propositions made in earlier news reports in the same publications that are suggestive of authorial stances that there was foul play in the death of Mujuru. The overt subjectivities that exhibit themselves therein in the reports in turn translate to the news reports flouting the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration and in the process the ‘objectivity’ ideal. In terms of structural/rhetorical as well as cohesiveness, the three news reports under study here satisfying the generic demands of the orbital structure and well as the inverted pyramid structure as there are correlations between the major propositions made in the lead and headline, which are then endorsed and explained in detail in the subsequent paragraphs that form the bodies of the news reports.

I also make the observation here that, in keeping with reinforcing its authorial position that there was something suspicious in the death of Mujuru, the *Zimbabwe Independent* for

example, makes a high use of both APPRECIATION and AFFECT resources. APPRECIATION resources are largely used to express evaluations of the state of affairs in as far as authorial assessments and evaluations are concerned. In this regard, there is an insistence on the inquest as having produced ‘**sharper contradictions and inconsistencies**’, ‘**more questions than answers**’, ‘**contradictory testimonies**’ as well ‘**deepening suspicions of foul play**’ – descriptions which are not framed in attribution and thus are veiled assessments which position the author evaluatively. AFFECT resources used in the report are not framed in attribution and as such there is no overt attempt by the author(s) to distance themselves from the propositions that such resources make. There is evidence of observed AFFECT through which the authorial voice makes assessments of the emotional reactions of the deceased’s family and the nation at large. For instance, the claims made in the report that, ‘**Zimbabweans are still puzzled**’ and that ‘**Mujuru’s family and allies cry[ing] “murder most foul”**’ are not associated with any identifiable external expressions of such and are thus authorial assessments of such and are thus subject to authorial subjectivities too.

#### **4.8. Summary**

The analyses conducted in this chapter suggest that the media polarity on the Zimbabwean media landscape along political lines manifests itself heavily in the manner in which political stories, political events as well as political actors are portrayed in the newspapers. It is evidenced that stories in the private-owned media are largely characterised by a proliferation of journalistic inscriptions that betray the reporter subjectivities and in the process expose their ideological leanings as well. This characteristic also obtains with regards to the reporting of news in state-owned publications. There is, it must be noted, evidence of the use of tokenised inscriptions as well as the ‘appraising through the words of others’ in all the publication – processes and methods through which veiled authorial evaluations are espoused.

In the stories analysed in this chapter, however, the state-owned newspapers, *The Herald* and *Kwayedza*, evidence suggests, manage to flight stories that conform to the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration due to the proliferation of low keys of journalistic evaluations whereas the stories from the privately-owned newspapers do not. Instead of ‘announcing’ the death of Retired General Mujuru, there seems to be a desire to air negative sentiments about ZANU PF and its leader Robert Mugabe in his personal capacity as well as his polity, which manifest themselves through the high proliferation of negative inscriptions that point back to journalistic opinion as well as through the journalistic tact of ‘appraising through the words of

other' i.e. through the 'voices' of quoted and acknowledges sources that reinforce or ratify the journalistic stances. There is evidence also from the private owned newspapers that suggest authorial insisrences on the possibility of foul play in the death of Mujuru evinced through the consistent highlighting of attitudinal resources that exhibit such a stance.

## CHAPTER 5

### **Sanctioning an anti-sanctions campaign in Zimbabwe? Cross-linguistic analysis of the ‘reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity’ in ‘hard’ news reports**

#### **5.1. Introduction**

Zimbabwe since 2009 to the present (2012) is under the political administration of a Government of National Unity (GNU), a development that culminated from a political crisis arising from the heavily disputed and violence marred 2008 Presidential Elections. Following heavy contestations of these elections and their condemnation by independent observers, the United States of America (USA or US) and the European Union as having been ‘not free and fair’, through mediation sanctioned by the Southern African Development Community (SADC) and facilitated by the then South African President, Thabo Mbeki, the country’s major political parties agreed to a ‘unity government’ established through a statutory instrument known as the Global Political Agreement (GPA). In line with the observations made in the introductory chapters regarding this ‘complex’ nature of the Zimbabwean political landscape especially so in light of this political dispensation characterised by this power sharing agreement between the country’s three major political parties (ZANU PF, MDC-T and MDC-N), the current chapter focuses on the analysis of the ‘reporter voice’ and the ‘objectivity’ ideal in Zimbabwean news reports in English and Shona, focusing specifically on ‘hard’ news reports centred around the United States of America (U.S.A) and European Union (E.U) imposed sanctions on the country. This is a very pertinent and controversial issue in the context of Zimbabwean politics as it has had manifestations of divisiveness along political lines, which subsequently filter down to the polarity of the media on both ideological and political lines.

It is important to emphasise that the chapter is not aimed at criticising or apportioning blame at any given party involved directly or otherwise to the Zimbabwe sanctions debacle, but to provide a context in which the news reports to be analysed are framed. In line with this observation, what the chapter seeks to do is to analyse the the generic structure and the occurrence, if any, of authorial evaluative language and authorial stances in the news reports around the sanctions issue in the newspapers under study. This focus, again, is in line with the objectives set out for this study which specifically focus on the analysis of the notions of

authorial evoked and/or invoked subjectivities, the objectivity ideal and generic integrity of ‘hard news reports. This is done through an analysis of the news reports made from the theoretical spectacles of both the ‘Reporter Voice’ configuration and the Orbital Structure (discussed in detail in sections 2.4.1.4 and 2.4.1.3 respectively). It is important to hasten to note at this point that all the other four newspapers (*The Herald*, *Zimbabwe Independent*, *Newsday* and *Kwayedza*) carried stories on the topic under discussion during the study period. The *Umthunywa* however, did not within the study period, report on this. In this regard therefore, the chapter will undertake an analysis of the news reports from all the other newspapers except *Umthunywa*. In terms of the analyses that will be done in this chapter, section 5.4 analyses and examines newsreports on the ‘sanctions’ prior to the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign<sup>29</sup>, section 5.5 focuses on newsreports on the launch of the campaign while section 5.6 analyses news reports on the extension of the ‘sanctions’ on Zimbabwe by the USA and EU.

## 5.2. Contextualising the ‘sanctions’ in Zimbabwean politics and media

This section serves to contextualise the ways in which the issue of sanctions plays out in the Zimbabwean media. On the eve of the highly contested and violence marred harmonised Presidential and Parliamentary elections of 2002, the United States of America and Europe at large imposed ‘sanctions’ (which in essence were restrictions, travel and trade) on named individuals<sup>30</sup> within the ranks of governance in the country (largely from ZANU PF) as well as named entities they control. Those affected by the sanctions are broadly speaking, the President of the Republic, Robert Gabriel Mugabe, his immediate family and close relatives as well as his political allies (a group largely constituted of his ministers, heads of security agencies, that is, the Central Intelligence Organisation (CIO), the Police, the Army and the Prisons Services as well as their immediate families). The ‘illegal sanctions’<sup>31</sup>, which are largely travel and trade restriction on the named individuals forbade United State nationals to ‘do business with [these named persons], these designated entities or with other entities they control’. This translates thus to the sanctions also affecting named corporations and organisations run by the embargoed individuals.

---

<sup>29</sup> This was a ‘national’ campaign spearheaded and launched by ZANU PF to fight the continued existence of sanctions and thus to ‘demand’ their removal. The details of the campaign are discussed at length in section 5.5.

<sup>30</sup> See: <http://www.treasury.gov/resource-center/sanctions/Programs/Pages/zimb.aspx> for the full list of embargoed individuals and companies/corporation.

<sup>31</sup> This is the official position of ZANU PF regards the sanctions.

The official position of the United States of America (U.S.A) government on the reasons for the sanctions is that they were imposed in a bid to ensure that the country respects human rights and the rule of law. They argue that,

“Illegal western sanctions”<sup>32</sup> is now one of the most popular clichés in Zimbabwe’s national conversation. The U.S. Embassy would like to dispel five myths about the United States’ position on Zimbabwe by stating clearly the real U.S. policy toward Zimbabwe...The United States does not maintain sanctions against the people of Zimbabwe or the country of Zimbabwe. U.S. sanctions target individuals and entities that have undermined democratic processes or institutions in Zimbabwe. More specifically, U.S. sanctions target individuals who, among other things, are senior officials of the Government of Zimbabwe, have participated in human rights abuses related to political repression and/or have engaged in activities facilitating public corruption by senior officials of the Government of Zimbabwe. U.S. sanctions also target entities owned or controlled by the Zimbabwean government or officials of the Zimbabwean government. Unless a transaction involves a blocked individual or entity, U.S. persons may, and are encouraged to, conduct business in, and trade with, Zimbabwe and its people.<sup>33</sup>

The USA argues that the sanctions were imposed on specified Zimbabwean nationals and not the country and that they are a result of an observed high prevalence of gross human rights violations by the Zimbabwean ruling elite (specifically ZANU PF). They argue that the sanctions were meant to ‘force’ the Zimbabwean ruling elite to implement reform(s) towards democratisation. They intimate that, in response to human rights and election-related abuses perpetrated between 2001 and 2008, they (the U.S. and EU) adopted a variety of measures designed to promote reform. Some of these measures are targeted at specific individuals (for example, asset freezes and travel bans)<sup>34</sup>.

“The sanctions on Zimbabwe were introduced in response to political violence, human rights abuses and rule of law violations, as well as deteriorating democratic standards that followed the violent election processes in 2000 and 2002. In many respects these core problems remain. Political parties and civil society groups alike continue to refer to ongoing concerns about political violence, repression and reform deficits. The sanctions are neither comprehensive nor illegal, as often suggested by ZANU-PF. They include a set of “restrictive measures” introduced and

---

<sup>32</sup> The term ‘illegal western sanctions’ is framed in scare quotes here because it is the way in which ZANU PF has officially described the sanctions as. This was on the basis that they, as a political party and government, strongly believe the sanctions are not warranted and justified. This position has been made official on both the ZANU PF website (<http://www.zanupf.org.zw>) as well as in many speeches made by, and interviews with the President Robert Mugabe.

<sup>33</sup> “The truth about United States Policy towards Zimbabwe,” accessed on 26 June 2012 from [http://harare.usembassy.gov/policy\\_explain.html](http://harare.usembassy.gov/policy_explain.html)

<sup>34</sup> ‘Zimbabwe’s Sanctions Standoff’, Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86, 6 February 2012.

modified over the last decade by the U.S., EU and other countries targeting specific individuals and entities. In addition, an arms embargo by these countries prevents the sale of weapons and other items that could be used for internal repression”<sup>35</sup>.

The ZANU PF government’s response to these charges by the USA and EU has been one of hostility and aggression – one that challenges the legitimacy of the sanctions as well as the sincerity and intent of especially Britain<sup>36</sup> to the cause of democracy and good governance in Zimbabwe. The President of the Republic and the First Secretary of ZANU PF, Robert Gabriel Mugabe, has made this position clear at several foras, both in his capacity as ZANU PF leader as well as Zimbabwe’s President. For example, responding to threats of possible indictment at the International Criminal Court for these alleged human rights violations that are allegedly the reason for the sanctions on Cable News Network’s (CNN’s) Amanpour<sup>37</sup> on the eve of his address to the United Nations General Assembly to appeal for the repulsion of the sanctions, he made the following remarks which question the sincerity and intent of Britain in imposing sanctions against Zimbabwe,

I am not concerned about the International Criminal Court. I am concerned about Zimbabwe and I am concerned about the lives of the people of Zimbabwe. And don’t forget it was my party that brought democracy to the country and not the British. We had to fight the British for democracy...<sup>38</sup>

It is important to note at this stage that despite calls for the removal of the sanctions from both ZANU PF and SADC, soon after the 2008 Presidential Elections in Zimbabwe, regarded as the most violent in the history of the country and in which there were observed irregularities in the administration of the election – notably, the refusal by the ZANU PF government to accredit independent observers (especially from the European Union), as well as the unprecedented and yet unexplained delay in announcing election results<sup>39</sup> and the subsequent one man run-off pitting Mugabe alone after the opposition parties withdrew citing

---

<sup>35</sup> Ibid

<sup>36</sup> Britain is historically the country’s former colonial masters.

<sup>37</sup> Christiane Amanpour interviews Robert Mugabe on CNN Amanpour – 24 September, 2009.

<http://edition.cnn.com/2009/WORLD/africa/09/25/zimbabwe.mugabe.amanpour.transcript/index.html>

<sup>38</sup> “Christiane Amanpour interviews Robert Mugabe” on CNN Amanpour – 24 September, 2009. <http://edition.cnn.com/2009/WORLD/africa/09/25/zimbabwe.mugabe.amanpour.transcript/index.html>

<sup>39</sup> The election was held on the 29 March 2008. The results were only announced by the chief electoral officer on 2 May 2008.

violence and intimidation<sup>40</sup> on its supporters as well as allegations of election theft by ZANU PF – the US and EU made a further extension/reaffirmation of the sanctions. This position, the extension of the sanctions was further reaffirmed again by the US in March 2011 and March 2012 on grounds that ZANU PF was still exhibiting political intolerance and was obstinate to fully implement the provisions of the GPA. To that effect, the US through President Barack Obama announced that the sanctions were to remain in force and for the same initial reasons that they were initially imposed.

... I have sent to the Federal Register for publication the enclosed notice stating that the national emergency with respect to the actions and policies of certain members of the Government of Zimbabwe and other persons to undermine Zimbabwe's democratic processes or institutions is to continue in effect beyond March 6, 2011. The crisis constituted by the actions and policies of certain members of the Government of Zimbabwe and other persons to undermine Zimbabwe's democratic processes or institutions has not been resolved. While some advances have been made in Zimbabwe, particularly on economic stabilization, since the signing of the power-sharing agreement, the absence of progress on the most fundamental reforms needed to ensure rule of law and democratic governance leaves Zimbabweans vulnerable to ongoing repression and presents a continuing threat to peace and security in the region and the foreign policy of the United States. Politically motivated violence and intimidation, and the undermining of the power-sharing agreement by elements of the Zimbabwe African National Union-Patriotic Front party, continue to be of grave concern. For these reasons, I have determined that it is necessary to continue this national emergency and to maintain in force the sanctions to respond to this threat. The United States welcomes the opportunity to modify the targeted sanctions regime when blocked persons demonstrate a clear commitment to respect the rule of law, democracy, and human rights. The United States has committed to continue its review of the targeted sanctions list for Zimbabwe to ensure it remains current and addresses the concerns for which it was created. We hope that events on the ground will allow us to take additional action to recognize progress in Zimbabwe in the

---

<sup>40</sup> The Zimbabwe Electoral Commission (ZEC) announced on 2 May 2008 that Tsvangirai won 47.9% and Mugabe won 43.2%, thereby necessitating a run-off which was to be held on 27 June 2008. Despite Tsvangirai's continued claims to have won a first round majority, he decided to participate in the second round. The period following the first round was marked by political violence. ZANU-PF and the MDC each blamed the other's supporters for perpetrating the violence; Western governments and prominent Western organisations blamed ZANU-PF for the violence. On 22 June 2008, Tsvangirai announced that he was withdrawing from the run-off, describing it as a "violent sham" and saying that his supporters risked being killed if they voted for him. The second round of elections went ahead with Mugabe as the only actively participating candidate, although Tsvangirai's name remained on the ballot. Mugabe won the second round by an overwhelming margin and was sworn in for another term as President on 29 June.

future. The goal of a peaceful, democratic Zimbabwe remains foremost in our consideration of any action.<sup>41</sup>

The continued alienation of the country, especially by the Western countries, who constituted the larger part of the country's donor community as well as by multilateral institutions, resulting from the sanctions culminated in an unprecedented economic meltdown which saw inflation soaring to 231 000 000%<sup>42</sup> and virtually all its citizens living way below the poverty datum line<sup>43</sup>. The ZANU PF leadership, once described as obstinate and reluctant bowed down to pressure both internal and largely from SADC through the mediation of then South African president, Thabo Mbeki (and subsequently his successor Jacob Zuma) to consider the formation of a coalition government with the opposition political parties<sup>44</sup> as a solution to the political impasse existing in the country then. On July, 2008, a Memorandum of Understanding providing a framework for a negotiated arrangement for power sharing, which later translated to what came to be known as the Global Political Agreement (GPA) – a document giving birth to a Government of National Unity (GNU) in Zimbabwe – was signed with signatories from ZANU PF's Robert Mugabe, and the leaders of the two MDC formations, Morgan Tsvangirai (MDC-T) and Professor Arthur Mutambara (MDC).

The immediate implementation of the GPA however was hindered by failures to compromise on the part of all the political parties especially with regards to the ministries that each of the parties were to assume, with the then two opposition parties (MDC-T and MDC-M – now MDC-N) accusing ZANU PF of playing 'the big brother' because of its insistence on clinging on to the most powerful ministries, that is, Defence, Finance, Home Affairs (which controls the police too), Mining and Agriculture. After prolonged dialogue and mediation, "[t]he Inclusive Government was finally established in February 2009<sup>45</sup>, and in March SADC called for removal of 'all forms of sanctions', arguing that their continuation would 'undermine (Zimbabwe) and SADC efforts to normalise the situation'<sup>46</sup>. The final signing of the

---

<sup>41</sup> "Message from the President on the Continuation of the National Emergency with Respect to Zimbabwe" – Speech by Barack Obama at the White House, 2 March, 2011.

[http://harare.usembassy.gov/president\\_message\\_zim2011.html](http://harare.usembassy.gov/president_message_zim2011.html)

<sup>42</sup> "Zimbabwe inflation hits new high." – BBC NEWS, AFRICA, Thursday, 9 October, 2008.

<sup>43</sup> "Zimbabwe inflation hits 231million per cent" – *Telegraph*, Thursday 9 October, 2008.

<sup>44</sup> There were other political parties that participated in the election, notably the Mavambo/Dawn/Kusile led by former ZANU PF politiburo member and former Finance Minister, Simba Makoni as well as an Independent candidate, Langton Towungana. These however were not incorporated into the GPA because they had 'insignificant' poll percentages.

<sup>45</sup> 13 February 2009 to be precise.

<sup>46</sup> 'Zimbabwe's Sanctions Standoff', Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86, 6 February 2012

Memorandum of Understanding (MoU) that gave birth to the GPA was on February 9, 2009. The GPA provided for an inclusion of all the three parties involved in the negotiations in an inclusive cabinet, which in essence meant a sharing of ministerial and deputy ministerial portfolios among the three political parties on the basis of their poll percentages. The biggest provision in the GPA entailed a change in government structures, which saw a division of powers between the leaders of the three political parties through the creation of new administrative offices, a development which saw Tsvangirai assuming the office of Prime Minister while Mutambara was sworn in as Deputy Prime Minister.

### **5.3. The GPA, GNU and the ‘sanctions’ debate**

It is on record that during the election campaigning period preceding the 2008 elections, the then ruling party, ZANU PF, incessantly made public intimations that the country was suffering, especially economically, due to sanctions that were called for by the MDC formation led by Morgan Tsvangirai. The arguments made at both political and official foras by Robert Mugabe and ZANU PF as both government as well as a political party were to the effect that MDC was a Western funded political party, an attempt by the West to enforce regime change in the country and reversing the gains of independence<sup>47</sup>. References to MDC as ‘Western Puppet’, “British funded” and so on are evidence of this stance<sup>48</sup>. On the other hand, the MDC maintains that the country was ‘on its knees’ due to ZANU PF’s, ineptitude, corrupt activities as well as its repressive tendencies disguised in liberation war history political exhortations. It is also on record that when the sanctions were imposed on the country that ZANU PF expressly made proclamations that the sanctions were a British and European agenda to ‘punish’ Zimbabwe (in particular, the then totally ZANU PF constituted Zimbabwean government) for the ‘infamous land grabs’, politically framed within ZANU PF political rhetoric as well as the Land Acquisition Act (a law promulgated after the forced land/farm evictions as a means to ratify them), as the Agrarian Land Reform Programme. This was a programme in which hundreds of large scale commercial farmers were forcibly evicted from their farms. The sanctions thus allegedly became the new ZANU PF scapegoat for the continued repression. Also it is important to note that because of their stance that

---

<sup>47</sup> ‘MDC meets British spy agents in South Africa’, from the Zimbabwe Broadcasting Corporation (ZBC) website. Accessed 18 July 2012 at: <http://www.zbc.co.zw/news-categories/top-stories/10549-mdc-meets-british-spy-agents-in-south-africa.html>. Also see ‘MDC-T’s regime change agenda exposed’, The Herald, 16 March 2012 at: [http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=36609](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=36609)

<sup>48</sup> ‘Tsvangirai must stop the violence’, from the ZANU PF website, accessed 18 July 2012 at: [http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=168:tsvangirai-must-stop-the-violence-](http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=168:tsvangirai-must-stop-the-violence-)

MDC-T was responsible for the imposition of sanctions, it was their political belief that the incorporation of the two MDC factions into government would culminate in their calling for the removal of the sanctions, which in ZANU PF rhetoric are “illegal”. Scholarship, in light of the fissures that continuously threaten the survival of the GNU especially arising from claims that ZANU PF is adamant to implement some of the reforms entrenched in the GNU, argues that the sanctions have become the scapegoat for ZANU PF’s reluctance to enforce democratic reforms.

It is argued that ZANU-PF manipulates the issue politically and propagandises it as part of its efforts to frustrate reform and mobilise against perceived internal and external threats to national sovereignty. It argues that reform is contingent on the removal of sanctions and accuses the MDC wing led by Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai (MDC-T) of renegeing on GPA commitments to facilitate this. MDC-T argues it has no control over sanctions, and there would be a stronger basis for their removal if GPA violations ended, and ZANU-PF did not block reforms. Mugabe’s party conflates the various measures, including restrictions from multilateral institutions, arguing “sanctions” are centrally responsible for the poor economy. MDC-T contends that the measures are relatively narrow and targeted, and it is ZANU-PF that has destroyed the economy.<sup>49</sup>

The U.S has continually refuted these allegations and has reiterated officially and in line with the foregoing thesis that the ‘sanctions’, are merely a ZANU PF bluff and are not ‘real’ sanctions but mere restrictions and are targeted on given individuals and not the nation. The US government argues that the ‘sanctions’ have been used as a propaganda tool by ZANU PF as a political party as well as a party to the inclusive government to preserve its political hegemony and to stall on implementing both political reforms as well as provisions of the GPA.

Sanctions have given ZANU-PF, which presents itself as a victim of external machinations, a propaganda narrative that reinforces its anti-imperialist rhetoric. A resolution at its December 2009 congress instructed the party leadership and negotiators to prevent movement on the concerns of the MDC Formations without corresponding and simultaneous redress of ZANU-PF’s concerns such as the illegal Western sanctions, Western-funded pirate radio broadcasts and Western interference in Zimbabwe’s internal politics through the funding of parallel government structures and the sponsoring of political activities of NGOs as a force multiplier for the MDC Formations.<sup>50</sup>

The two MDC formations are also on record purveying the view that ZANU PF is insincere to the fight for the removal of sanctions, arguing that ZANU PF incessantly uses the sanctions

---

<sup>49</sup> ‘Zimbabwe’s Sanctions Standoff’, Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86, 6 February 2012

<sup>50</sup> Ibid

rhetoric as some form of political power play/tactic in a bid to continue to have political relevance. For example, Professor Welshman Ncube, leader of the MDC-N is on record<sup>51</sup> as having intimated, after the renewal of sanctions by both the EU and US, that ZANU PF overplays the sanctions issue to remain relevant on the country's political landscape. He further revealed that his party would not aid ZANU PF in the 'fight' against the sanctions as this would be tantamount to helping ZANU PF regain political relevance. The ZANU PF governance on the other hand continues to insist that the sanctions are illegal and unjustified. They also claim that the sanctions are real and affect the nation as a whole<sup>52</sup>. For example, in the interview on CNN's Amanpour just before addressing the United Nation General Assembly calling for the removal of the sanctions, President Robert Mugabe made the reiterations of the ZANU PF stance regards the sanctions by remarking that,

The sanctions are unjustified, illegal and they are meant for regime change to address that illegal principle... The United States sanctions are real sanctions, economic sanctions. Have you looked at them? Look at them and you will satisfy yourself that they are real sanctions that prevent any companies from having dealing with us. They prevent any financial institutions from also not having relations with us.

He further remarked that,

The land reform is the best thing that ever happened to an African country...You don't leave power when imperialists dictate that you leave. There is regime change. Haven't you heard of regime change programme by Britain and the United States which is aimed at getting not just Robert Mugabe out of power, but Robert Mugabe and his party out of power? And that naturally means we dig in, remain in our trenches?

Meanwhile, the MDC-T's position regarding the sanctions has been that the imposition of the sanctions was as a result of ZANU PF's machinations which are characterised by political intolerance and running down of the economy through corruption and gross violations of human rights. The MDC-T, as far as this research has established, has not made any official pronouncements of their position. In a casual interview with one MDC-T legislator, Settlement Chikwinya<sup>53</sup>, he explained that there was no position documentation from the MDC-T regarding the sanctions. Infact, he said, it is the position of the MDC-T that contrary to ZANU PF's claims that they are responsible for calling for the imposition of the sanctions by the

---

<sup>51</sup> 'Discord in coalition over sanctions' – Newsday, Sunday 27 February 2011.

<sup>52</sup> [http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=166](http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=166)

<sup>53</sup> Settlement Chikwinya is Member of Parliament for Mbizo (Kwekwe) and the casual interview was done via Facebook chat. Evidence of such is located in the Appendices section of this thesis.

USA and the EU, they did not. And because of this the MDC-T has made a decision that it will not involve itself in the sanctions debate (and blame games) but instead, let the USA and the EU (the imposers) and ZANU PF (the affected) deal with each other directly.

Because of the established ZANU PF's official position regarding the sanctions, President Robert Mugabe at the behest of ZANU PF on Wednesday, 2 March 2011, launched a National Anti-Sanctions Petition Campaign in which the party sought 2 million signatures to present to the USA and the EU as evidence of a national consensus against the sanctions, that is, as proof that the sanctions were not just affecting the named embargoed individuals only but the nation at large. Acquiring the 2 million signatures, the party believed, would send a message to the US and EU that the call for the lifting of sanctions was a national consensus and that this would hopefully convince them to reconsider and hopefully lift the embargo. Given the power politics within the GNU, the idea of, and execution of this campaign was not without political divisions and ideological differences. In light of the context provided above that examines the political ideological standpoints of the parties in the inclusive government as well the USA and the EU with regards to the sanctions, the chapter makes an appraisal analysis of news reports centred on sanctions in Zimbabwean newspapers in English and Shona.

The analyses in this chapter will proceed in a manner that will firstly analyse news reports on sanctions (largely those dealing with the 'reactions' to the imposition of the sanctions) before the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign and then proceed to news reports on the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition campaign. Finally the chapter will then analyse news reports on the extension of the sanctions by the USA and the EU. The analyses done in this chapter, again in line with the goals set in the earlier chapters of this study, will attempt to analyse the manner(s) in which the news reports present evidence that positions the authorial voice subjectively through the use of evaluative language.

The chapter also analyses the extents to which the news reports conform to the dictates of the ideals of 'objectivity' as well as hard news structure as espoused by the 'Reporter Voice' configuration and the Orbital Structure respectively. As with the previous and next chapter, the analytical framework of Appraisal espoused in Chapter 4 and its analytical key as proposed by Van and Thomson (2008: 55) will be used for the analysis of the appraisal resources in the news reports.

## 5.4. Backgrounding the anti-sanctions campaign

This section analyses news reports carried out in the four newspapers (*The Herald*, *Newsday*, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Kwayedza*) during the period just preceding the official launch of the ZANU PF initiated and sanctioned Anti-Sanctions Petition Campaign. The purpose of the analysis carried here is to contextualise the Anti-Sanctions Campaign debate within the prevailing social and ‘national’ sentiments towards the sanctions as expressed in the news reports. It is also in a bid to highlight the controversial nature of the sanctions debate/issue within the prevailing political environment in Zimbabwe. As with the previous chapter, the analyses done here will focus on the discussions of the generic structures of the news report as expressed through the ‘orbital structure’ as well as the evaluation of the ways in which language is used evaluatively by the authorial voice as expressed through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration and the Appraisal theoretical framework.

### 5.4.1. *The Herald* (28 February, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Anti-sanction lobby <i>gathers momentum</i> [ap] <i>Herald Reporters</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline</i> : Expresses that the anti sanctions campaign was a success and has received huge support)
005	THOUSANDS of Zimbabweans are <i>expected to throng</i> [ap] the Harare Agricultural Show Open Car Park on Wednesday where President Mugabe is billed to launch the National Anti-Sanctions Petition Campaign.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates and exemplifies the ‘fact’ that the campaign was a success and has received huge support)
010	In a statement, the Zanu-PF Information and Publicity Department said <ack> <u>Zimbabweans across the political divide should sign the anti-sanctions petition because <b>the embargo was affecting people indiscriminately</b></u> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 1: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Reasons for launching the anti sanctions campaign and attributed evaluation of the effects of the sanctions)
	The campaign would be launched under the theme " <b>Sanctions do kill.</b> " [3 <sup>rd</sup> af]	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specifies the theme and aims of the campaign)
015	Chairperson of the Anti-Sanctions Campaign and Petition Vice President John Nkomo said <ack> <u>all parties in the inclusive Government had <i>agreed</i></u>	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (The political context in

	[ap] in the Global Political Agreement that <b><u>sanctions should be removed</u></b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af/j].	which the campaign must be framed)
020	He said <ack> <b><u>the campaign was a process and that there was no limited number of signatures to be gathered.</u></b>	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Specifies the goals of the campaign)
025	Zanu-PF's information and publicity department has outlined 10 reasons why Zimbabweans should sign the petition.	<b>Satellite 5: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why campaign has been undertaken)
	The party stresses that <ack> <b><u>the embargo is not targeted on its senior officials</u></b> [ap] as <b><u>claimed</u></b> [j] by Western countries and their media.	<b>Satellite 6: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
030	It also points out that <ack> <b><u>the illegal sanctions</u></b> [j/ap] are <b><u>a challenge to national sovereignty</u></b> [ap] as Zimbabwe's <b><u>detractors</u></b> [j] are <b><u>using them as a tool for regime change</u></b> [j]	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
035	"Sanctions are <b><u>an attack on all Zimbabweans</u></b> [j]. They are <b><u>wholesale</u></b> [ap]. They are <b><u>not personalised or targeted</u></b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
	"Sanctions are <b><u>an attack on our economy, our jobs, our search for total empowerment</u></b> [j] and they are <b><u>an attack on our business, on workers and on consumers</u></b> [j].	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
040	"Sanctions are <b><u>an attack on our land and our land rights</u></b> [j]. They <b><u>aim to create conditions for the reversal of land reforms</u></b> [j/ap]," <ack> reads the statement.	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
045	The party notes that <ack> the <b><u>illegal sanctions</u></b> [j/ap] are <b><u>racist</u></b> [j/ap] and <b><u>an attack on the African people</u></b> [ap] because <b><u>they were unilaterally imposed</u></b> [j] <b><u>outside the United Nations mandate by a British-led coalition</u></b>	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)

	<b>defending minority rights in Zimbabwe [j].</b>	
050	"Sanctions are <b>a challenge to our National Sovereignty [j/ap]</b> . They are <b>an illegal measure [j/ap]</b> by <b>foreigners working on challenging [j]</b> a <b>sovereign people [ap]</b> ."	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
055	"They <b>are an outsider's law and/or policy set against an independent country [j]</b> and <i>people with its own legislature [ap/j]</i> ."	<b>Satellite 13: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
060	Meanwhile, Zanu-PF central committee member and Chimanimani Senator Monica Mutsvangwa yesterday <ack> <b>urged Norton residents to come and join the nation in the <i>campaign against sanctions [j]</i></b> .	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which the anti sanctions campaign gathers momentum)
065	Addressing party supporters at Ngoni Hall in Norton, Sen Mutsvangwa said <ack> <b>the party should <i>unite to fight sanctions [j]</i>, a <b>common enemy [j]</b> that has made life difficult for the <b>whole nation [ap]</b></b> .	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
	She encouraged the <i>spirit of oneness [ap]</i> in the party, saying <i>only Zimbabweans can push for the removal of the sanctions [j]</i> .	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
070	"The Anti-Sanctions Campaign <i>should be driven by Zimbabweans [j]</i> ; let's all meet in Harare for the <b>launch on Wednesday</b> ."	<b>Satellite 17: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
075	" <b>All the problems we are facing now [ap]</b> are a <b>result of the illegal sanctions imposed by the West [j]</b> ," <ack> said Sen Mutsvangwa.	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
	Zanu-PF district co-ordinating committee chairman, Cde Jaison Passade said <ack> <b>the anti-sanctions campaign would show the people's unity against</b>	<b>Satellite 19: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)

	<b>the embargo.</b>	
080	Addressing party supporters in Hatcliffe yesterday, Cde Passade said <ack> <b>the launch of the <i>Anti-Sanctions Petition and Campaign would show that the sanctions were hurting the ordinary people.</i></b> [ap/j]	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
085	"The <b>illegal sanctions</b> [ap/j] were <b>put on Zimbabwe to cause confusion in the country's leadership</b> [j] so that the Western countries <b>put a puppet Government</b> [j]."	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
090	"The sanctions <b>have hurt the ordinary people</b> [ap/j]. Instead of hurting the Zanu-PF leadership, the sanctions <b>have affected the ordinary people</b> [ap] who cannot get medicine in the hospital. <b>There are no jobs</b> [ap], while <b>factories cannot get spares for their machinery</b> [ap]."	<b>Satellite 22: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
095	Cde Passade said <ack> <b>Zimbabweans should use the launch on Wednesday as a platform to show their resolve against the sanctions</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 23: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
100	Mhondoro-Ngezi legislator Cde Bright Matonga (Zanu-PF) said <ack> <b>Zimbabweans should rally behind President Mugabe in the anti-sanctions campaign.</b>	<b>Satellite 24: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
	Cde Matonga said this during an inter-district meeting at Ngezi Secondary School last Friday.	<b>Satellite 25: Contextualisation</b> (Social context in which call for participating in campaign is made)
105	"As a constituency, let us show that we are against these <b>illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap]. The President will launch the anti-sanctions campaign and we should all participate in our large numbers."	<b>Satellite 26: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
110	"The <b>illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap] are <b>not targeted</b> [j/ap] and are <b>hurting every Zimbabwean</b> [j/ap]," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 27: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the

		campaign must be done)
	Cde Matonga said <ack> <b>even MDCT supporters and their leadership had to show their allegiance to Zimbabwe by speaking against sanctions [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 28: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of the MDC and its stance in relation to the sanctions)
115	"This campaign gives everyone even those in the <b>MDCT and their leaders including Morgan Tsvangirai an opportunity to unequivocally condemn the illegal sanctions [j/ap].</b> " <ack> Cde Matonga said.	<b>Satellite 29: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of the MDC and its stance in relation to the sanctions)
120	Speaking at the same occasion, Chief Murambwa said <ack> <b>as traditional leaders they were also against the illegal sanctions [j/ap].</b>	<b>Satellite 30: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)
	"We are against these sanctions and as traditional leaders we are going to mobilise our people to speak loudly against them," he said.	<b>Satellite 31: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why the campaign must be done)

#### 5.4.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report largely presents the argument that the sanctions are adversely affecting the ordinary Zimbabwean and not just the 'targeted individuals'. It espouses the claims that the sanctions are the West's retaliation for the redistribution of land to the black Zimbabwean population that the government undertook and which saw hundreds of white commercial farmers (mostly from Britain) evicted from 'their farms'. In a very vivid manner the news report evinces a conviction that ideologically resonates with the political stance expressed by the ZANU PF party as expressed in earlier discussions with regards to the embargo. The larger parts of the news report are largely attributed sentiments reinforcing this position. Compelling voices such as those of the ZANU PF Information and Publicity Department, Chairperson of the Anti-Sanctions Campaign and Petition and Vice President John Nkomo (who is also ZANU PF), ZANU PF central committee member and Chimanimani Senator Monica Mutsvangwa, ZANU PF district co-ordinating committee chairman, Jaison Passade and Mhondoro-Ngezi legislator Cde Bright Matonga (again from ZANU PF) are given the opportunity to reinforce this stance.

In terms of evaluative positioning, there is evidence of an implicit authorial bias towards the established position. The authorial voice is implicit and its biases are not overtly expressed. The report however makes high use of explicit negative attitude which is largely framed in attribution. In this fashion, the major propositions of the news report, the explicit negative ATTITUDE intimating that the sanctions are affecting the nation at large and just not the targeted ZANU PF leaders are clearly articulated in attributed material which is largely characterised by a high proliferation of JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources. The JUDGEMENT resources utilised in the news reports are largely those of social sanction, focusing specifically on negatively evaluating the West and the effects of ‘their sanctions’ on the country and its economy. The JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION evaluations which are largely framed in attributed material condemn the sanctions and also downplay the earlier established position of Britain, the West, EU and USA that the sanctions are only targeted as merely ‘claims’. In line with the propositions established above we observe a consistent and incessant labelling of the sanctions as ‘**an attack**’ (033, 036, 038, 040, 045), ‘**a challenge**’ (030, 050), ‘illegal’ (029, 044, 051, 074, 085, 105, 121), ‘**racist**’ (045), ‘**an outsider’s law**’ (054) and as ‘**meant to facilitate regime change**’ (031 – 032). At the lexical level there is thus, evidence of an embedded hostility towards both the sanctions and their instigators evinced by the negative evaluations (evaluations which in my opinion qualify as both JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources: JUDGEMENT because they portray the sanctions as an act of aggression by ‘**Zimbabwe’s detractors**’ (031) and APPRECIATION because they are also descriptive of the state that the sanctions have left the Zimbabwean society in) of the sanctions and the West as expressed by such locutions as (108 – 113),

"The **illegal sanctions** [j/ap] are **not targeted** [j/ap] and are **hurting every Zimbabwean** [j/ap]," <ack> he said.

Cde Matonga said <ack> **even MDCT supporters and their leadership had to show their allegiance to Zimbabwe by speaking against sanctions** [j].

as well as (085 – 088),

"The **illegal sanctions** [ap/j] were **put on Zimbabwe to cause confusion in the country's leadership** [j] so that the Western countries **put a puppet Government** [j].

Argumentatively, the news report does not differ in propositions with the ZANU PF published stance on sanctions, from which it largely draws materials and from which the central arguments of the news report are largely drawn. Most of the attributed matter in the news report is extracted there. Where the news report makes use of attributed negative evaluations, these are used in a tokenised manner that vilifies both the West and MDC-T. For example, there are consistent intimations, made implicitly, that the MDC-T is insincere to the provisions of the GPA. This is done in a subtle yet overly clear manner through these tokenised invocations, which largely occur in attributed materials. We can observe examples of such tokens in the following extract from the news report (114 – 118);

"This campaign gives everyone even those in the MDCT and their leaders including Morgan Tsvangirai an opportunity to unequivocally condemn the illegal sanctions [j/ap]."
---

<ack> Cde Matonga said.

Of significance about this observation is the manner in which it is used to juxtapose and yet connects with earlier postulations in the news report that suggested that all the parties to the GPA had made an undertaking to contribute to the fight against sanctions. This position comes then as a reinforcement of the overtones that the MDC-T was unwilling to participate and thus had ulterior motives. In terms of cohesive and textual structures, the news report satisfies both the 'inverted pyramid' structure and the 'orbital structure' because there is an observed reinforcement and expansion of the major propositions cited in both the headline and the lead that permeate throughout the entire news report. The central concerns of the news report, which are largely that the sanctions are real and affect all Zimbabweans and not just the targeted individuals are continuously and consistently recalled and thus reverberate throughout the entire news reports.

In line with the foregoing thesis, I maintain that the central arguments of the news report also reaffirm a position established above as the official ZANU PF position regards sanctions, that is, they are 'an attack on all Zimbabweans' (033), 'an attack on African people' (045 – 046), 'an attack on the economy' (036), 'are not targeted' (026 – 027, 034 – 5), 'are hurting ordinary Zimbabweans' (089, 109) and so on and so forth. These sentiments reverberate throughout the whole news report in the form the cohesive device of repetition. There is an emphatic insistence of challenging the legitimacy of the sanctions as well as a 'playing around' with the blame game for responsibility for the 'suffering' of the nation. Of course, again this is all framed in attribution. From a basic journalistic point of view for

example, the story is not balanced as the other parties, especially those accused of the ‘evil’ are not accorded a ‘right of reply’. This notion of balance, however, is not the concern of this research. From a ‘reporter voice’ configuration perspective, the news report exhibits low probabilities of authorial biases. This is so because almost all the explicit negative inscriptions are attributed to external sources. Also in terms of rhetorical movement as well as the ‘orbital structure’ requirements, the news report satisfies the dictates of both. This is so because, not only is there a traceable development of the main ideas enunciated in the headline and lead but there is also a visible cohesive structure that presents visible satellites weaved neatly together.

**5.4.2. *Newsday* (27 February, 2011)**

	<b>APPRAISAL ANALYSIS</b>	<b>ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS</b>
001	<b>Discord</b> [ap] in coalition over sanctions <i>Staff Writers</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline</i> : Proposition that there are disagreements in the coalition government with regards to the position on sanctions)
005	<b>President Robert Mugabe and Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions campaign</b> [ap/j], set to be officially launched on Wednesday, is <b>likely to kick off to a false start</b> [ap] after <b>their partners in the coalition government vowed not to join the campaign</b> [ap/j].	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/ Appraisal)</b> (Restates the propositions of the headline and specifies ‘discord’. Authorial inscribed evaluation of the anti-sanctions campaign)
010	Both MDC-T and the Welshman Ncube led MDC have said <ack> <b>they will not join the anti-sanctions campaign arguing nothing has changed on the ground</b> [ap] <b>to warrant removing the restrictive measures</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons for the discord. Attributed inscribed evaluation of the political context in which discord occurs)
015	The sanctions, imposed in 2002 <i>in response</i> [j] to charges of <b>human rights violations by Zanu PF supporters</b> [j] and the alleged <b>rigging of a presidential election</b> [j] held that year, were extended by another 12 months two weeks ago.	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies the prior situation in which sanctions were initially imposed)
020	The sanctions were imposed by the European Union and the United States administration on Zanu PF	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies the prior situation)

	leaders and companies linked to them.	in which sanctions were initially imposed)
025	Last week, MDC-T spokesperson Nelson Chamisa said <ack> <u>his party and its leader Morgan Tsvangirai would not join the call for the removal of sanctions unless Zanu PF “truly repented” from its acts of violence [j].</u>	<b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
030	Chamisa told journalists attending a Voluntary Media Council of Zimbabwe function in Harare: <ack> <u>“We will not join the chorus (of calling for the removal of sanctions).</u>	<b>Satellite 5: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
	<u>“We have always appealed to Zanu PF to help by repenting and make those who set up <b>restrictive measures</b> [ap/j] remove them.”</u>	<b>Satellite 6: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
035	<u>“<b>They have not yet repented</b> [j] and each time we try to call for the removal of those measures, and before you finish a statement, you hear an MDC member has been arrested.”</u>	<b>Satellite 7: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
040	Chamisa accused Zanu PF of <u><b>manipulating the security apparatus and the judiciary system to prosecute human rights defenders, MPs from the MDC-T and its supporters and showing signs of not repenting</b> [j].</u>	<b>Satellite 8: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
045	<u>“<b>Restrictive measures</b> [ap/j] are <i>symptoms and not causes</i> [ap]. As physicians, we cannot rush to treat the symptoms instead of the causes,” &lt;ack&gt; he said.</u>	<b>Satellite 9: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
050	Addressing MDC supporters at Garanyemba Business Centre in Gwanda on Saturday, Ncube accused Zanu PF of <u><b>overplaying the sanctions issue to remain relevant on the country’s political landscape</b> [j].</u>	<b>Satellite 10: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)
	He said <ack> <u>his party would not help <b>Zanu PF in its campaign</b> [j] for the lifting of the sanctions as that would be helping Zanu PF regain political relevance.</u>	<b>Satellite 11: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why there is discord)

055	<ack> “Zanu PF are the <b>architects of violence</b> [j] and sometimes MDC -T retaliates when it is provoked,” <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 12:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
060	<ack> “Recently, Zanu PF <b>unleashed violence</b> [j] because it knew it was time for the European Union to review the issue of the sanctions and it <b>wanted them renewed</b> [j]. The sanctions indeed were <b>renewed by the European Union to the pleasure of Zanu PF</b> [j]” <ack> said Ncube.	<b>Satellite 13:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
065	But President Mugabe and his Zanu PF party <b>have vowed to retaliate</b> [j] by <b>grabbing business entities with links to Britain, the US and other EU member countries</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 14:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
070	Addressing thousands of Zanu PF supporters at his 87th birthday party in Harare on Saturday, President Mugabe <b>ordered Youth, Indigenisation and Empowerment minister Saviour Kasukuwere to seize EU companies doing business in Zimbabwe, but to spare German-owned firms</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 15:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
075	<ack> “The inventory will tell us which companies are American, Dutch and European save those owned by Germany because of late it has indicated that it was now against the continued imposition of sanctions on us.”	<b>Satellite 16:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
080	<ack> “Minister Kasukuwere will work on a programme which will also <b>affect these companies here</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 17:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
085	<ack> “We do not talk what we do not do, but we always walk our talk. I am also glad that the party decided that on Wednesday when we launch our	<b>Satellite 18:</b> <b>Contextualisation/Elaboration</b> (Further specification and

	anti-sanctions campaign we will be discussing again <b>condemning these sanctions, [j]</b> ” <ack> President Mugabe said.	exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
090	He said <ack> <b>Zanu PF was no longer interested in the inclusive government [j]</b> adding that elections should be held early so that the country would have a one-party government.	<b>Satellite 19: Contextualisation/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
095	<ack> <b>“There has to be a good excuse not to have elections this year [ap]. The position of our party is we want to get to elections as soon as possible [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 20: Contextualisation/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)
100	<ack> <b>“If the others are there to drag the process, we will get out of the process. This year we must have a draft constitution, then a referendum and after the referendum, we must have elections.”[j]</b>	<b>Satellite 21: Contextualisation/ Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of political context in which discord occurs – and its evaluation)

### 5.4.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The proposition which is under attack here is that, contrary to claims made by ZANU PF that the call for lifting of sanctions is a national programme with a national consensus, it actually is a ZANU PF political stance. Furthermore, the other major proposition of the news report is that the campaign will fail because of the imbedded cause for its undertaking. The authorial voice thus assumes a position that asserts that the campaign is merely an ill-fated political gimmick by ZANU PF and one which does not have the backing of its other partners to the GPA. There are also indications to the ‘fact’ that the sanctions are not sanctions at all as claimed by ZANU PF, but mere restrictions. This position is clearly established in the first paragraph of the story which espouses that ZANU PF is ‘alone’ in propositioning for the lifting of the sanctions and the campaign is framed as specific to ZANU PF (003 – 008).

**President Robert Mugabe and Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions campaign [ap/j], set to be officially launched on Wednesday, is likely to kick off to a false start [ap] after their partners in the coalition government vowed not to join the campaign [ap/j].**

In the subsequent paragraphs, this position is further reinforced through a number of external voices, specifically those of the other partners in the Government of National Unity and/or their representatives. Furthermore, the authorial voice introduces the notion that the sanctions are a USA and EU response to ZANU PF's violent, unethical and inhumane political machinations, a position that overtly downplays the positions established by ZANU PF that the sanctions were a form of aggression from the USA and the EU motivated by their disdain for its 'populist' nationalist policies. The news report thus, largely negatively evaluates ZANU PF especially so through JUDGEMENT resources that positions it as solely responsible, through its acts, for the impositions of sanctions.

The authorial voice in this news report evidently gives little evidence of refrain from expressing ideological subjectivities which are expressed through either tokenised or invoked evaluations. In this regard, there is an observable authorial position established especially in the first paragraph that overtly assumes an anti-ZANU PF stance especially through inscriptions of largely JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources. This is further expressed in the subsequent paragraphs through overt yet attributed inscriptions that negatively evaluate ZANU PF and its political 'behaviour' as insincere and inconsistent to the claims it makes of wanting the sanctions to be lifted. Consider for example, in light of this observation, the following inscribed authorial position (014 – 018),

The sanctions, imposed in 2002 *in response* [j] to charges of **human rights violations by Zanu PF supporters** [j] and the alleged **rigging of a presidential election** [j] held that year, were extended by another 12 months two weeks ago.

Such negative evaluation of ZANU PF, especially through JUDGEMENT resources, are not restricted to the authorial voice/position but are further overtly expressed through attributed material intimating the same. Examples of such reinforcements of the authorial position through attributed material can be observed in the following extract (038 – 042).

Chamisa accused Zanu PF of **manipulating the security apparatus and the judiciary system to prosecute human rights defenders, MPs from the MDC-T and its supporters and showing signs of not repenting**[j].

And also (058 – 063),

<ack> “Recently, Zanu PF **unleashed violence** [j] because it knew it was time for the European Union to review the issue of the sanctions and it **wanted them**

**renewed [j]. The sanctions indeed were renewed by the European Union to the pleasure of Zanu PF[j]’** <ack> said Ncube.

An significant turn in the report is the manner in which it speaks to some forms of co-texts (which in the news report are not cited), through in particular, the evocation of a seemingly irrelevant issue with regards to the major preoccupations of the current news report – the desire by ZANU PF to hold election in the immediate future. While the analysis for the election debate within the current political dispensation is the subject for the next chapter, it is interesting to contextualise it within the foregoing sanctions debate. It is an agreed position in the GPA that there would be elections at the expiration of the time frame given for its existence. However, of particular significance is that the environment for election should be free and fair and that elections should be held under a new constitution. The constitution making process is being spearheaded by the Select Committee of Parliament on the New Constitution (COPAC)<sup>54</sup>. The process, which has stalled on many instances because of inadequate funding and irreconcilable disputes between members of the Committee of Parliament on the New Constitution – differences that are largely on political grounds<sup>55</sup> – is still in progress. In line with this observation, it is also a proposition of the news report that ZANU PF would prefer to go to elections under the prevailing conditions and constitution because that way, they will still be able to manipulate the electoral system and ‘rig elections again’. Such evaluations are supported by attitudinal expressions from the leader of the other MDC faction (MDC-N), Professor Welshman Ncube (046 – 054) which suggest that ZANU

---

<sup>54</sup> COPAC is a Committee of Parliament that was mandated to spearhead the Constitution - making process in the country. It was established in April 2009. COPAC was founded based on Article VI of the Global Political Agreement (GPA) which was signed on 15 September 2008. The new Constitution is aimed at replacing the current Constitution which is a product of the Lancaster House Conference of 1979. It is widely regarded as inadequate because it has many shortcomings and has had to be amended 19 times. The COPAC is composed of 25 members of the 7th Parliament of Zimbabwe who were selected from the three political parties to spearhead the crafting of a new Constitution. The 25 members are referred to as the Select Committee of Parliament on the new Constitution. The Select Committee is led by three Co-chairpersons who were selected from each party, namely, Hon. Paul Mangwana from ZANU PF, Hon. Douglas Mwonzora from MDC T and Hon. Edward Mkhosi from MDC M. The following are the other members of the Committee: Hon Flora Buka, Hon. Amos Chibaya, Hon. Walter Chidakwa, Hon. Gift Chimankire, Hon. Edward Chindori Chininga, Hon. David Coltart, Hon. Gladys Dube, Hon. Joram Gumbo, Hon. Ian Kay, Hon. Martin Khumalo, Hon. Believe Gaule, Hon. Jessie Majome, Hon. Cephas Makuyana, Hon. Chief Fortune Charumbira, Hon. Thokozile Mathuthu, Hon. Rorana Muchihwa, Hon. Editor Matamisa, Hon. Tambudzani Mohadi, Hon. Olivia Muchena, Hon. Monica Mutsvangwa, Hon. Jabulani Ndlovu and Hon. Brian Tshuma.

(<http://www.copac.org.zw/home/copac-organisation-profile.html>)

<sup>55</sup> As indicated above, COPAC is constituted of members from all the three political parties to the GPA and spearheads the constitution making process. At the time of submission of this thesis, the commission had drafted a Draft Constitution scheduled for a referendum. Dates for the referendum were however still not set as there were still inherent disputes among the members of the Commission regards cited provisions within the draft constitution.

PF is gratified by the renewal of sanctions as such a situation accords them ‘political relevance’.

**5.4.3. Zimbabwe Independent** (03 March, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Zanu PF <b>coerces</b> [j] bank executives over sanctions <i>Chris Muronzi</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline</i> : Proposition that ZANU PF has forced banks to fund its anti-sanctions campaign)
005	TOP Zanu PF officials this week <b>summoned</b> [j] bank executives and <b>coerced</b> [j] them to support the party’s anti-sanctions crusade that was launched by President Robert Mugabe in the capital on Wednesday.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/ Appraisal)</b> (Restates the claims of headline that bank executives have been coerced to participate in campaign authorial inscribed evaluation of ZANU PF)
010	Banking sources told the Zimbabwe Independent this week that <ack> <u>Vice President John Nkomo, Presidential Affairs minister and Zanu PF secretary for administration Didymus Mutasa, Media and Information minister Webster Shamu, and party spokesperson Rugare Gumbo</u> <b>summoned</b> [j] bank executives to an urgent meeting on Tuesday to rally	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Restates the claims of headline that bank executives have been coerced to participate in campaign. Attributed inscribed evaluation of ZANU PF)
015	<u>all bank CEOs against sanctions.</u>	
	<u>All CEOs of Zimbabwe’s financial services firms attended the meeting,</u> <ack> a source said.	
020	At the meeting, the executives are said <ack> <u>to have been bullied</u> [j] into supporting <b>Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions drive</b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Restates the claims of headline that bank executives have been coerced to participate in campaign. Attributed inscribed evaluation of ZANU PF)
025	Bankers Association of Zimbabwe president John Mushayavanhu confirmed the top Zanu PF and government officials — Nkomo, Shamu, Gumbo and Mutasa — called an hour-long meeting on Tuesday	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the details of the meeting at which bank executives were coerced into funding the campaign)

	at FBC Holdings' Nelson Mandela headquarters.	
030	Mushayavanhu said: <ack> <u>“We had a meeting over sanctions where they were just saying there was going to be a launch and wanted us to attend if we were free. We agreed with them that <b>sanctions were not good for the country</b> [ap/j]. They requested a meeting and we agreed to meet.”</u>	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Further specification of the details of the meeting at which bank executives were coerced into funding the campaign. Attributed evaluation of sanctions)
035	After the meeting, sources say <ack> <u>banks were asked to contribute US\$16 000 for printing of anti-sanctions campaign T-Shirts,</u> a charge Mushayavanhu refuted.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Specifies and exemplifies how bank executives were coerced)
	Mushayavanhu said: <ack> <u>“We were not asked to pay any amount. They just mentioned that the campaign would obviously cost money and they would appreciate any kind of help.”</u>	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies and exemplifies how bank executives were coerced)
040	In the same meeting, <b>the executives were also asked to extend the anti-sanctions crusade to radio and television in the coming weeks as Zanu PF attempts to rally business behind its anti-embargo crusade</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies and exemplifies how bank executives were coerced into supporting the campaign)
045	According to sources, <ack> <u>the bankers were not given much choice</u> [ap/j] and agreed to Nkomo, Mutasa, Shamu and Gumbo's <u>orders</u> [j].	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies and exemplifies how bank executives were coerced into supporting the campaign)
050	This comes after Defence minister Emmerson Mnangagwa last month <b>threatened to seize a 90% stake in foreign businesses that did not demonise sanctions on radio and television</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 9: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which anti-sanctions campaign is framed)
	<b>Some local business leaders have already begun singing from the same song sheet as Zanu PF</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Exemplification and authorial evaluation of the coercive nature of ZANU PF)
055	At the Zanu PF organised rally on Wednesday, Confederation of Zimbabwe Industries president Joseph Kanyekanye spoke against sanctions.	<b>Satellite 11: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
	Kanyakanye said: <ack> <u>“I have come voluntarily to</u>	<b>Satellite 12:</b>

060	say no to sanctions. It is part of our 2010 resolutions where more than 300 businesspeople said <b>sanctions are not appropriate for Zimbabwe</b> [ap/j].	<b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
065	<ack> “ <i>We believe</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] that <b>sanctions have nothing to do with the human rights situation obtaining in the country</b> [ap/j]. We have a situation where we have ZDERA (Zimbabwe Democracy and Economic Recovery Act), which we are having problems with as the business community.	<b>Satellite 13:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
070	<ack> “This law <i>empowers</i> [j] the US Secretary for the Treasury to direct any US executive director sitting on international financial institutions to vote against extension of loans to Zimbabwe and to vote against cancellation or reduction of debt owed by Zimbabwe.	<b>Satellite 14:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
075	<ack> “As Zimbabweans, we must fight the sanctions and as CZI we had already taken a position a year ago because <b>they have caused unnecessary disunity in the country</b> [ap/j].”	<b>Satellite 15:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
080	Efforts to reach the CZI president after the event to ascertain the business group’s position on President Robert Mugabe’s <b>takeover threats</b> [j] proved fruitless as his mobile phone was switched off.	<b>Satellite 16:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
085	But Kanyekanye had on Wednesday said <ack> <b>political leaders had to stop politicking and attack the embargo</b> [j]. This, analysts say, <ack> <b>was in reference to Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai’s no show at the sanctions ceremony attended by mainly Zanu PF supporters</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 17:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
090	TA boss Shingi Mutasa also called for the removal of sanctions at an economic symposium in the capital recently.	<b>Satellite 18:</b> <b>Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the sanctions and their effect)
	Mugabe launched his anti-sanctions campaign on Wednesday and <b>threatened to seize foreign</b>	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal/ Intertextualisation</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluations of the

	<b><u>companies</u></b> [j].	sanctions and their effect)
095	Mugabe, the Zanu PF leadership and a multitude of supporters who attended the meeting appended their signatures to what the party said <dist> <b><u>was an anti-sanctions petition</u></b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the anti-sanctions campaign)
100	The United States and European Union <b><u>imposed sanctions on Zanu PF officials and froze their assets held abroad</u></b> [j/ap] after the party <b><u>launched a violent campaign</u></b> [j] in the 2002 presidential polls observers said <ack> <b><u>were not free and fair</u></b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of ZANU PF – as cause of the imposition of sanctions. The political context in which sanctions were imposed and in which campaign is taking place)
105	<b>But Zanu PF contends the US and EU imposed sanctions on Zimbabwe and its leaders to punish them for resettling landless blacks</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 22: Appraisal</b> (Authorial evaluation of the ZANU PF position regarding the sanctions)

#### 5.4.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The story presents an authorial stance that negatively evaluates ZANU PF and the proposed Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign. Such negative evaluations are largely framed in JUDGEMENT resources which negatively depict ZANU PF in its capacity as a political entity, as well as its actions with regards to the manner in which it prepares for the launch of the campaign. ZANU PF is portrayed as coercive and forcing people to participate in the campaign through threats of violence and physical acts of violence. The negative evaluations of ZANU PF are expressed through both overt authorial inscriptions and tokenised invocations which are largely of JUDGEMENT. This attitudinally evaluative authorial position is initially set out by both the headline and the lead (001 – 007),

#### **Zanu PF coerces [j] bank executives over sanctions**

TOP Zanu PF officials this week **summoned** [j] bank executives and **coerced** [j] them to support the party's anti-sanctions crusade that was launched by President Robert Mugabe in the capital on Wednesday.

The authorial position is further reinforced in the subsequent paragraphs which also express an overt negative authorial evaluation of ZANU PF as having 'bullied' (019), 'coerced'

(004) and ‘**summoned**’ (013) the bankers to fund their campaign, bankers who are also reported to having been ‘**not given much choice**’ (045 – 046) and given ‘**orders**’ (047).

This position, set out through by the authorial evaluations is also reinforced through tokenised invocations. Of course, it is important to note that JUDGEMENT resources are also used in the story to also negatively evaluate the sanctions. These evaluations are however occurring as attributed material. While they seem to be condemning the sanctions through negative evaluations, the author in a way downplays their claims through tokenised invocations. When we observe those evaluations which are invoked rather than inscribed, we notice that they reflect an attitudinal endorsement of the authorial stance established earlier on in the lead and headline. They reinforce this attitudinal position by invoking negative JUDGEMENT of ZANU PF, specifically its aggressive tendencies such as threats of violence and physical acts of violence towards those opposed to its policies, in particular, the anti-sanctions campaign.

The following segment (048 – 051) demonstrates an exemplification of such invoked tokens:

This comes after Defence minister Emmerson Mnangagwa last month **threatened to seize a 90% stake in foreign businesses that did not demonise sanctions on radio and television** [j].

as well as (052 – 054),

**Some local business leaders have already begun singing from the same song sheet as Zanu PF** [ap/j].

These invocations serve to background the propositions made by the authorial voice. In particular, the first example above would prevail as evidence that the idea of ZANU PF bullying people is not far-fetched as this serves as an example of its capabilities to be so. Also, in another way this token negatively evaluates the campaign as not being voluntary but forced, in the process giving credence to the authorial stance. The second example above would be another token that the reporter uses to indicate how fearful of ZANU PF the local businesses are to the extent that they have already conceded to its threats and demands. In this spirit, the authorial voice comes out through the tokens to reinforce the authorial stance that negatively evaluates ZANU PF as violent and therefore gives credence to the story’s major claim that the banks were forced to contribute towards the campaign.



015	Danho iri richaona Hurumende ichitenga masheya anoita kuti ive mwene wemakambani ose ari <b><u>kutsigira zvirango zveupfumi zvakatemerwa Zimbabwe</u></b> [j].	This move is set to see government acquiring shares and ownership of all companies that are <b><u>seen to be supporting these sanctions against Zimbabwe</u></b> [j].	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
020 025	Mashoko aya akataurwa negurukota rezvekudzivirirwa kwenyika Cde Emmerson Munangagwa svondo rakapera apo vakati hurongwa uhwu hwakange hwave <i>padanho repamusoro</i> [ap].	This was revealed last week by Defence Minister Emmerson Mnangagwa who also indicated that the plans for this were now at <i>an advanced stage</i> [ap].	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
030	... achipa hurumende chikamu che 90% chemasheya uyewo mari dzichawanikwa pakuita kwawo basa dzichange dzichishandiswa kurwisa zvirango izvi.	...ceding 90% of their shares to the government and monies generated from this will be channelled towards the fight against the sanctions.	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
035	<ack> <b><u>“Pari zvino tiri muhurongwa hwekutura nevakuru vemakambani aya ekunze ari kushanda muno tichiva-bvunza kana vachitsigira zvirango kana kwete</u></b> [j].	<ack> <b><u>“We are currently in the process of engaging in dialogue with the owners of these foreign owned companies asking them if they support the sanctions or not</u></b> [j].	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
040 045	<b><u>“Avo vachati havatsigire zvirango izvi tichavakumbira kuti vabude panhepfenyuro vachimhura zvirango izvi</u></b> [j], <b><u>avo vano zvisigira</u></b> [j], <b><u>tichasara tisina rimwe danho ratingatore kunze kwekuvaomesera,</u></b> ” <ack> Cde Mnangagwa vakadaro.	<b><u>“We will ask those who do not to go on radio and condemn them</u></b> [j] and for those <b><u>who support them</u></b> [j], we will be left with no other options but to be tough on them,” <ack> said Cde Mnangagwa.	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
	Makambani anopfuura 500 ekunze kwenyika arikuita	More than 500 foreign owned companies are	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b>

050	mabasa akasiyana munyika chero zvazvo <b>akawanda acho ari kubva kunyika dziri kumhura Zimbabwe</b> [ap/j].	registered and conducting business in Zimbabwe and <b>most of them are from the same countries condemning Zimbabwe</b> [ap/j].	(Further specifies how the government will fight the sanctions)
055 060	Cde Mnangagwa vakati <ack> <u>chinhu chinofadza</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] kuona nyika <u>ichitsungirira kurwisa zvirango izvi</u> [j/ap] upenyu <u>huchienderera mberi</u> [ap]. <ack> <b>“Patakatanga chironzwa chekugovera ivhu nyika dzekunze dzakarwisa mari yedu yemuno ichishaya simba</b> [j].	Cde Mnangagwa said <ack> it is <u>gratifying</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] that the nation has <u>persevered in the face of the sanctions</u> [j/ap] and <u>life still goes on</u> [ap]. <ack> <b>“When we began the Agrarian Land Reform Programme, foreign countries interfered and our currency lost value</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 7: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies context in which sanctions are being fought. Attributed inscribed evaluation of sanctions imposers)
065 070	<b>“Takarwisa</b> [j] izvi nekutanga kushandisa iyo mari yavo ivo, iyo <b>yavasingakwanise kurwisa</b> [j] izvo <u>zvashandura upenyu hwevanhu</u> [ap]. Izvi zvinotaridza kuti <u>tine hutungamiri hunokwanisa kudzivirira nyika yedu</u> [j],” <ack> Cde Mnangagwa vakadaro.	<b>“We fought back by using their money, which they cannot fight</b> [j] and this has <u>uplifted the livelihood of the majority of our people</u> [ap]. This shows that we have a <u>government that can defend our country and its people</u> [j],” <ack> said Cde Mnangagwa.	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies and exemplifies how government has already started fighting sanctions)
075	Vakati <ack> <b>chironzwa chekugovewa kwevhu hachidzokeri shure</b> [ap] chero zvazvo nyika dzemhiri <b>dzikachirwisa sei</b> [j].	He said <ack> there is <u>no going back</u> [ap] on the land reform programme nomatter how much the foreign countries <b>fight it</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 9: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which sanctions were imposed and are being fought)
080	<b>Zvizvarwa zveZimbabwe hazvikwanise kupatsanurwa kubva kuivhu razvo uye ibasa remunhu wose kudzivirira ivhu iri.</b>	<b>Zimbabwean cannot be separated from their land and it is the duty of every Zimbabwean to defend the land.</b>	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which sanctions were imposed and are being fought)
	<ack> <b>“Takawana ivhu iri</b>	<ack> <b>“We got this land</b>	<b>Satellite 11: Contextualisation</b>

085	<p><b>kubva kupfuti nekudaro</b>  <b>pfuti chete ndiyo</b>  <b>ingakwanise kutora ivhu iri</b>  <b>kubva kwatiri kwete imwe</b>  <b>nzira.</b></p>	<p><b>back by the gun and it will</b>  <b>only take a gun to take the</b>  <b>land away from us again.</b></p>	(Political context in which sanctions were imposed and are being fought)
090	<p><b>“Chinyoreso chinofanirwa</b>  <b>chete kuratidza kuti isu</b>  <b>ndisu varidzi vevhu iri</b>  <b>kwete kudzosera michero</b>  <b>yekuwana kuzvitonga,”</b></p>	<p><b>“The pen is only there to</b>  <b>write down that we are the</b>  <b>real owners of the land,</b>  <b>not to reverse the fruits of</b>  <b>the liberation war and</b>  <b>independence,”</b></p>	<b>Satellite 12:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which sanctions were imposed and are being fought)
095	<p>&lt;ack&gt; Cde Mnangagwa vakadaro.</p>	<p>&lt;ack&gt; said Cde Mnangagwa.</p>	

#### 5.4.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The major proposition in the news report is that the sanctions imposed on the country have no legitimacy and should be fought. It is also the concern of the report to express a government position with regards to the sanctions – that they were imposed because of the Land Redistribution exercise and that the government has made progress in retaliating against the sanctions. The hoped for retaliation, expressed through material attributed to Defence Minister Emmerson Munangagwa will see foreign owned companies losing a 90% stake of their shares to the government. Such retaliation is specifically spelled out to those companies whose origins are in the countries that imposed or support sanctions against Zimbabwe. The news report presents little evidence of overt authorial evaluations. Where they do occur, they do so to the minimum. This is in line with the demands of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. However, when they do occur, they do so as both negative and positive authorial inscribed evaluations. Positive inscribed evaluations attributable to the authorial voice are made of the stance that the government has taken to challenge and fight the sanctions. This is a position assumed in both the headline and the lead of the story. Negative authorial inscribed evaluations are made of both the sanctions which are through the authorial voice, evaluated as ‘illegal’ and their imposers, in this regard, Britain and its allies as illustrated in the following segment (004 – 012).

Hurumende munguva iri kutevera ichange ichtanga homwe yemari yakamirira kurwisa nekukurudzira kubvi-swa kwezvirango zveu-pfumi [j/ap] zvakatemerwa Zimbabwe neBritain ichiba-tsirana nedzimwe nyika dzemhiri kwemakungwa [j].

(The government will soon set up a fund to fight against the **illegal sanctions** [j/ap] **imposed on the country by Britain working together with other Western countries** [j].)

Through attributed inscribed evaluations, especially those of JUDGEMENT resources, the report challenges the legitimacy of the imposition of the sanctions by presenting a position that the sanctions were imposed because of the government's redistribution of land to the landless black majority in the country. In light of such an observation, positive attributed inscribed evaluations are thus made of the Zimbabwean government, specifically the ZANU PF leadership for managing to defend the country's sovereignty and improving, through its policies, the livelihood of the country's population (065 - 073).

“Takarwisa izvi nekutanga kushandisa iyo mari yavo ivo, iyo **yavasingakwanise kurwisa** [j] izvo *zvashandura upenyu hwevanhu* [ap]. Izvi zvinotaridza kuti *tine hutungamiri hunokwanisa kudzivirira nyika yedu* [j].” Cde Mnangagwa vakadaro.

(“We fought back by using their money, which **they cannot fight** [j] and this has *uplifted the livelihood of the majority of our people* [ap]. This shows that we have a *government able to defend our country and its people* [j].” said Cde Mnangagwa.)

These attributed positive inscriptions of both the country's leadership and the improvements on the livelihood of the nation are juxtaposed with attributed negative evaluations that present themselves as both inscriptions and tokenised invocations. There are, in the news report, tokens of evaluation that negatively evaluate the actions of Britain and its allies for imposing the sanctions. With regards to this evaluation of the sanctions and their imposers, there are also strong intimations given through attributed material that assume a stance that contends that the ‘real’ cause for the imposition of the sanctions was the government's land redistribution exercise. The following segment (055 – 064) exemplifies this:

Cde Mnangagwa vakati *chinhu chinofadza* [1<sup>st</sup> af] kuona nyika *ichitsungirira kurwisa zvirango izvi* [j] upenyu *huchienderera mberi* [ap]. <ack> **“Patakatanga chirongwa chekugovera ivhu nyika dzekunze dzakarwisa mari yedu yemuno ichishaya simba** [j].

(Cde Mnangagwa said it is *gratifying* [1<sup>st</sup> af] that the nation has *persevered in the face of the sanctions* [j] and life still *progresses* [ap]. <ack> **“When we began the Agrarian Land Reform Programme, foreign countries interfered and our currency lost value** [j].)

The contention presented here is that Britain and its allies embarked on an economic war with the country in a bid to destabilise it, especially so through destabilising its currency. This, the attributed voice contends, was in response to the government's actions to rectify the land distribution patterns in the country. The government, and by extension the ZANU PF leadership receives positive evaluations in the same, largely those of social esteem (capacity) for its abilities to defend the country and its people through setting up policies that improve the people's livelihood. Invocations that suggest threats of war against any plots to undermine the land reform exercise are also expressed through attribution. The instance of such reinforces the position that the sanctions debate revolves around the land issue and nothing else, a position that ZANU PF has assumed officially and a position also explicitly espoused by the government-owned news agencies, both print and broadcast and also expressed here (074 – 095):

Vakati chironywa chekugovewa kwevhu *hachidzokeri shure* [ap] chero zvazvo nyika dzemhiri **dzikachirwisa sei** [j].

**Zvizvarwa zveZimbabwe hazvikwanise kupatsanurwa kubva kuivhu razvo uye ibasa remunhu wose kudzivirira ivhu iri.**

**“Takawana ivhu iri kubva kupfuti nekudaro pfuti chete ndiyo ingakwanise kutora ivhu iri kubva kwatiri kwete imwe nzira.**

**“Chinyoreso chinofanirwa chete kuratidza kuti isu ndisu varidzi vevhu iri kwete kudzosea michero yekuwana kuzvitonga,”** <ack> Cde Mnangagwa vakadaro.

(He reiterated that there was no going back on the land reform programme nomatter how much the foreign countries are **fighting** [j] it.

<ack> **Zimbabwean cannot be separated from their land and it is the duty of every Zimbabwean to defend the land.**

<ack > **“We got this land back by the gun and it will only take a gun to take the land away from us again.**

**“The pen is only there to write down that we are the real owners of the land, not to reverse the fruits of the liberation war and independence,”** <ack> said Cde Mnangagwa.)

An interesting observation is that threats, which would normally signal negative JUDGEMENT evaluations, are used here in a positive manner. The government, through the voice of the Defence Minister makes threats to acquire a 90% stake in all foreign owned companies operating in the country as well as the expulsion of, and total acquisition of companies that support the embargo. Companies that claim to be against the sanctions are to condemn them on national radio at the sanction of the government. These acts of threats and coercion are evaluated in the report as positive JUDGEMENT resources, positively evaluating the government as a capable one, one that would do anything for its people even through retaliation.

#### **5.4.5. Comparative analytic perspective**

This section constitutes a comparative discussion on the news reports on the state of sanctions in Zimbabwe which are published prior to the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition campaign. The appraisal analyses done on the news reports give evidence that the ‘reporter voice’ configuration is satisfied by *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* news reports. This assessment is supported by the observation that the news reports are characterised by few instances of inscribed authorial attitudinal expressions. Of course, there are obvious traits of authorial biases that permeate through the news reports but, while such instances present themselves in these news reports they are somewhat restricted to a low probability. While in these news reports there are obvious and visible subjective positionings, they are not made explicitly through the authorial voice but instead occur as either tokenised invocations or as attributed inscriptions and tokens. In other words, evaluations in these news reports, both positive and negative, are located within some strategic impersonalisations, largely framed as attribution.

On the other hand, the proliferation of express authorial subjectivities is visible in the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* news reports. The authorial voice in these news reports is clearly visible and clearly articulated. The authorial voice in the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* news reports presents negative evaluations of the impending launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition campaign. Such evaluations cast the campaign as lacking a national flair as claimed by its organisers and as merely a ZANU PF political plot. In the process, the authorial voice also negatively evaluates ZANU PF as well as in particular, its leader Robert Mugabe. What is interesting with regards to these two reports is the manner in which the authorial position is clearly established through both the headline and lead. The propositions made through the headlines and leads in the two news reports are followed through in the

bodies of the news reports by other evaluative materials endorsing and reinforcing these authorial positions. This evinces an explicit position that there is no attempt at all by the authors to remain ‘neutral’. Such authorial evaluations are illustrated by the following extracts from the news reports:

(a) *Newsday*

**Discord [ap] in coalition over sanctions**

President Robert Mugabe and Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions campaign [ap/j], set to be officially launched on Wednesday, is **likely to kick off to a false start** [ap] after **their partners in the coalition government vowed not to join the campaign** [ap/j].

(b) *Zimbabwe Independent*

**Zanu PF coerces [j] bank executives over sanctions**

TOP Zanu PF officials this week **summoned** [j] bank executives and **coerced** [j] them to support the party’s anti-sanctions crusade that was launched by President Robert Mugabe in the capital on Wednesday.

The headlines and leads of the two news reports position the authorial voice subjectively. The manner in which, despite being framed in attribution (attributed largely to compelling external voices/experts), all the other inscriptions serve as endorsements of the positions already assumed by the authorial voice(s). It thus becomes plausible to argue for embedded subjectivities as well as authorial appraisals through external voices. This is, however, not a phenomenon restricted to the two news reports but also evinces itself in *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* news reports. With knowledge of the polarised political situation in Zimbabwe, we can argue that there is evidence in the news reports of media biases arising from political inclinations. This is validated through the manner in which the authorial positions assumed by the headlines as well as leads of these two news reports assumes positive evaluations of the launch of the campaign, in complete juxtaposition to that assumed by the private owned publications as discussed above. Evaluations of ZANU PF and the ‘fight’ against the sanctions made in the news reports are thus largely of positive JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION while negative JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION attitudinal evaluations are made of the MDC-T and its leadership as well as Britain and the sanctions themselves. I reproduce, in light of the observation the headlines and leads of both *The Herald* and *Kwayedza*:

(a) *The Herald***Anti-sanction lobby *gathers momentum* [ap]***Herald Reporters*

THOUSANDS of Zimbabweans are *expected to throng* [ap] the Harare Agricultural Show Open Car Park on Wednesday where President Mugabe is billed to launch the National Anti-Sanctions Petition Campaign.

(b) *Kwayedza***Hurumende *yorwisa* [j/ap] *zvirango****neMunyori weKwayedza*

Hurumende munguva iri kutevera ichange ichitanga homwe yemari yakamirira kurwisa nekukurudzira kubviswa kwe**zvirango zveupfumi** [j/ap] **zvakatemerwa Zimbabwe neBritain ichibatsirana nedzimwe nyika dzemhiri kwemakungwa** [j].

(Government *fight*s [ap/j] sanctions)*Kwayedza Reporter*

The government will soon set up a fund to fight against the **illegal sanctions** [j/ap] **imposed on the country by Britain working together with other Western countries** [j].)

Without dwelling on the propositions relayed by the headlines and leads, which have been discussed above, the news reports give evidence of the proliferation of authorial subjectivities in them – subjectivities that positively evaluate the anti-sanctions campaign and its organisers while condemning the imposers of the sanctions as well as the sanctions. While the inferences into the political nature of the press in Zimbabwe fall outside the scope of the current research, it is an important one in providing a context to understanding how media ownership patterns often tend to influence journalistic as well as editorial positions and biases, effectually influencing the manners in which linguistic choices are made.

A theoretical concern that I would point to here is the manner in which the structural organisation of hard news reports in Zimbabwean reporting culture exponentially differs with that of English broadsheet ‘hard’ news reports. This however, is a concern that will be addressed in the concluding discussion of the chapter (section 5.7). There is evidence of a structural arrangement in which the main concerns of a news report are purveyed through external voices. This also explains why the larger part of evaluative resources, both inscriptions and invocations, are expressed through these external voices. The structural arrangement of the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers would thus at best be described

as a sequential arrangement of quoted material. Even a cursory glance at such reports, however, will reveal a trend in which such attributed materials serve as reinforcements and/or elucidations of/to the positions established by the authorial voice in both the headlines and the leads of the news reports. This, thus presents one with a theoretical challenge as to how to analyse authorial subjectivities, especially so in light of this glaring absence of evidential material that espouses authorial voice. The subsequent analyses will consider the manner(s) in which evaluations framed in attributions evince affinities with evidence (if any) within the news report that suggest authorial appraisals through the words of others.

### **5.5. Reporting the launch of the Anti-Sanctions Campaign**

As indicated earlier in section 5.3, on the 2<sup>nd</sup> of March 2011, the President of the Republic of Zimbabwe and First Secretary of ZANU PF, Robert Gabriel Mugabe officially launched the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign against the USA and the EU imposed sanctions. The campaign sought to collect 2 million signatures from ordinary Zimbabweans. The motivation behind the launch and the collection of signatures, ZANU PF explained, was to prove that the sanctions were ‘real’, ‘not targeted’ and affecting all Zimbabweans. This was a position that sought to oppose the ‘claims’ made by the USA and the EU that there were no sanctions on Zimbabwe as a nation but only targeted restrictions on named embargoed individuals. Collecting the 2 million signatures, ZANU PF believed, would thus prove to the world, the USA and the EU that the Zimbabwean population were also opposed to them and wanted them lifted. The EU position on the sanctions on the other hand was that,

Sanctions are measures against a country and government. They have an immediate effect on a country and there is an immediate impact on support that (the) EU can give to a country. And in the case of Zimbabwe, we do not have sanctions. The EU has been supportive of the Zimbabwean government.<sup>56</sup>

On the other hand, the ZANU PF position with regards to the reasons for launching the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign was an insistence on the belief that the sanctions were ‘real economic sanctions’ and affecting not only the named individuals as claimed by the USA and the EU, but the nation at large. This position, for example, is expressly espoused on the

---

<sup>56</sup> This EU position was expressed by the EU Ambassador to Zimbabwe, Aldo Dell’Ariccia in an interview with Zimbabwe Independent’s Elias Mambo: “There are no sanctions on Zim — EU envoy” – Zimbabwe Independent, Thursday 15 March, 2012.

ZANU PF official website in a document citing reasons for condemning the sanctions as well as encouraging the ordinary Zimbabweans to sign the petition reproduced below:

**TEN STRONG REASONS WHY YOU MUST SIGN AGAINST SANCTIONS!**<sup>57</sup>

- Sanctions are an attack on **ALL ZIMBABWEANS**. They are wholesale; they are personalized or targeted.
- Sanctions are an attack on **OUR ECONOMY**, our search for total empowerment. They are an attack on **BUSINESS**, on **WORKERS**, on **CONSUMERS**.
- Sanctions are an **ATTACK ON OUR HEALTH**, on the education of **OUR CHILDREN**, on our social services and our infrastructure. They are an attack on the entire fabric of society.
- Sanctions are an attack especially on the **VULNERABLE** in our society: aids orphans, the disabled, the aged, the youth, women and children.
- Sanctions are an attack on our **LAND** and our land rights. The aim to create conditions for the reversal of the land reforms. They amount to an attack on you, the **NEW FARMER**.
- Sanctions are **ILLEGAL**, undeserved and spiteful. They are unilaterally imposed outside the United Nations mandate by a British-led Western coalition defending **MINORITY RIGHTS** in our country.
- Sanctions are a challenge to our **NATIONAL SOVEREIGNTY**: they are an illegal measure by foreigners working on challenging sovereign people. They are an outsider's law and/or policy, set against an independent country and people with its own legislature.
- Sanctions are a **RACIST ATTACK** on an African people.
- Sanctions are a tool for **REGIME CHANGE**.
- Sanctions are a **GROSS HUMAN RIGHT VIOLATION**, indeed a violation of African rights.

Recognising the stances of both the EU and USA as well as that of ZANU PF with regards to the sanctions espoused above, the following constitutes an analysis of the news reports on the official launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign across the newspapers under study.

**5.5.1. *The Herald* (03 March, 2011)**

	<b>APPRAISAL ANALYSIS</b>	<b>ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS</b>
001	Thousands <i>denounce</i> [j] sanctions <i>By Peter Matambanadzo and Farirai Machivenyika</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline:</i> Proposition that the anti-

<sup>57</sup> [http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=166](http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=166)

		sanctions campaign was a success and well attended)
005	Thousands of Zimbabweans yesterday <i>converged</i> [j] at the Harare Exhibition Park's open car park to <i>publicly affirm</i> [j] their <b>opposition</b> [j] to the <b>illegal Western sanctions on the country</b> [j/ap].	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/Appraisal)</b> (Restates the propositions of the headline and authorial inscribed evaluation of the sanctions and their imposers)
010	The <i>multitudes</i> [ap] - clad in party and church regalia - <b>started arriving at the venue as early as 7am to witness President Mugabe launch the National Anti-Sanctions Petition Campaign</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Restates and exemplifies claims that campaign was well attended)
	The <i>young and the old</i> [ap], some wearing T-shirts emblazoned with anti-sanctions messages, sang revolutionary songs and <i>denounced</i> [j] the embargo.	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the campaign and attendees)
015	Some of them carried placards with solidarity messages that read " <b>Pasi nesvetasimba</b> " [j], " <b>We say no to sanctions</b> " [1 <sup>st</sup> af], " <b>Sanctions are evil</b> " [j] and " <b>Do away with sanctions</b> " [j/1 <sup>st</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration/Justification</b> (Specifies that motives of/reasons for the campaign)
020	The <i>lively gathering</i> [ap] is the <i>biggest statement</i> [ap/j] yet <i>that the generality of Zimbabweans are opposed to sanctions</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 4: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of attendees and their emotional reactions to sanctions)
	Asked what had brought them out in such huge numbers, individuals said <ack> <b>they were fed up</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with <b>claims that the sanctions were targeted and did not hurt the economy</b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 5: Justification</b> (Specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
025	Mr Cleophas Charandura of Highfield said: <ack> <b>"The sanctions have never been targeted at all</b> [j/ap], that is why you see all these people here.	<b>Satellite 6: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
	<b>"They have been affected by the sanctions and want them gone</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 7: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
030	"It is <b>disturbing</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] that (MDC-T leader Morgan) Tsvangirai and his party <b>boycotted</b> [j] the event and <b>it is now clear that they support the suffering of Zimbabweans.</b> [j]" Mrs Beatrice Zengwe from Chikomba said <ack>	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of MDC and its stance on the campaign and sanctions)

035	the <b>illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap] had <b>destroyed Zimbabwe's economy</b> [ap/j].	
	"The sanctions have <b>affected</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] us greatly that is why I am here to condemn them.	<b>Satellite 9: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
040	"We are <b>failing</b> [ap/1 <sup>st</sup> af] to provide for our families or even send our children to school because of these sanctions.	<b>Satellite 10: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
	" <b>Every Zimbabwean should sign this petition if they have the interests of the country at heart</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 11: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
045	"The behaviour of the MDC-T leadership confirms that they want Zimbabweans to suffer for their <b>selfish</b> [j] interests."	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of MDC and its stance on the campaign and sanctions)
050	Mrs Chipu Mabvuta of Chikore, Manicaland, said <ack> sanctions <b>affected</b> [j] their livelihoods so much that rural folk could not send their children to school.	<b>Satellite 13: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
	"We cannot make ends meet because of the <b>sanctions</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/ap].	<b>Satellite 14: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
055	"Some of us depend on farming but we are <b>failing to obtain inputs because of these sanctions</b> [ap/j] and this has resulted in the hunger we have experienced in the past.	<b>Satellite 15: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
060	"I expected all our leaders to come out and <b>condemn the sanctions because that is what they agreed (in the Global Political Agreement),</b> [j]" she said.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of MDC and its stance on the campaign and sanctions)
	Mr Spencer Mabheka from Mabelreign, Harare added: <ack> "We want to remove the <b>myth</b> [j/ap] that the sanctions are targeted at few individuals.	<b>Satellite 17: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
065	"They are not. <b>They are meant to foment illegal</b>	<b>Satellite 18: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason

	<u>regime change [j/ap].</u>	why sanctions are 'denounced')
	<u>"We came here to show that we support President Mugabe and his leadership [j] and that the sanctions will not deter us from reclaiming our resources and heritage [j/ap]."</u>	<b>Satellite 19: Justification</b> (Further specifies reason why sanctions are 'denounced')
070  075	<u>Diplomats, Government officials, service chiefs, traditional leaders, business leaders, men and women of the cloth, trade unionists, students and informal traders joined ordinary Zimbabweans at yesterday's declaration of opposition to sanctions [ap].</u>	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of attendees and their emotional reactions to sanctions)
	President Mugabe's arrival at around 11:15am was marked with <u>rapturous applause [ap/j].</u>	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of attendees and their emotional reactions to sanctions)
080	Waving his trademark fist, the President went around the crowd to greet the people as <u>a swarm of journalists tried to keep pace with him [j/ap].</u>	<b>Satellite 22: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign)
	Musician Sekuru Gweshe and the Police Band matched <u>the high tempo [ap]</u> with performances to suit the occasion.	<b>Satellite 23: Appraisal</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign)

### 5.5.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report makes evaluations that suggest that the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign was a resounding success and exhibiting a national consensus that the embargo must be lifted. This is done through positive evaluations of the campaign itself, ZANU PF as well as the actions of the attendees. Such evaluations, made largely through JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources are expressed from both the authorial voice as well as through attributed material, which occurs as both inscriptions and tokens. As evinced by the headline and the first five paragraphs of the news story, which are all not attributed, the authorial voice assumes a position that positively evaluates the campaign as a resounding success and a cursory glance at these parts of the news report betray the authorial subjectivities. For example, in evaluating the crowd in attendance, the reporter makes use of adjectival resources that exude the notion that the campaign was well supported by the generality of the Zimbabwean people from all works of life, in the process painting the

picture of a national consensus against sanctions. The crowd is in line with this position described as ‘**thousands**’ (001), ‘**[t]housands of Zimbabweans**’ (003), ‘**[t]he multitudes**’ (007), ‘**[t]he young and old**’ (011), ‘**clad in party and church regalia**’ (007), ‘**the lively gathering**’ (018), ‘**the biggest statement**’ (018), ‘**huge numbers**’ (021 – 022) and so on and that they are ‘**the generality of Zimbabweans [who] are opposed to sanctions**’ (019 – 020).

The evaluations made by the authorial voice, which positively evaluate the launch of the campaign, as indicated above present a position that the sanctions were affecting not only the targeted individuals but the general population of Zimbabwe and therefore there is, as presented through the authorial voice, a national consensus campaigning for the lifting of the sanctions. The propositions made through these evaluations reinforcing the notion that the sanctions were a national problem as represented by Zimbabweans from all walks of life attending the campaign and appending their signatures to the petition in support of the campaign are largely not framed in attribution and are thus expressed through the authorial voice. This position, established through the authorial voice also reverberates throughout the entire report through attributed material and is again further reinforced through the authorial voice towards the end of the news report, in the conclusion of the report through positive evaluations of APPRECIATION as follows (070 – 075):

*Diplomats, Government officials, service chiefs, traditional leaders, business leaders, men and women of the cloth, trade unionists, students and informal traders joined ordinary Zimbabweans at yesterday's declaration of opposition to sanctions [ap].*

The image created by the above evaluation reinforces the image of a national consensus against sanctions as propositioned by the authorial voice. Positive evaluations are also made of ZANU PF as a political party committed to the people's interests as well as of the leadership of the President of the Republic (who is also ZANU PF leader), Robert Mugabe. The evaluations made of Robert Mugabe are largely of social esteem – capacity to be precise. Such evaluations are, however, largely occurring in attribution and as such, distance the author from the subjectivities embedded in them. Of significance however, is the manner in which such positive evaluations of ZANU PF and Robert Mugabe are juxtaposed with negative JUDGEMENT evaluations of the MDC and its leadership, especially its president Morgan Tsvangirai. I observe in light of this the following explicit negative evaluations, which are also framed in attribution (030 – 033):

"It is **disturbing** [1<sup>st</sup> af] that (MDC-T leader Morgan) Tsvangirai and his party **boycotted** [j] the event and **it is now clear that they support the suffering of Zimbabweans.** [j]"

These negative evaluations of MDC-T and its leader as unconcerned about the interests of the people are juxtaposed with the positive evaluations of ZANU PF and Robert Mugabe as committed to such interests as well as representing good leadership. In as much as these evaluations of both ZANU PF and MDC-T are occurring in attributed material, they work to reinforce the authorial position assumed in the first five paragraphs of the news report. In addition, the news report makes extensive use of negative JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources. Where these evaluations are used, they are largely framed in attribution as explicit negative evaluations of both the sanctions and the West, for imposing them. It is also quite a plausible argument to observe that these negative evaluations/assessments first occur in the lead through authorial inscribed judgment and where they occur in attributed material, they do so to reinforce the stance already assumed by the authorial voice. The authorial voice in question here is assumed in the lead in which the author, through unattributed material passes assessment on the sanctions as ‘illegal’ (003 – 006):

Thousands of Zimbabweans yesterday *converged* [j] at the Harare Exhibition Park's open car park to *publicly affirm* [j] their **opposition** [j] to the **illegal Western sanctions on the country** [j/ap].

Through this evaluation of authorial inscribed judgement, the authorial voice negatively evaluates both the sanctions and the West for imposing them. This position, assumed initially through the authorial voice is further reinforced throughout the news report through attributed material. This plays into the notion of subjective selection of the ‘voices’ of news which we have previously argued to be a not so innocent enterprise – not innocent of authorial subjectivities.

**5.5.2. *Newsday* (03 March, 2011)**

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Tsvangirai <b>snubs</b> [j] Mugabe <i>Kelvin Jakachira</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> <i>(Appraised                      Headline:</i> Tsvangirai has snubbed the anti-sanctions campaign)
	Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai Wednesday	<b>Nucleus: Lead</b>

005	<b>snubbed</b> [j] the official launch of <b>President Robert Mugabe’s anti-sanctions crusade</b> [ap/j], describing the event as a <b>Zanu PF project</b> [ap/j].	<b>(Elaboration/Appraisal)</b> (Restates the propositions of headline. Authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign)
010	However, Zanu PF spokesperson Rugare Gumbo immediately <b>shot back, accusing</b> [j] the MDC-T of <b>breaching provisions of the Global Political Agreement</b> [j] (GPA) where the party committed to cooperate in denouncing the sanctions.	<b>Satellite 1: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the MDC and Tsvangirai with regards to the snub)
015	But Tsvangirai said <ack> <b>he was concerned</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] about the <b>violations of people’s rights</b> [j] and <b>the upsurge of politically-motivated violence</b> [j/ap] <dist> <b>“in the name of an election”</b> .	<b>Satellite 2: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)
020	He said <ack> <b>Sadc, the African Union and the international community should keep an eye on the country</b> [j/ap] because it risked “sliding over the precipice” if the guarantors of the GPA did not take immediate action to come up with a binding roadmap as a precondition ahead of the next election.	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies political context in which the snub occurs)
025	Tsvangirai told a media conference in Harare <ack> <b>the anti-sanctions campaign was a Zanu PF programme</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign attributed inscribed evaluation of campaign)
	“First of all we have to be clear that today’s (Wednesday) programme was a <b>Zanu PF function</b> [ap/j].” <ack> Tsvangirai said.	<b>Satellite 5: Justification/Appraisal</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign and attributed inscribed evaluation of campaign)
030	<b>He accused Zanu PF of abusing the government insignia when it placed an advert in The Herald newspaper announcing Wednesday’s “million men march”</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 6: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)
035	Tsvangirai said <ack> <b>the programme was organised by Zanu PF and its party slogans were constantly chanted during the proceedings.</b>	<b>Satellite 7: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)
	“The <b>abuse was a Zanu PF character</b> [j].” <ack>	<b>Satellite 8: Justification/</b>

	he said.	<b>Appraisal</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign. Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF and campaign)
040	“There was no way I could have attended the function. <b>How do I attend a function where I am being denounced?” [j]</b>	<b>Satellite 9: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)
	Gumbo said <ack> <b>Zanu PF was not surprised Tsvangirai and his party officials did not participate in the campaign because “they are the ones who sponsored the sanctions” [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the MDC and Tsvangirai with regards to the snub)
045	“How can they come when they <b>campaigned for the sanctions?” [j]</b> <ack> Gumbo said.	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the MDC and Tsvangirai with regards to the snub)
050	“If they feel they do not want to be part of the anti-sanctions campaign, it’s up to them. It’s part of the GPA. They accuse Zanu PF of not fulfilling the GPA but the removal of sanctions is part of the GPA.”	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of the MDC and Tsvangirai with regards to the snub)
055	Responding to <b>President Mugabe’s call to grab foreign firms [j]</b> , Tsvangirai said <ack> <b>it was not legally possible for the government to seize foreign-owned companies.</b>	<b>Satellite 13: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies the political context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
	He said <ack> <b>this could only be done by “thugs” [j] and not a government.</b>	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the political context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
060	“We never sat as Cabinet to talk about it. How are they going to do it? If it is going to be done it will be done by <b>thugs [j]</b> and people who do not respect the rule of law,” <ack> said Tsvangirai.	<b>Satellite 15: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the political context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
	He said <ack> <b>the threats [j] against foreign-owned firms were contrary to the drive the</b>	<b>Satellite 16: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the political

065	<p>government had embarked on to lure foreign investment into the country.</p> <p>“How do we attract investment if we do that? <b>The opening of one mouth takes the country to the dogs,</b>” [j] &lt;ack&gt; he said.</p>	context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
070	<p>But Youth and Indigenisation minister Saviour Kasukuwere told NewsDay: &lt;ack&gt; “All we are saying is that we have laws in this country and whatever we are doing is within the confines of the laws of the land. I do not see where the issue of thugs comes from.”</p>	<b>Satellite 17: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the political context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
075	<p><i>Earlier the MDC-T had distanced Tsvangirai from ZBC radio bulletins which suggested he was part of the programme</i> [ap/j].</p>	<b>Satellite 18: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the political context in which differences leading to the snub are framed)
080	<p>“Contrary to <b>incessant</b> [ap/j] ZBC broadcasts that President Tsvangirai is set to be on the line up of signatories to the Zanu PF violence petition, the MDC wishes to distance itself from such <b>blatant lies</b> [j/ap],” &lt;ack&gt; read a statement from the MDC-T.</p>	<b>Satellite 19: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)
085	<p>“Neither President Tsvangirai nor any MDC officials and members are associated with <b>this Zanu PF project.</b>” [ap/j]</p>	<b>Satellite 20: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why Tsvangirai snubbed the campaign)

### 5.5.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

Without an initial focus on the materials in the news report attributed to external source, it is evident that there are very few instances of inscribed authorial attitude. However, a high proliferation of invoked authorial attitude is evidenced in the news report, occurring largely through APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT resources. These evaluations also occur through invoked tokens which again present themselves through APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT. In terms of authorial position, this is set out in both the headline and the lead. The headline and the lead in this report do not merely function as providing a synopsis of the news report but they also affirm an ideological position with regards to the event being reported on. In this

regard for example, the absence of the MDC-T leader Morgan Tsvangirai from the launch is perceived to be more pertinent and newsworthy as compared to the launch of the campaign itself.

The major propositions of the report are directed at negatively evaluating the launch of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign as not having a national outlook as claimed by the ZANU PF leadership as well as the state-owned media but as merely a ZANU PF political agenda/gimmick. Throughout the report, expressions of this position are consistently expressed through both inscribed and invoked evaluations, which are also expressed from both the authorial stance as well as through attributed material. The tone set by both the headline and the lead establishes the position that the launch was not a national but a ZANU PF political agenda. This is expressed from an authorial voice through both authorial inscribed APPRECIATION and authorial inscribed JUDGEMENT (003 – 006).

**Tsvangirai snubs [j] Mugabe**

Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai Wednesday snubbed [j] the official launch of **President Robert Mugabe's anti-sanctions crusade** [ap/j], describing the event as a **Zanu PF project** [ap/j].

The authorial inscriptions above, which express the position that the campaign did not have a national flair, are further evinced through the overt negative evaluations of the same, that occur throughout the news report. However, these are largely framed in attribution. Compelling voices are called upon to reinforce the established authorial positions regards both the launch of the campaign and the 'noticeable' absence from the campaign of the MDC-T and its leader. The most compelling voice is that of MDC-T President Morgan Tsvangirai, the absentee from the launch who fortifies the authorial position by proclamations that the event was a ZANU PF campaign. Although the statement does not contain visible attitudinal resources, it is tokenised and functions in the same manner as attitudinal resources would. Through distancing himself and his party from the event Tsvangirai makes implications that the event was not a national event and there was no national consensus on its occurrence and purpose (023 – 026).

Tsvangirai told a media conference in Harare <ack> **the anti-sanctions campaign** was a **Zanu PF programme** [ap/j].

**“First of all we have to be clear that today’s (Wednesday) programme was a Zanu PF function [ap/j],”** <ack> Tsvangirai said.

This evaluative position is restated through attributed descriptions of the campaign as ‘**a ZANU PF project**’ (006, 086). There are also, in the news report, negative evaluations of ZANU PF as a largely violent, abusive, deceptive and insincere political party. These negative evaluations are once again occurring in attributed material. Examples of such inscriptions are ‘**thugs**’ (056, 060), ‘**abuse was a ZANU PF character**’ (036) and ‘**abusing government insignia**’ (029 – 030). While the notion of the ‘reporter voice’ as expressed by Martin and White (2005) as characterised by a low probability of authorial inscribed appreciation and some observed affect, a cursory glance at the linguistic as well as structural organisation of the news report raises concerns. Indeed, negative evaluations of both ZANU PF as well as the launch of the campaign are framed in attribution and thus do not theoretically reflect authorial subjectivities. However, when considering the ideological position established through the authorial voice in both the lead and headline, there is evidence that suggests that while the negative evaluations are attributed to external voice, they are instances of authorial appraisals through the words of others, a notion that Jullian (2011) argues for. Jullian (2011) explores the inclusion of external voices in news reports, especially examining the manner in which these are exploited for appraising purposes. She argues that attributions are not evaluation outlets for sources only, but indirect means of appraisal for the journalists as well, who support – and reinforce – the points they want to make through these voices. In this way, quotations help them imprint their personal views on the events and ultimately serve an ideological function in the text espousing in the process their ideological inclinations. In light of these observations, we thus can attribute most of the evaluations made by external sources as some form of indirect authorial ‘inscriptions’.

This is so because, we can observe a ‘calculated’ and deliberate effort to distance oneself from the propositions made by external voices on the part of the author – a feature that largely characterises hard news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers. An analysis of the lead and headline though, would point to a different direction that would suggest that the attributed material merely reinforces the authorial position established by them. This is in keeping with the arguments made by Thomson, White and Kitley (2008) that the headline and the lead (opening line(s)) of a news report provide not simply a summary of the major concerns of the news report, but also a value-laden synopsis of the event which is shaped by a particular set of

assumptions about which aspects of the event are typically more socially significant and what is less so. In other words, they provide a synopsis of the authorial judgement(s) of what constitutes newsworthy angles to the event. Such selections generally are conditioned and shaped by authorial ideological inclinations – authorial subjectivities.

**5.5.3. Zimbabwe Independent** (03 March, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	‘ <b>Anti-sanctions crusade exercise in futility</b> ’ [j/ap] <i>Brian Chitemba</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised Headline: Proposition that the anti-sanctions campaign is headed for failure)
005	POLITICAL analysts say <ack> <u>President Robert Mugabe and his Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions campaign [ap] will fail [j]</u> to achieve its intended outcome <u>until his regime prioritises the implementation of political and economic reforms [j]</u> .	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/Appraisal)</b> (Restates the propositions of headline. Authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign and ZANU PF)
010	The <b>former liberation movement [j]</b> blames the sanctions imposed on Mugabe and his inner circle by the United States (US) and the European Union (EU) for Zimbabwe’s economic meltdown, but critics have fingered <u>his increasing mal-administration [j]</u> .	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation/Appraisal</b> (The historical context in which sanctions were imposed and are being fought. Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF)
015	On Wednesday the <b>87-year-old leader [j]</b> launched the National Anti-Sanctions Petition aimed at garnering two million signatures against the embargo to be handed over to the US and the EU embassies in the capital.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specifies the goals for the campaign)
020  025	The US and EU <b>slapped [j]</b> the <b>octogenarian leader and his cabal [j]</b> with travel bans and an asset freeze over <b>alleged gross human rights abuses, unbridled disregard for the rule of law, political intolerance, electoral fraud and endemic corruption [j]</b> . The US passed the Zimbabwe Democracy and Economic Recovery Act (ZIDERA) which prevents Zimbabwe from accessing financial assistance from the International	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation/Appraisal</b> (Prior situation before the launch of the campaign. Attributed evaluation of Mugabe and ZANU PF)

	Monetary Fund and World Bank.	
030	Political Analyst and Dean of the Faculty of Communication and Information Science at the National University of Science and Technology (Nust) in Bulawayo Lawton Hikwa said <ack> <b>the anti-sanctions crusade can only have an impact if it is driven by the inclusive government and not as part of Zanu PF’s electioneering [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Reason(s) why campaign will fail)
035		
040	The lobby’s campaign advertisements inserted in local newspapers are <b>sponsored by Zanu PF [ap/j]</b> , but <b>carried the government emblem [ap]</b> , indicating that the lobby is <b>a clear Zanu PF campaign strategy rather than a national cause [j/ap]</b> .	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign and ZANU PF)
045	Hikwa said <ack> <b>the sanctions issue was contentious [ap]</b> because political parties viewed them differently.	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which campaign is launched)
050	“Some parties say the sanctions are targeted while <b>Zanu PF believes [3<sup>rd</sup> af] they are wholesale and not personalised [j/ap],”</b> <ack> he said. <ack> “The inclusive government is supposed to be at the forefront of the fight against sanctions because they represent the views of most Zimbabweans. <b>Zanu PF only speaks for its supporters, not everyone. [j]”</b>	<b>Satellite 7: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specifies political context in which campaign is launched. Attributed evaluation of campaign and ZANU PF)
055	Hikwa said <ack> <b>the sanctions mantra [ap/j]</b> should not overshadow the full implementation of the Global Political Agreement and other reforms, such as an end to political violence.	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of campaign, ZANU PF)
060	However, Zanu PF insists that <ack> <b>the punitive measures [j]</b> are an <b>attack [j]</b> on the country’s economy, health, land reform and national sovereignty, and that they are <b>racist [j]</b> and also <b>aimed at effecting regime change [j]</b> .	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Attributed extratextual evaluation of sanctions Reason for the launch of the campaign.)
	“Sanctions are an <b>attack [j]</b> on our health, on the education of our children, on our social services	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal/ Justification</b>

065	and our infrastructure. They are an <b>attack</b> [j] on the entire fabric of our society,” <ack> reads the campaign advertisements.	(Further attributed extratextual evaluation of sanctions Reason for the launch of the campaign.)
070	“Sanctions are <b>illegal, undeserved and spiteful</b> [j/ap]. They are <b>unilaterally imposed</b> [j/ap] outside the United Nations mandate by a <b>British-led Western coalition defending minority rights in our country</b> [j],” <ack> reads the message penned by the Zanu PF information department.	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Further attributed extratextual evaluation of sanctions Reason for the launch of the campaign.)
075	Zanu PF spokesman Rugare Gumbo said <ack> <u>the anti-sanctions campaign will achieve its intended goals if Zimbabweans are united against them.</u>	<b>Satellite 12: Intertextualisation/Justification</b> (Reason for the launch of the campaign)
	“ <i>We want the sanctions to go</i> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]. This is the year the sanctions will go,” said Gumbo.	<b>Satellite 13: Intertextualisation/Justification</b> (Further specifies reason(s) for the launch of the campaign)
080	The EU recently renewed sanctions against Mugabe and some members of his inner circle for another year saying there was a <b>sluggish approach</b> [ap/j] in the implementation of the GPA, which gave birth to the inclusive government of Zanu PF, Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai’s MDC and the	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> (Political context in which sanctions exist and campaign is launched)
085	<b>squabbling smaller</b> [j/ap] MDC formation of Welshman Ncube and Deputy Prime Minister Arthur Mutambara.	
090	The <b>shaky</b> [ap] coalition was formed two years ago in a bid to end political strife and a biting economic meltdown. Zanu PF says sanctions are part of the GPA’s outstanding issues which should be addressed while the MDC-T points to the	<b>Satellite 15: Contextualisation/Appraisal</b> (Specification and authorial inscribed evaluation of the political context in which campaign is launched)
095	<b>unilateral appointments</b> [j] of new provincial governors, the Reserve Bank governor and Attorney-General, among others, as the <b>major stumbling block</b> [ap].	
	But Hikwa insists that <ack> <u>Zanu PF must first attend to domestic issues, such as addressing human rights abuses and violence to boost the</u>	<b>Satellite 16: Justification</b> (Reason why campaign will fail)

100	image of Zimbabwe before it can call for the lifting of the punitive measures.	
105	“All political players have to encourage their supporters to shun violence and heal the political environment before we reach out for an end to sanctions,” <ack> Hikwa said.	<b>Satellite 17: Justification</b> (Reason why campaign will fail)
110	He noted that the failure by the government to access financial assistance from multilateral lending agencies had a negative effect on industrial capacity utilisation causing most companies to scale down operations and even shutting down, resulting in massive job losses.	<b>Satellite 18: Intertextualisation (Appraisal)</b> (Extratextual attributed evaluation of the sanctions)
115	<b>Strangely</b> [ap], according to analysts, <ack> the Confederation of Zimbabwe Industries (CZI) and the Zimbabwe National Chamber of Commerce (ZNCC) joined hands with Zanu PF during the campaign.	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of the campaign)
120	Joseph Kanyekanye, the president of the CZI, was one of the key speakers at the campaign launch despite the fact that Mugabe had last Saturday <b>attacked business</b> [j] and <b>threatened</b> [j] to seize Nestle and Zimplats as part of the empowerment drive his party is pursuing. ZNCC president Trust Chikohoro was quoted in the state media backing the anti-sanctions campaign.	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Further authorial inscribed evaluation of the campaign, Mugabe)
125 130	The secretary-general of the Association of Non-Governmental Organisations (Nango), Godwin Phiri, dismissed the anti-sanctions lobby as <ack> a <b>Zanu PF tactic</b> [j] to measure its support base. Phiri said <ack> the campaign would be ignored by foreign governments which imposed the sanctions given that the two-year inclusive government has done little to implement tangible reforms.	<b>Satellite 21: Justification</b> (Reason why campaign will fail.)
135	“Zanu PF is <b>responsible</b> [j] for the sanctions because its regime <b>perpetrated human rights abuses</b> [j]. They should first correct that before	<b>Satellite 22: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Further specifies reason(s) why campaign will fail. Further authorial inscribed

	sanctions are removed,” said Phiri.	evaluation of the campaign, Mugabe)
140	Last year, Presidents Jacob Zuma of South Africa, Hifikepunye Pohamba of Namibia and Rupiah Banda of Zambia were tasked by Sadc to engage Washington and Brussels to lobby for the lifting of sanctions, but their pleas have not yielded anything to date.	<b>Satellite 23: Contextualisation</b> (Historical background to the launch of campaign)
145	US President Barack Obama’s administration responded by saying <ack> <b>it would only review sanctions when the rule of law is restored and human rights violations completely ceased</b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 24: Justification/ Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of reason(s) why campaign will fail and of the historical background to the launch of campaign)
	Phiri said <ack> <b>Zuma should push Zanu PF to restore the rule of law and end political violence before engaging the west over sanctions.</b>	<b>Satellite 25: Justification</b> (Further specification of reason(s) why campaign will fail)
150	The <b>smaller</b> [j] MDC faction castigated Zanu PF for using the government emblem in its anti-sanctions drive saying <ack> <b>this displayed dishonesty</b> [j] and <b>a lack of respect</b> [j] for other signatories to the GPA.	<b>Satellite 26: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of campaign, ZANU PF)
155	“We have the GPA to deal with the sanctions and for Zanu PF to launch another way to push for removal of the measures shows that the party is <b>insincere</b> [j] and doesn’t recognise some provisions of the agreement,” <ack> MDC	<b>Satellite 27: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of campaign, ZANU PF)
160	spokesman Nhlanhla Dube said.	
	Tsvangirai and his party <b>boycotted</b> [j] the launch arguing that the sanctions issue should be dealt with within the confines of the GPA.	<b>Satellite 27: Appraisal</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluation of campaign, ZANU PF)

### 5.5.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report makes little use, if any, of instances of observable authorial inscribed evaluations of AFFECT, APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT. The major propositions of the story are that the campaign is an ill-fated affair and bound to be a flop. Such negative evaluations of the campaign as well as ZANU PF as a party as well as the ZANU PF leader and President of

the Republic are occurring in attributed material. There are only two instances of relative negative authorial inscribed evaluations. These are negative evaluations of the person of Robert Mugabe, focusing specifically on his age and capabilities to continue to lead the country, especially so considering his age. References to Mugabe as ‘**the 87 year old leader**’ (015) as well as ‘**the octogenarian leader**’ (020 – 021) exude negative overtones and authorial attitudinal evaluations of both JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION which specifically function to question his leadership abilities in the face of his age. These negative authorial inscribed evaluations also speak to the concerns and negative evaluations made and raised respectively by external sources and present as negative evaluations of social esteem.

Through attributed material, the propositions made by the news report – propositions that the author/authorial voice distances itself from are aimed at negatively evaluating the launch of the anti-sanctions campaign. The news report expresses negative proclamations that the campaign is an ill-fated enterprise which is bound to fail to achieve its expectations. The position is clearly enunciated beginning from both the headline and lead, both of which are framed in attribution. The tone is set from the headline, framed in scare quotes as an expression of the authorial voice distancing itself from the proposals that it makes. It is further reinforced in the lead, which again, while making the same negative evaluations and predictions about the anti-sanctions campaign, is again attributed to external sources, who at this point are unnamed ‘Political Analysts’ (001 – 008).

<dist> ‘**Anti-sanctions crusade exercise in futility**’

POLITICAL analysts say President Robert Mugabe and his Zanu PF’s anti-sanctions campaign [ap] will fail [j]to achieve its intended outcome until his regime prioritises the implementation of political and economic reforms [j].

The position established through attributed inscribed attitude in the headline and lead is reinforced throughout the news report. The news report also establishes a position that blames ZANU PF for being responsible for the impositions of the sanctions in the first place. In doing so, it largely employs negative JUDGEMENT resources that depict ZANU PF as a violent political party responsible for human rights abuses, disregard for the rule of law, displaying political intolerance, lacking respect for the other parties to the GPA and endemic corruption. These negative evaluations again occur largely through attributed material. They occur through attributed inscribed evaluations.

This is in keeping with the conventions of ‘reporter voice’ texts, which as explained before are characterised by very low proliferations of authorial attitudinal evaluations. In keeping with the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration therefore, the news report presents little evidence of overt authorial subjectivities. Nonetheless, we can argue that in the news report, there are several authorial formulations that have the clear potential of having triggered these evaluations which are framed in attribution. This is done by the authorial voice through tokenised invocations exemplified by the following extract (037 – 042):

The lobby’s campaign advertisements inserted in local newspapers are **sponsored by Zanu PF** [ap/j] , but **carried the government emblem** [ap], indicating that the lobby is **a clear Zanu PF campaign strategy rather than a national cause** [j/ap].

The implications made by the above statement presented from the authorial position/voice, which does not contain visible attitudinal resources, expresses a position that negatively evaluates both the campaign – as not being a national cause but a ZANU PF one – as well as ZANU PF as merely peddling claims of a national consensus against the anti-sanctions campaign. The other negative authorial inscribed evaluations are those made of the GNU as ‘**shaky**’ (088), of the other MDC faction as ‘**the squabbling smaller MDC formation**’ (085) as well as of Robert Mugabe as having ‘**attacked business**’ (120) and ‘**threatened to seize Nestle and Zimplats**’ (120 – 121). Other than that, all the other explicit negative attitudinal evaluations are made through attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources. These are, however, not independent of authorial subjectivities as they share affinities with the authorial position espoused through both the few instances of inscribed authorial evaluations as well as tokenised invocations.

As expressed earlier on, the conclusion drawn here is in line with observations made by Jullian (2011) who explores the inclusion of external voices in news reports, especially examining the manner in which these are exploited for appraising purposes. She argues that attributions are not evaluation outlets for sources only, but indirect means of appraisal for the journalists as well, who support – and reinforce – the points they want to make through these voices. In this way, quotations help them imprint their personal views on the events and ultimately serve an ideological function in the text espousing in the process their ideological inclinations. In light of these observations, we thus can attribute most of the evaluations made by external sources as some form of indirect authorial ‘inscriptions’. This is so considering





070	<p>ndechekuti nyika dzakaita seKenya dzakaita <b>mhiri-zhonga [j/ap]</b> hadzina kudzikirwa zvirango zveupfumi” &lt;ack&gt; VaKanyeka-nye vakadaro.</p>	<p>is other countries such as Kenya who experienced <b>violent uprisings [j/ap]</b> did not have sanctions imposed on them,” &lt;ack&gt; said Kanyekanye.</p>	<p><b>Justification</b> (Further attributed inscribed evaluation of sanctions and their effects and further specification of reasons why campaign is necessary)</p>
075	<p>Mukuru wemadzishe Ishe Fortune Charumbira vakati &lt;ack&gt; zvirango zveupfumi <b>zvatora [j]</b> rusununguko rweZimbabwe uye <b>hazvina kusarudza kuti munhu ndewebato ripi [ap].</b></p>	<p>The leader of the traditional chiefs, Chief Fortune Charumbira has said &lt;ack&gt; the economic sanctions have <b>robbed [j]</b> the country of its freedom and have <b>not spared anyone irrespective of political affiliation [ap/j].</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Extratextual attributed evaluation of the sanctions and their effects)</p>
080	<p>&lt;ack&gt; “Tine dambudziko nevamwe vatungamiriri vedu vanopinda pazvigarozvehutungamiriri avo <b>vasingazivikanwe kana vasinganyatsoziva nhoroondo vekwakabva Zimbabwe [j].</b></p>	<p>&lt;ack&gt; “We have a problem in some of our leaders who assume political offices while <b>their history is not known and while they are ignorant of the history of the country [j].</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 9: Intertextualisation (Appraisal)</b> (Extratextual attributed evaluation of other political leaders in relation to their position on sanctions)</p>
085	<p>“Ndinofunga kuti pano fanira kuva nehurongwa hwekuti wese anechishuwo chekutora chigarochehutu-ngamiri munguva iri kute-vera anofanira kutanga anyorabvunzo yenhoroondo yeZimbabwe,” &lt;ack&gt; vakadaro Ishe Charumbira.</p>	<p>“I think it is imperative that in future we have an arrangement by which, all those seeking to assume political leadership offices should write and pass an examination on the history of Zimbabwe” &lt;ack&gt; said Chief Charumbira.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 10: Intertextualisation (Appraisal)</b> (Further extratextual attributed evaluation of other political leaders in relation to their position on sanctions)</p>
090	<p>Sangano reZimbabwe College Students Union rakati &lt;ack&gt; <b>vadzidzi havasi kukwanisa kuenda kunze kwenyika</b></p>	<p>The Zimbabwe College Students’ Union has said &lt;ack&gt; <b>due to the sanctions graduating students are now failing</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 11: Appraisal/Justification</b> (Attributed evaluation of the sanctions and their effects and specification of reasons for the launch)</p>
095			
100			



The news report exhibits only one instance of authorial inscribed negative evaluation. This occurs in the lead and is a negative evaluation which qualifies as both JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION, and which is made of the sanctions. In the lead, by assuming the position that the sanctions imposed on the country are ‘illegal sanctions’ (**zviringo zveupfumi zvakatemerwa Zimbabwe zvisiri pamutemo**) (009 – 012), the authorial voice assumes a position that negatively evaluates the ‘legitimacy’ of the sanctions (APPRECIATION) and/or the intent of the imposer(s) of the sanctions (JUDGEMENT). The only other instance of authorial inscription is a positive evaluation made of the ‘fight’ against the sanctions as well as the ‘collective and unitary nature’ of the Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign. In view of this, the authorial voice portrays an image that projects the campaign not as a ZANU PF enterprise but one with a national outlook as evinced by references to the varied organisations in support of the campaign and who, as the authorial voice espouses, had nothing but ‘praise and support’ for the campaign (004 – 012).

*Zvikamu zvakasiyana siyana zvakabatana* [ap] svondo rakapfuura *kurumbidza* [j] kuparurwa kwechirongwa *chekurwisa* [j] **zviringo zveupfumi zvakatemerwa Zimbabwe zvisiri pamutemo** [j/ap].

(*A number of different organisations* [ap] last week united in *praise and support* [j] of the launch of the Anti-Sanctions Campaign to *fight* [j] against the **illegal economic sanctions** imposed on Zimbabwe.)

Considering the news report, it is evident that the evaluations made explicitly by the authorial voice in the lead set the tone for the evaluations that we get from the external voices of the news report. The external voices are made use of to endorse, elaborate, reiterate and/or contextualise this authorial position as expressed through the varied satellites of *justification* and *appraisal* discussed in the orbital structure analysis of the news report.

This exemplifies what Gale (2010) refers to as ‘stance taking’ – a concept that explores the manner in which a writer assumes, through choices made at both lexical and syntagmatic levels, a given ideological position. Du Bois (2007: 139) contends in this regard that, ‘one of the most important things we do with words is taking a stance’. And that stance – a speaker or writer’s personal feelings, opinions, and attitudes about a person or proposition – generally speaking is expressed subtly or boldly through the lexico-grammatical choices he or she makes (Biber, 2006) and also with regards to who/how they attribute such linguistic resources.

This idea of authorial influence and/or subjectivity is not only in line with Jullian's (2011) notions of 'appraising through the words of others' – a notion that, as expressed earlier on, influences the selection made with regards to commentaries/external voices, voices through which the author(s) express(es) and/or reinforce(s) their ideological inclinations with regards to the propositions of a news report. It is also important to observe that, when viewed across a text, particular indexes of stance can significantly influence the emotions and reactions of the audience as well as demonstrate the 'stance-taker's' commitment to the mentioned proposition; furthermore, they can serve the purpose of aligning or disaligning the 'stancetaker' with another person or proposition or of reproducing and reinforcing a socially-situated ideology, thereby making stance an extremely powerful construct (Biber, 2006; du Bois, 2007; Martin and White, 2005).

Through attributed negative inscriptions, the news report negatively evaluates the effects that the sanctions have had on Zimbabwean society, specifically on the sectors of health, business and education. A number of compelling voices, whose sentiments in the new report perform the function as satellites of *justification* and *appraisal*, are called upon to endorse this authorial stance. The sanctions are blamed for the ill-performance of business through sabotages by foreign owned companies (053 – 060), the deterioration of health facilities (021 – 030 and 031 – 044) as well as the education sector (100 – 108). These negative evaluations as intimated earlier on, are framed in attribution. However, their importance to the foregoing analysis is that they resonate with the authorial position assumed in the lead with regards to the sanctions.

### **5.5.5. Comparative analytic perspective**

A central notion in the appraisal analyses done for new stories in Zimbabwean newspapers, as has been consistently and constantly expressed in several sections of this thesis, is the notion of 'appraising through the words of others' (Jullian, 2011). This is so, because of the general structure of the hard news report in the Zimbabwean news reporting culture. As espoused earlier on, the structural arrangement of material in Zimbabwean reporting cultures in English, Shona (and Ndebele) give evidence of a tendency in which the bulk of the news report (both its propositions and evaluations) occur as attributed material. With regards to the news reports on the launch of the campaign, we observe that in terms of evaluative authorial positioning, there is evidence of authorial and editorial polarity along political lines exhibited through given indexes of stance. There is evidence of political predispositions evinced

through evaluations made especially through inscribed and implicit authorial attitudinal expositions. Comparatively, again, there are indications of biases along political lines between the government-owned and the private-owned publications.

With regards to cognitive or rhetorical structure, *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* news reports exhibit a very high proliferation of evidence of authorial attitudinal evaluations. There is little evidence in the news reports, of 'neutrality' and/or 'objectivity'. The news reports both espouse authorial positive evaluations of both the ZANU PF governance and its fight against the sanctions through the Anti-Sanctions and Petition campaign. There are prominent authorial inscriptions in the two reports espoused in their headlines and leads. Through these, the news reports and the authorial voices express positive authorial inscriptions that the campaign was a resounding success and will achieve its set goals. As has been established earlier on, while the major concerns of the news reports in most of the earlier reports are expressed through attributed material, the major propositions of these news reports are made from the authorial voice and thus the news reports flout the 'reporter voice' configuration.

On the other hand, the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* reports conform to the configuration. This is so because, the *Newsday* report exhibits few instances of overt authorial attitudinal expressions, limited only to inscriptions made in the headline and lead which negatively evaluate the launch of the campaign and its lack of a national consensus. Of course the body of the news report perpetuates the same ideological positioning, but these are expressed through attributed materials. Attributed negative inscriptions of both ZANU PF and the launch characterise the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* reports. However, unlike the *Newsday* report, the *Zimbabwe Independent* report expresses its major propositions through attributed materials. An attempt is made at distancing the authorial voice from the claims made in both the headline and the lead, both of which are attributed. What the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report exhibits is an authorial movement towards seeming distant and neutral from the evaluations made by the external voices, a quality argued earlier on to characterise the structure of hard news in Zimbabwean newspapers across the language divide. This presents an interesting theoretical conception to rethink the theorisation of what constitutes the universal structural arrangement of a hard news story.

The positions expressed by all the news reports considered here exhibit a perpetuation of the media polarity arising from inclinations towards established political ideologies, a position that has earlier in the chapter been argued to characterise news reporting in Zimbabwe. There

is evidence manifested through both the instances of authorial evaluations (inscriptions and tokens) as well as attributed materials (inscriptions and tokens) which exhibits ideologically subjective stances. The most notable observation is that there seems to be a trend cutting across all the newspapers in which the headline and lead do not merely function as synopses for the major preoccupations of the news reports but are used to establish an evaluative position from which news angles and what is considered to be news worthy are selected. Evidence for drawing such a conclusion is evinced by the fact that the propositions made by both the leads and headlines in all the news reports discussed in this section also find elaboration, contextualisation and endorsement in evaluative materials within the bodies of the news reports.

Such evaluations, as indicated earlier present themselves through both authorial and external voices – and as either inscriptions or invocations. Such choices of newsworthiness and embedded evaluations exude authorial subjectivities and stances – viewpoints they seek to influence the readership to assume too. This is in line with the observation that, when viewed across a text, particular indexes of stance can significantly influence the emotions and reactions of the audience as well as demonstrate the ‘stance-taker’s’ commitment to the mentioned proposition; furthermore, they can serve the purpose of aligning or disaligning the stancetaker with another person or proposition or of reproducing and reinforcing a socially-situated ideology, thereby making stance an extremely powerful construct (Biber, 2006; du Bois, 2007; Martin and White, 2005)

## **5.6. Reporting the extension of the sanctions against Zimbabwe**

Despite the launch of the ZANU PF led Anti-Sanctions and Petition Campaign lobbying for the lifting of the embargo by both the United States of America and the European Union, the sanctions were renewed on several occasions. During the period under study, the USA and EU announced the extension of the sanctions twice, in March 2011 and in March 2012. Both extensions were for a further period of one year. At the time of writing, the ‘sanctions’ against Zimbabwe are still in effect. The reason for the extensions of the sanctions, which the EU maintains and insist are ‘targeted restrictions’ is the continued disregard for human rights and the rule of law by the embargoed individuals. The ‘restrictions’, the USA and EU maintain, ‘can [only] be removed when the individuals targeted have shown some improvements; when human rights abuses are eradicated; when Zimbabwe can hold free and fair elections; when people in Zimbabwe can be allowed to move freely and vote for a candidate of their choice;

when the Sadc roadmap for elections in Zimbabwe is adhered to and when there is public media reform to an extent that opposition political parties can get equal coverage by the media during their campaigns. Then the restrictions can go. When the electoral reforms are implemented then we can talk of total removal of these restrictions<sup>58</sup>.

In short, the EU maintains a position that the situation in Zimbabwe has not improved and ZANU PF has not played its part to restore the rule of law in the country as well as to create a free and fair political atmosphere. With this established context in mind, the following section constitutes an analysis of news reports on and around the extension of the sanctions as well as about their continued existence in general. I attempt here an analysis of the news reports in the spirit of discussing the controversial nature of the continued existence of the sanctions in light of the complexity of the current political dispensation in Zimbabwe.

**5.6.1. *The Herald* (04 May, 2011)**

	<b>APPRAISAL ANALYSIS</b>	<b>ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS</b>
001	EU <b>not ready</b> [j] to lift sanctions <i>Herald Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (The EU is not yet ready to make a commitment to lifting the sanctions against Zimbabwe)
005	THE EU has welcomed the <i>progress</i> [ap] in the <i>on-going talks</i> [ap] between the three parties in the inclusive Government, but still <b>insists</b> [j] the bloc is <b>not committed</b> [j] to immediately lift <b>illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap] imposed on Zimbabwe.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Appraisal/Elaboration)</b> (Authorial inscribed evaluations of state of affairs in Zimbabwe. Restatement and evaluation of EU stance as expressed in headline)
010	The 27-member bloc claims <dist> it is watching developments in Zimbabwe and its position on <b>illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap] would be reviewed in due course.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Restates the headline proposition and specifies the EU position with regards to lifting sanctions)
015	EU representative to Zimbabwe, Mr Ado Dell’Aricia, said this yesterday while addressing journalists ahead of the celebrations to mark the EU Day on May 9.	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b> (Social context in which the EU position is expressed)

<sup>58</sup> ‘There are no sanctions on Zim — EU envoy’ – Zimbabwe Independent, Thursday, 15 March 2012  
<http://www.theindependent.co.zw/local/34615-there-are-no-sanctions-on-zim--eu-envoy-.html>

020	<p>“There is a <i>process on-going</i> [ap] in Zimbabwe <i>with support from the region</i> [j] <b>to normalise relations</b> [j] in the country and these are all <i>encouraging</i> [ap] signals and we are <i>hopeful</i> [1<sup>st</sup> af] that they will lead to an election <i>acceptable</i> [ap] to all based on standards that do not necessarily meet EU standards but are standards that have been agreed by Sadc,” &lt;ack&gt; he said.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 3: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons for EU position on lifting sanctions and evaluates the state of affairs in Zimbabwe related to the lifting of sanctions)</p>
025	<p>Mr Dell’Aricia said &lt;ack&gt; <b>the removal</b> [j] of <b>persons on the illegal sanctions</b> [j/ap] list was an on-going exercise and would be determined by developments in the country.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Further specification of reasons for EU position on lifting sanctions)</p>
030	<p>“<i>It is a continuing process and already several people were taken away from the list, the EU is ready to review the process based on the reports we receive from Zimbabweans</i> [ap],” &lt;ack&gt;Mr Dell’Aricia said.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 5: Justification</b> (Further specification of reasons for EU position on lifting sanctions)</p>
035	<p>The EU removed 35 people from the travel embargo in February this year and this followed <b>revelations</b> [ap] by <b>whistleblower</b> [j] website that MDC-T secretary general Mr Tendai Biti was <b>instrumental</b> [j] in determining the individuals that were denied entry into the bloc.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies prior situation/context in which EU position is made)</p>
040	<p>Mr Dell’Aricia said &lt;ack&gt; <b>the EU hoped</b> [3<sup>rd</sup> af] <b>the three parties would make further progress in talks that were scheduled to be held in South Africa between the negotiators and the facilitation team representing Sadc-appointed mediator and South African president Mr Jacob Zuma.</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Specification of the EU position regards sanctions)</p>
045	<p>The EU envoy <b>denied</b> [j] that they had <b>stalled negotiating</b> [j] with the Zimbabwe Government in favour of the Sadc effort.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the EU position regards sanctions)</p>
050	<p>“The Sadc senior officials visit to the EU is based on a resolution of August last year at the Sadc Summit held in Namibia.They presented their position and the EU presented theirs,” &lt;ack&gt; he</p>	<p><b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the EU position regards sanctions)</p>

	said.	
055	Mr Dell'Arícia said <ack> <u>dialogue between the EU and Zimbabwe had been transferred to Harare and they were now waiting for signals from Zimbabwe's Foreign Affairs Ministry on the next dates for their meeting.</u>	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the EU position regards sanctions)
060	"There is political dialogue and it was transferred to Harare. We have held one meeting since the beginning of the year and we are likely to hold another one depending on the Ministry of Foreign Affairs," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the EU position regards sanctions)
065	Efforts to get a comment from the Minister of Foreign Affairs Simbarashe Mumbengegwi and the permanent secretary Mr Joey Bimha were fruitless yesterday.	<b>Satellite 12: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual information on Zimbabwe's government position regards the sanctions)
070	The dialogue between the two parties <u>stalled</u> [ap] after some members of the Zimbabwean team including Justice and Legal Affairs Minister Chinamasa were <u>denied</u> [j] visas to enter the EU.	<b>Satellite 13: Contextualisation</b> (Prior political context before the EU current position)
075	Minister Chinamasa who is a member of the team was <u>denied</u> [j] a visa on two occasions and was at one time <u>detained</u> [j] at Frankfurt Airport in Germany on his way to attend the talks in Brussels, Belgium.	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of prior political context before the EU current position)
080	The team also includes Minister Mumbengegwi, Regional Integration and International Co-operation Minister, Priscilla Misihairabwi-Mushonga and Energy and Power Development Minister Elton Mangoma and senior Government officials.	<b>Satellite 15: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of prior political context before the EU current position)

### 5.6.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The propositions made by the news report assume an authorial position that portrays a positive image of the country by making proclamations that despite the EU not lifting sanctions against the country, progress can be noticed in the negotiations between Zimbabwe and the EU towards achieving that. The report also presents authorial positive evaluations of

the ‘on-going talks’ between Zimbabwe and the EU aimed at the possibility for the lifting of the sanctions. The news report chooses not to portray a gloomy picture on the extension of sanctions by the EU but focuses instead of the positive developments on the EU – Zimbabwe relations with regards to the negotiations aimed at a possible lifting of the sanctions. The voice of the EU representative to Zimbabwe is called upon to support this authorial position. Through the authorial voice, this positive evaluation is espoused through inscribed positive APPRECIATION which express the situation and status of both the country and negotiations as ‘**hopeful**’ (019, 039), ‘**encouraging**’ (019) and showing ‘**progress**’ (003) – a position that is also cemented through attributed inscribed positive evaluations, specifically through the voice of EU representative to Zimbabwe, Mr Ado Dell’Aricia who is quoted as having stated that (016 – 023),

<p>“There is <b><i>a process on-going</i></b> [ap] in Zimbabwe <i>with support from the region</i> [j] to <i>normalise relations</i> [j] in the country and these are all <i>encouraging</i> [ap] signals and we are <i>hopeful</i> [1<sup>st</sup> af] that they will lead to an election <i>acceptable</i> [ap] to all based on standards that do not necessarily meet EU standards but are standards that have been agreed by Sadc,” &lt;ack&gt; he said.</p>
--

This stance is further expressed through tokenised invocations, espoused from both the authorial voice as well as attributed material. The authorial voice in this report thus assumes the positive evaluative position that the EU acknowledges the progress that the negotiations have yielded. Instances of inscribed authorial negative evaluations through both APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT resources are made of the sanctions as well as MDC-T, and in particular its Secretary General, Tendai Biti. Inscribed negative evaluations of the sanctions are evinced by a consistent tagging of the sanctions as ‘**illegal sanctions**’ (006 – 007, 010, 025). This is a position that is established through authorial inscriptions in the lead and is followed through in several other paragraphs within the body of the news report through both the authorial voice as well as attributions. This position notably reverberates with the official position of ZANU PF regards the sanctions, a position that critiques and challenges their legitimacy. It is also a position that is consistent with the position assumed by the publication in almost all of its news reports on the sanctions as earlier analyses will show.

Some instances of negative evaluations of the MDC-T leadership, specifically MDC-T Secretary General, Tendai Biti as being responsible for the sanctions and also having an influence on the position that the EU assumes with regards to the sanctions on Zimbabwe,

also occur in the news report. For example, in this news report, Biti is described as having the power to influence who gets to be removed from the sanctions list and who doesn't, a revelation attributed to an external source – 'the whistleblower website' (035). In keeping with the observations made earlier on in the chapter regards co-texts, these evaluations made of Tendai Biti speak to earlier texts from both *The Herald* as well as ZANU PF website that accuse the MDC-T as responsible for calling for the imposition of the sanctions. The notion of subjective selection of an 'angle' to a story acquires relevance here too, especially so in light of how the news report selects what is considered to be newsworthy as well as who is regarded as a worthy 'voice' – external voice used for evaluation purposes. For example, rather than the report focusing on the fact that the EU has extended the sanctions on Zimbabwe, the report elects to focus on a positive evaluation of the dialogue between Zimbabwe and the EU which represents a possibility for the lifting of the sanctions. This kind of bias occurs because news reporting discourse is heavily ideologically laden (Höglund, 2008).

### 5.6.2. *Newsday* (17 May, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Sanctions will stay</b> [ap] - US <i>Moses Matenga: Staff Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Attributed headline: Sanctions against Zimbabwe will stay in place)
005	<u>The United States will not remove sanctions against President Robert Mugabe and some of the Zanu PF officials until reforms towards democratisation are met</u> [j/ap], <ack> an official said yesterday.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration/ Justification/ Appraisal)</b> (Restates the statement of headline, specifies reason why sanctions will stay in place and evaluation of the state of affairs/political situation in Zimbabwe)
010	Speaking to journalists from different African countries during a teleconference yesterday, Assistant Secretary of State for African Affairs Johnnie Carson maintained that <ack> <u>the sanctions were only targeted</u> [ap] and <u>not hurting</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] ordinary Zimbabweans but the few people in Zanu PF and government.	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies social context in which US position on not lifting sanction is expressed. Attributed evaluation of the sanctions and their 'effects')

015	<p>“The US will continue to maintain sanctions on Zimbabwe and will do so <b>until we believe</b> [1<sup>st</sup> af] <i>substantial irreversible progress</i> [ap] has been made on implementing the peace agreement,” &lt;ack&gt; Carson said.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 2: Elaboration/Justification</b> (Restates the US position and specifies reason why sanctions will stay)</p>
020	<p><i>The sanctions are against individuals, 60 government officials and equally 50-60 Zimbabwean companies and corporations under the control of Zanu PF or the military.</i></p>	<p><b>Satellite 3: Appraisal</b> (Authorial evaluation of the nature of sanctions)</p>
025	<p>“They are not sanctions specific to Zimbabwe as a country or designed to hurt the people of Zimbabwe who have been <b>punished</b> [j] enough by the treatment by the government,” &lt;ack&gt; he said.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 4: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of the nature of the sanctions)</p>
030	<p>Carson said &lt;ack&gt; <i>the sanctions were focused on individuals</i> [ap] and that his country would continue reviewing them and taking a few people off.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 5: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed evaluation of the nature of the sanctions)</p>
	<p>“<b>They will remain in place as long as we don’t see sufficient progress</b> [j] in the area of democratisation,” &lt;ack&gt; he said.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 6: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions will stay in place)</p>
035	<p>The United States and the European Union imposed <i>targeted sanctions</i> [j/ap] on government officials and members of Zanu PF in 2002 after a series of &lt;dist&gt; alleged <b>human rights abuses against perceived opposition supporters</b> [j].</p>	<p><b>Satellite 7: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Authorial evaluation of the sanctions and specification of reasons why sanctions were imposed)</p>
040	<p>Recently Zimbabwe sent a delegation to the European Union (EU) to negotiate the removal of sanctions.</p>	<p><b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies prior political context in which sanctions are imposed and stay in effect)</p>

### 5.6.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report, which is very brief, makes the propositions that negatively evaluate the human rights and reforms towards democratisation situations in Zimbabwe. The news report espouses the concern that there is still not much done in Zimbabwe with regards to improving the human rights situation and implementing democratic reforms. This being the case, the US

and EU are therefore not ready to lift sanctions until there is visible movement towards addressing this. No obvious authorial stances are assumed in the story save for only one instance which we can classify as tokenised authorial evaluation. This occurs in the body of the news report and its intent is to give some ‘positive’ evaluation of the sanctions. The stance assumed by the author in this regard is that the sanctions are not on the country but are targeted on named individuals (019 – 022).

*The sanctions are against individuals, 60 government officials and equally 50-60 Zimbabwean companies and corporations under the control of Zanu PF or the military.*

This token, which downplays the claim by ZANU PF (as expressed in section 5.5 ), that the sanctions were on the country and affecting service delivery and progress at national level, is evaluative even though there are no explicit appraisal resources that we can mark in it. The position assumed by the authorised voice through the tokenised invocation above serves as reinforcement for one of the major propositions of the news report, a proposition that believes that the sanctions were not imposed on the country as a whole but only on a few selected individuals. This position is well established through inscribed attributed positive APPRECIATION/JUDGEMENT evaluations of the sanctions as well as the negative JUDGEMENT evaluations of ZANU PF as part of government. In light of this we observe the following extracts (007 – 018);

Speaking to journalists from different African countries during a teleconference yesterday, Assistant Secretary of State for African Affairs Johnnie Carson maintained that <ack> the sanctions were only *targeted* [ap] and *not hurting* [3<sup>rd</sup> af] ordinary Zimbabweans but the few people in Zanu PF and government.

as well as (027 – 030),

Carson said <ack> the sanctions were *focused on individuals* [ap] and that his country would continue reviewing them and taking a few people off.

as well as (023 – 026),

“*They are not sanctions specific to Zimbabwe as a country or designed to hurt the people* [ap] of Zimbabwe who have been **punished** [j] enough by the treatment by the government,” <ack> he said.

Through these attributed materials, largely attributed to US Assistant Secretary of State for African Affairs, Johnnie Carson, we observe evidence of negative evaluations of the government, in this case ZANU PF as having **'punished'** (025) the people enough and for **'gross human rights abuses against perceived opposition supporters'** (037 – 038). We also note the positive evaluations of the sanctions, which are said to be **'targeted'** (011, 035), **'not hurting ordinary Zimbabweans'** (011 – 013) and **'focused on individuals'** (027 – 028). While we cannot attribute the evaluations made through attributed materials to authorial position, the tokenised invocations that reinforce the evaluations made through such materials are interesting in terms of Jullian's (2011) observations of authorial appraisals made through the voices of sources discussed at several instances in the previous analyses of news reports.

Another major proposition of the news report, which I will not discuss in detail here, is with regards to the position assumed by the USA for maintaining sanctions on Zimbabwe. Through inscribed attributed evaluations, the news report also negatively evaluates the state of affairs in the country. It is the concern of the report that there still is no real reform towards democratisation in the country and that the USA will only lift sanctions if these reforms are implemented. In a manner of speaking, through these evaluations, we discern attitudinal evaluations of both APPRECIATION (which is made on the state of affairs) as well as of JUDGEMENT (on the part of ZANU PF for refraining from implementing the reforms).

It is evident from the above analyses and discussions that structurally, as with many news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers the news report avoids the proliferation of the authorial voice through a heavy reliance on the voices of others. For example, in this particular report, it is evident that, save for the single instance of authorial evaluation through a token, all attitudinal resources are attributed to external sources. The positions that are established by the headline and the lead and which are elaborated on and contextualised within the body of the news report are both framed in attribution. The same observation applies to all the inscribed evaluations, which again are occurring as attributed material. This presents a challenge for determining the real source of the evaluations as from one angle it could signal authorial tact to 'remove' the authorial voice from attitudinal evaluations. On the other hand it could be analysed in terms of selective and purposeful sourcing of external voices, a method through which the authorial voice makes attitudinal evaluations 'through the words of others' as expressed by Jullian (2011) and Gales (2010).

### 5.6.3. Zimbabwe Independent (17 May, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	‘No lifting of sanctions without real reforms’ [j/ap] <i>Elias Mambo</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> ( <i>Attributed Headline</i> : There will be no lifting of sanction since there were no tangible evidence of reform)
005	WHILE Zimbabwe’s re-engagement team with the European Union (EU) was <i>upbeat</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] about the possibility of the bloc lifting sanctions after its trip to Brussels last week, analysts have warned that	<b>Nucleus: Lead</b> (Elaboration/Justification) (Restates the statement of the headline and specifies reasons why sanctions will stay in effect)
010	<ack> <b>without meaningful reforms</b> [ap] on the ground it would still be difficult to ensure the removal of the <b>restrictive measures</b> [ap].	
015	Energy and Power Development minister Elton Mangoma (MDC-T), Justice and Legal Affairs minister Patrick Chinamasa (Zanu PF) and Regional Integration and International Co-operation minister Priscillah Misihairabwi-Mushonga (MDC) led the re-engagement team in talks with the EU in the Belgian capital.	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation</b> (Specifies the context in which the non lifting of sanctions is expressed)
020	Talks have been ongoing since 2009 as part of broad efforts to implement the Global Political Agreement (GPA) to <b>restore political and economic stability</b> [ap] before free and fair elections are held.	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b> (Specification of the political context in which the non-lifting of sanctions is expressed)
025	Negotiations are going on within the framework and context of the EU-Africa Cotonou Agreement, Article 96, which says <ack> “political dialogue concerning respect for human rights, democratic principles and the rule of law shall be conducted within the parameters of internationally recognised standards and norms”.	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of the political context in which the non lifting of sanctions is expressed)
030	“The parties may agree on joint agendas and priorities. Benchmarks are mechanisms for reaching targets through the setting of intermediate objectives and timeframes for compliance,” <ack>	<b>Satellite 4: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of the context in which the non lifting of sanctions is

	it reads.	expressed)
035  040	The EU <b>slapped</b> [j] President Robert Mugabe and his top allies and associated companies who either owned, controlled or were linked to Zanu PF with the measures in 2002, citing <dist> <b>rampant political violence</b> [j/ap] and <b>gross human rights violations</b> [j] which it said hindered the holding of free and fair elections in the country.	<b>Satellite 5: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies the prior political context/background in which sanctions were imposed. Authorial inscribed evaluation of ZANU PF and causes of imposition of sanctions)
045	The <b>targeted sanctions</b> [j/ap] specifically followed the <b>expulsion</b> [j] of EU election observer Pierre Schori, a Swedish UN diplomat whom the group had designated head of its proposed 150-strong team for the disputed March 2002 presidential polls.	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Further specifies the prior political context/background in which sanctions were imposed. Authorial inscribed evaluation of the sanctions)
050	In defiance of Zimbabwe's demands that the EU's team be part of that of the African, Caribbean and Pacific (ACP) countries, the European bloc dispatched Schori to Harare but government refused to accredit him, saying he could only stay as a <dist> <b>“tourist [ap/j]”</b> .	<b>Satellite 7: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the prior political context/background in which sanctions were imposed)
055	Zimbabwe also <b>banned</b> [j] election observers from Germany, Finland, Britain, Denmark and the Netherlands, citing their <dist> alleged <b>bias</b> [j] against the government, and further specified the joint ACP-EU team should be led by an ACP official.	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the prior political context/background in which sanctions were imposed)
060	Then Foreign Affairs minister, Stan Mudenge, said <ack> <b>the government regarded the Swedish diplomat as a tourist visiting the country, and ruled out accreditation of the EU separate from the specified joint ACP-EU team.</b>	<b>Satellite 9: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifies the prior political context/background in which sanctions were imposed)
065  070	Prior to that, the EU and Harare had been fighting over <b>chaotic land seizures</b> [ap/j], <b>political repression and human rights abuses</b> [j] ahead of the election. Instead of further dialogue, Zimbabwe formally declared a dispute between the two sides under Article 98 of the ACP-EU partnership	<b>Satellite 10: Intertextualisation</b> (Extratextual specification of the historical background to the sanctions – Justification for sanctions)

	agreement, allowing it to seek independent arbitration.	
	The EU <b>retaliated</b> [j] with <b>targeted</b> [j/ap] sanctions.	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of the nature of the sanctions)
075	However, analysts say <ack> <b>unless Zimbabwe</b>	<b>Satellite 12: Justification</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
080	<b>fully implements the GPA</b> [ap/j], which tackles issues in EU-Africa relations, the Cotonou Agreement, sanctions would remain. Political analyst Charles Mangongera said <ack> implementation of the GPA was crucial to the removal of sanctions.	
085	“The key to Zimbabwe in <b>normalising its relations</b> [ap] lies in government tackling all outstanding issues in the GPA. That should be the basis of re-engagement with the EU,” he said.	<b>Satellite 13: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
090	“The critical thing which needs to be assessed right now is whether the GPA has delivered democracy or not in Zimbabwe, otherwise there hasn’t been any change in political attitudes and no fundamental changes in behaviour of those under the targeted restrictions to warrant their removal.”	<b>Satellite 14: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
095	Another analyst, Alexander Rusero, a Harare Polytechnic lecturer in Mass Communication, said <ack> <b>Mugabe needed two things from the inclusive government, namely legitimacy of his presidency after the disputed June presidential election run-off and removal of sanctions</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 15: Contextualisation/Appraisal</b> (Political context in which sanctions are renewed and evaluation of Mugabe and ZANU PF in relation to sanctions)
100	The two MDC formations and Zanu PF agreed to a raft of reforms, including amending electoral and media laws and drafting a new constitution, to pave way for free and fair polls.	<b>Satellite 16: Intertextualisation/Justification</b> (Extratextual reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
105	However, work on the new charter <b>has run in fits and starts</b> [ap] with Zanu PF being accused of trying to <b>frustrate</b> [j] the process to force an early election under the Lancaster House constitution.	<b>Satellite 17: Intertextualisation/Justification</b> (Further specification of extratextual reasons why sanctions are not lifted)



140	Dell'Aricecia also said <ack> <u>only the elimination of the causes that led the EU to impose the sanctions would lead to the full removal of these measures.</u>	<b>Satellite 24: Justification</b> (Further specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
145	Political commentator Ernest Mudzengi argues <acks> <u>Zanu PF <b>lacks</b> [j] the political will to implement reforms to facilitate free and fair elections.</u> <u>“Zanu PF is <b>by no means doing better</b> [j] in relation to political reforms and <b>neither is it doing any better in terms of its commitment to implementing reforms</b> [j].”</u> <ack> said Mudzengi.	<b>Satellite 25: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of ZANU PF, political state of affairs that justifies the non-lifting of sanctions)
150	<ack> <u>“This <i>push</i> [j/ap] by Zimbabwe shows the sanctions are indeed <b>biting</b> [ap/j] the individuals on whom they have been imposed.”</u>	<b>Satellite 26: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of the sanctions and their effects)
155	International Crisis Group’s Trevor Maisiri stated that <ack> <u>Zanu PF has been <b>manipulating</b> [j] the restrictions issue politically and using it for propaganda purposes as part of its efforts to <b>frustrate</b> [j] reforms and mobilise against <b>perceived internal and external enemies</b> [j].</u>	<b>Satellite 27: Intertextualisation/ Justification</b> (Extratextual evaluation of ZANU PF in relation to sanctions and specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
160	<u>“Zanu PF argues that reform is contingent on the removal of sanctions and accuses the MDC-T of <b>reneging</b> [j] on GPA commitments to facilitate this,”</u> <ack> Maisiri said.	<b>Satellite 28: Intertextualisation/ Justification</b> (Further extratextual evaluation of ZANU PF in relation to sanctions and specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)
165	<ack> <u>“It is true that <b>there are no meaningful reforms</b> [j/ap] on the ground that can persuade the EU to revise the restrictions but lifting these measures can also be a measure to build confidence or motivate political parties to move forward, although the lifting has to be progressive.”</u>	<b>Satellite 29: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Evaluation of the political context in which sanctions are not lifted. Specifies reasons why sanctions should be lifted)
170	National Constitutional Assembly chairperson Lovemore Madhuku concurred, saying he believes <ack> <u>the EU has to act so as not to continue giving Mugabe a pretext to <b>undermine or block</b></u>	<b>Satellite 30: Appraisal/ Justification</b> (Further evaluation of the political context in which sanctions are not lifted.)

	<b>reforms</b> [j].	Specifies reasons why sanctions should be lifted)
175	<p>“<b>Nothing on the ground has really changed politically</b> [ap/j] but the EU should remove the restrictions so that it does not continue to give Mugabe a voice,” &lt;ack&gt; said Madhuku. &lt;ack&gt; “The GNU warrants the removal of these measures as well.”</p>	<p><b>Satellite 31: Appraisal/Justification</b>                  (Further evaluation of the political context in which sanctions are not lifted. Specifies reasons why sanctions should be lifted)</p>
180	<p>However, deputy Justice and Legal Affairs minister and MDC-T senator Obert Gutu says &lt;ack&gt; <b>the inclusive government should adopt reforms to warrant the lifting of restrictions.</b></p>	<p><b>Satellite 32: Justification</b>                  (Specifies reasons why sanctions are not lifted)</p>
185	<p>&lt;ack&gt; <b>“There should be reciprocity</b> [ap], meaning the GNU should proceed to fully implement the outstanding issues of the GPA, which include media reforms and repealing of the offending provisions of Posa and Aippa, amongst other issues. Then and only then, should these restrictive measures be lifted.”</p>	<p><b>Satellite 33: Justification</b>                  (Further specification of reasons why sanctions are not lifted)</p>
190		

**5.6.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis**

As has been highlighted in section 5.6.2.1, one of the most challenging issues with regards to the analysis of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration in Zimbabwean newspapers is because of the differences in structural organisation of news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers as compared to the English broadsheet and other reporting cultures. In Zimbabwean news reports in English, Shona and Ndebele, it seems, the expression of overt authorial stance is averted through a remarkably heavy reliance on external voices. This is a characteristic present in most hard news reports occurring in Zimbabwean newspapers. The *Zimbabwe Independent* report above also makes use of such a framework. Because of this, inscribed attitudinal evaluations manifest themselves through the attributed material. Very little and sometimes no authorial attitudinal evaluations are visible and when they do occur, they do so as tokenised invocations.

The propositions made by the news report above signal negative evaluations of ZANU PF as well as the state of affairs in the country with regards to the implementation of reforms towards democratisation in the country. A cursory glance at the news report evinces a low

probability of overt authorial inscriptions. Few instances of authorial inscription occur in the news report, and when they do occur, they assume a stance that negatively evaluates ZANU PF through both JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources. The textual evidence presented below is a good example of such an evaluation (065 – 072).

Prior to that, the EU and Harare had been fighting over **chaotic land seizures** [ap/j], **political repression and human rights abuses** [j] ahead of the election. Instead of further dialogue, Zimbabwe formally declared a dispute between the two sides under Article 98 of the ACP-EU partnership agreement, allowing it to seek independent arbitration.

The authorial voice here explicitly exudes an attitudinal position that negatively evaluates the land acquisition process which occurred in the country at the behest of ZANU PF and thus in the process negatively evaluates the political party too. There are also intimations within the same that ZANU PF, which was in power as government then (since this was at a period before the GNU) was responsible for ‘**political repression and human rights abuses**’ (066 – 067), a condition that gave rise to the imposition of sanctions. The only other instance of observed authorial inscription is a position the authorial voice takes with regards to the description and qualification of the sanctions. An insistence on referring to the sanctions as ‘**targeted**’ (042, 073) and ‘**restrictive measures**’ (010, 112, 116), a position that is in line with the EU and USA descriptions and qualification of the ‘sanctions’, positions the author evaluatively especially so when one compares such a position to the position assumed by both the government controlled newspapers as well as ZANU PF – a position that contends that the sanctions are ‘illegal’ and affect the whole nation (that is, that the sanctions are not targeted on individuals but on the whole country as they ‘affect the whole nation’).

Such negative evaluations of ZANU PF are also reinforced through attributed inscriptions. Compelling voices of both the Prime Minister and MDC-T leader, Morgan Tsvangirai as well as those of selected analysts are called upon to offer commentary on the state of affairs in the country with specific regards to the non/lifting of the embargo. In the news report, ZANU PF is accused of insincerity in implementing reforms as well as being satisfied with the status quo. The political party is reflected on as the major reason for the imposition of the sanctions and playing on the sanctions rhetoric for political relevance. Through attributed inscriptions, the news report establishes the position that ZANU PF is stalling and frustrating the process

towards reforms and subsequently the lifting of sanctions. Such a position is evinced through the following extracts which are characterised by attributed negative inscriptions (106 – 109):

Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai has accused Zanu PF <ack> of **stalling** [j] the reform process, but maintains he would not quit and continues to insist on reforms.

and (144 – 150),

Political commentator Ernest Mudzengi argues <acks> Zanu PF **lacks** [j] the political will to implement reforms to facilitate free and fair elections. “Zanu PF is **by no means doing better** [j] in relation to political reforms and **neither is it doing any better in terms of its commitment to implementing reforms** [j].” <ack> said Mudzengi.

as well as (154 – 159),

International Crisis Group’s Trevor Maisiri stated that <ack> Zanu PF has been **manipulating** [j] the restrictions issue politically and using it for propaganda purposes as part of its efforts to **frustrate** [j] reforms and mobilise against **perceived internal and external enemies** [j].

What we can observe from these three external voices is a pattern of attitudinal resources that negatively portray ZANU PF, blaming it for the current unfavourable political and economic state of affairs in the country. It is clear in light of this, that there is a deliberate move by the author not to be objective as evinced by the choices they make on the voices to be heard in the news report. It is also worth noting that these voices called upon to express their views on the subject matter do so in a manner that reinforces the stance already assumed by the authorial voice.

In analysing the generic and rhetorical structure of the news report, as has been suggested to be typical of hard news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers, the major propositions of the news report are characteristically largely occurring in attributed materials. The main propositions of the news report are attributed to external sources. For example, even both the lead and the headline are all occurring as attributed material. This observation is quite important, especially so, with regards to comparisons with the structure of English broadsheet ‘hard news’ report, from which the notion of ‘reporter voice’ is largely studied and utilised.



035	rukota VaMorgan Tsvangirai, vairamba kuti pane zvirango zveupfumi zvaka-pomerwa nyika [j].	Morgan Tsvangirai publicly denied that there were sanctions against the country. [j]	(Evaluation of the MDC's position with regards to the sanctions. Specifies political context in which call for lifting sanctions is made)
040	<ack> “Izvi zvaratidza kuti maBritish awurura gure rose raive risingafanirwe kuzivikanwa asi zvave kufanirwa kuitwa neMDC-T kukuruzira kuti zvirango izvi zvibviswe nokukasika [j].	<ack> “This shows that the British have exposed some secrets that it was not supposed to and <b>what the MDC-T now needs to do is to call for the immediate lifting of the sanctions [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 4: Appraisal/ Contextualisation</b> (Further evaluation of the MDC's position with regards to the sanctions. Specifies political context in which call for lifting sanctions is made)
045	“Ngavaudze varungu ava kuti vabvise zvirango izvi kuitira kuti upfumi hwenyika hukurumidze kugadziriswa,” <ack> vakadaro Cde Chris Mutsvangwa.	“They should tell these white people to urgently lift the sanctions so that the country's economy can recover quickly,” <ack> said Cde Chris Mutsvangwa.	<b>Satellite 5: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions must be lifted. Further evaluation of the MDC's role in the imposition and continued existence of sanctions.)
055	MDC-T sezvo yave muHurumende inofanirwa kuona matambudziko ari kuzvanzwa nezvirango izvi pane mabasa eHurumende nokudaro zvakakosha kuti ibatsire pakubviswa kwazvo, <ack> Cde Mutsvangwa vakadaro.	“Since MDC-T is now part of government, it should see the problems that these sanctions are causing on government efforts so it was imperative that MDC-T assists in lobbying for their lifting,” <ack> Cde Mutsvangwa said.	<b>Satellite 6: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Further specifies reasons why sanctions must be lifted. Further evaluation of the MDC's role in the imposition and continued existence of sanctions.)
060	Mazvikokota munyaya dzezvematongerwo enyika, Cde Goodson Nguni, vakati <ack> chisiri kuziva MDC-T	Political Analyst, Cde Goodson Nguni, said <ack> what the MDC-T	<b>Satellite 7: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions must be lifted. Further evaluation of the MDC's role in the imposition and
065	ndechedekuti iri kushandiswa [j] nevarungu kurwisa Hurumende [j] nekuda kwezviro-	does not realise is that <b>it is being used [j] by the whites to fight against government [j] policies</b>	

	<i>ngwa zvayakaita zvekubatsira kuvandudza hupenyu hweva-tema [j].</i>	<i>aimed at improving the livelihood of black people [j].</i>	continued existence of sanctions.)
070	<ack> “Varungu ava <b>havasi kufara</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] nekutorerwa kwavakaita ivhu richipihwa kuvatema saka nokuda kweizvi <b>havadi</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] Hurumende iri kutonga vachida yavo ine vanhu vanovateera voita madiro avo.	<ack> “These whites are <b>not happy</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] that we took land from them and gave it back to the black people so they <b>do not want</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] the current government but instead want one which follows them so that they can do what they want with it.	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies context/background in which sanctions were imposed. Evaluates the US and EU position with regards to the imposition of sanctions)
075			
080	“MDC-T ngaishande neva-mwe ikurudzire kubviswa kwezvirango izvi sekubvumirana kwakaitwa muchisungo cheGPA,” <ack> Cde Nguni vakadaro.	“MDC-T should work with others to lobby for the lifting of sanctions as agreed in the GPA,” <ack> Cde Nguni said.	<b>Satellite 9: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions must be lifted. Further evaluation of the MDC’s role in the imposition and continued existence of sanctions.)
085	Mumwe mazvikokota wezvamatongerwo enyika, Va-Godwin Mureriwa, vakati <ack> <b>masangano eSadc ne-African Union mushure memashoko aVaMilliband aifanira kukomekedza MDC-T kuti izadzikise [j] zvisungo zvayo ichitanga nokuku-rudzira kubviswa kwezvirango izvi. [j]</b>	Another Political Commentator, Mr Godwin Mureriwa, said <ack> <b>following these revelations by Mr Milliband, Sadc and the African Union should encourage MDC-T to fulfil its commitments to the GPA beginning with calling for the lifting of sanctions [j].</b>	<b>Satellite 10: Justification/ Appraisal</b> (Specifies reasons why sanctions must be lifted. Further evaluation of the MDC’s role in the imposition and continued existence of sanctions.)
090			

#### 5.6.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

Firstly, it is important to highlight here that the Shona newspaper, *Kwayedza*, did not carry a news report specific to the extension of the sanctions. The news report above signals an interpretation of the reasons why sanctions against Zimbabwe continue to be in existence. It

was consciously selected here because its major concerns are issues around the continued existence of sanctions, a situation obviously arising from their extension(s). There are no observed instances of authorial attitudinal inscriptions. The only feasible instance of attitudinal authorial positioning is a tokenised invocation which negatively evaluates the MDC-T, and specifically its leader Morgan Tsvangirai, for allegedly refusing to acknowledge that sanctions against the country exist. The proposition made by the news report, which are largely framed in attributed material is that the MDC-T is responsible for the imposition of the sanctions and that it is the only party that has power and control over whether sanctions continue to be in force or are lifted. In other words, it is MDC-T that is responsible for the continued existence and extension(s) of the sanctions as it is not, like ZANU PF, calling for their removal. According to the report, through tokenised evaluative material attributed to the voice of the British Foreign Affairs Minister, David Milliband, the British government is willing to lift the embargo only, and only if, such a call comes from the MDC-T and specifically, Tsvangirai.

Several voices are called in to reinforce and elaborate on this position. Through attributed material, espoused by ‘expert’ commentaries, the news report expresses negative inscriptions of the MDC-T and Britain. The evaluations made of the MDC-T cast the political party as insincere to fulfilling the provisions of the GPA as well as a puppet of the British government in its quest for regime change in Zimbabwe (060 – 069).

<p>Mazvikokota munyaya dzezvematongerwo enyika, Cde Goodson Nguni, vakati &lt;ack&gt; <b>chisiri kuziva MDC-T ndechekuti iri kushandiswa [j] nevarungu kurwisa Hurumende [j] nekuda kwezvirongwa zwayakaita zvekubatsira kuvandudza hupenyu hwevatema.</b></p> <p>(Political analyst, Cde Goodson Nguni, said &lt;ack&gt; <b>what the MDC-T does not realise is that it is being used [j] by the whites to fight against government [j] because of its policies aimed at improving the livelihood of black people.</b>)</p>
---

The news report further negatively evaluates the MDC-T through attributed tokenised invocations, calling for the MDC-T to be sincere in the GPA and ‘join the other in the fight against sanctions’. Negative evaluations of Britain are also occurring as inscribed attributed materials. Britain is presented as rancorous. This is suggested through the claims made by some of the ‘expert’ voices that the sanctions were a form of British revenge for the land reform programme that saw many British citizens losing farms/land to ‘indigenous people’.

Such a position is made explicit yet attributed inscriptions of observed negative AFFECT used to express Britain's feelings towards the land grabs (070 – 077).

<ack>	“Varungu ava <b>havasi kufara</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] nekutorerwa kwavakaita ivhu richipihwa kuvatema saka nokuda kweizvi <b>havadi</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] Hurumende iri kutonga vachida yavo ine vanhu vanovateera voita madiro avo.
<ack>	“These whites are <b>not happy</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] that we took land from them and gave it back to the black people so they <b>despise</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] the current government but instead want one which follows them so that they can do what they want with it.

Britain is thus, negatively evaluated as bent on facilitating regime change in the country as vengeance for the loss of land by her citizens living in Zimbabwe. Structurally it is important again to observe that, in line with the thesis established earlier on with regards to the structure of the ‘hard news’ report in Zimbabwean newspapers, in a bid to remain ‘neutral’, authors seem to always attribute all evaluative material/attitudinal resources to external sources. In the process, this protects the authorial voice from such evaluations. However, it is important to continuously remember that the selection of sources/external voices is never an innocent enterprise and thus is an interesting position from which to argue for instances of the author evaluating/appraising through the words of his/her selected external voices.

### 5.6.5. Comparative analytic perspective

Two notions related to the analysis of authorial subjectivities analysed through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration by focusing on evaluative resources are ‘stancetaking’ (Biber, 2006; du Bois, 2007; Gales, 2010) and ‘appraising through someone else’s words’ (Jullian, 2011). As intimated in several discussions in this thesis, the Zimbabwean press is polarised along political lines. Such polarities manifest themselves in the manner in which evaluative language is used through both the authorial voice/stance as well as through materials attributed to external sources. The selections of newsworthy issues in event news reports as well as the source(s) of external voices are also affected by the politically influenced choices within this media divide. It has been established that the structural arrangement of matter in news reports in most Zimbabwean newspapers follows a trend in which the news reports unfold through evaluations made by external sources. It seems there is a perception that in order for one to maintain a semblance of ‘neutrality’/‘objectivity’, one needs to distance themselves as far as possible from the explicit expression of opinion. Such a feat is achieved,

it seems, by a high proliferation of not only acknowledged but quoted materials in the news reports.

As has been the trend with earlier news reports, news reports on the extension of the embargo also exhibit subjectivities that cut along political ideology. There is evidence of positive JUDGEMENT evaluations of ZANU PF in *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* news reports. The political party is positively evaluated for its fight against the sanctions and the role it plays in defending the interests of the nation at large. Whereas the extension of the embargo infers negativity, *The Herald* news report elects to focus on the ‘positive’ side of the debacle by focusing on the **‘positive developments in the ongoing negotiations to lift the sanctions’**.

As has become the pattern, there are also negative JUDGEMENT evaluations of the MDC-T as being responsible for the imposition and the subsequent extensions of the sanctions. Such negative evaluations exhibit themselves through authorial inscriptions, especially in the *Kwayedza*, which in the process, continues perpetuating the position expressed by ZANU PF with regards to the real cause of the imposition of the sanctions. The position established thus, is that the sanctions are an act of British vengeance for the land redistribution exercise undertaken by the ZANU PF leadership and governance.

In light of the foregoing discussion, we also can discern Anti-ZANU PF sentiments expressed within the private-owned newspapers, *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent*. As discussed in earlier sections, there are no visible authorial inscriptions within the *Newsday* report and all evaluations are expressed through both attributed inscriptions and tokens. On the other hand, while evaluations are also largely framed in attribution in the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report, we observe instances of authorial evaluations as well, evaluations which largely evince a negative imaging of ZANU PF as having been responsible for the imposition of the sanctions because of its culture of violence characterised by gross human rights abuses and political intolerance. In short, the propositions expressed in the two private-owned newspapers echo the positions expressed by the EU and USA for the imposition of sanctions against Zimbabwe, a position clearly established in the introductory sections of this chapter. There seems to be a conspiracy within the newspapers to debunk all the claims made by ZANU PF with regards to the sanctions and thus in the process assume a stance.

Juxtaposing the ideological differences between the news reports again resonates with the notion of stance taking – a powerful construct that is manifested in a multitude of ways as it

allows speakers and writers not only to express their personal attitudes, feelings, and value judgements about a person or object and their commitment to a proposition (Biber *et al.*, 1999; Conrad and Biber, 2000), but also to negotiate power and solidarity between themselves and others and between two or more ‘others’ (Martin and White, 2005) and to convey presupposed systems of sociocultural as well as socio-political values (du Bois, 2007: 139). According to Gales (2010) this iterative understanding of stance and stancetaking is essential for a variety of reasons. Largely, stance, in its broadest sense, ‘is a cognitive device for interpreting the world’ (Bednarek, 2006: 4), which, when linguistically expressed, also allows us to offer this interpretation to others.

### **5.7. Summary**

The chapter explored the nature of the authorial voice in Zimbabwean news reports on a ‘controversial’ issue in Zimbabwe’s contemporary political dispensations, the EU and USA imposed sanctions. Sanctions, as has been argued are a politically contested issue in this dispensation characterised by political blame games and contestations with regards to the way forward in dealing with the sanctions. The news reports exhibit a trend of being highly polarised along political ideological lines – a situation arising from the political differences that characterise the current political administration of the country. The chapter gave evidence that suggests that the general structure of the ‘hard news’ report in Zimbabwean newspapers in English and Shona exhibits a structural arrangement that largely protects the authorial voice by making evaluations through external voices. A very important notion in the appraisal analyses done for news stories in Zimbabwean newspapers, as has been consistently and constantly expressed, in the notion of ‘appraising through the words of others’ (Jullian, 2011). This is so, because of the general structure of the hard news report in the Zimbabwean news reporting culture. This also explains why the larger part of evaluative resources, both inscriptions and invocations, are expressed through these external voices. The structural arrangement of the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers would thus at best be described as a sequential arrangement of quoted material. Of significance to note is that there seems to be a trend cutting across all the publications in which the headline and lead do not merely function as synopses for the major preoccupations of the news reports but are used to establish an evaluative position from which news angles and what is considered to be newsworthy is selected. Even a cursory glance at such reports, however, will reveal a trend in which such attributed materials serve as reinforcements and/or elucidations of/to the positions established by the authorial voice in both the headlines and the leads of the news reports.



## CHAPTER 6

### **Authorial ‘stance’, ‘controversy’ and ‘objectivity’ in reporting the making of a new constitution in Zimbabwean newspapers**

#### **6.1. Introduction**

The chapter sets out to analyse news reports from Zimbabwean newspapers on the new constitution making exercise – a vital and contentious component of a framework of reforms aimed at paving way for the holding of a fresh round of elections in accordance with the provisions of the GPA<sup>59</sup>. One of the most ‘controversial’ issues in the current political dispensation in Zimbabwe is the holding of ‘fresh’ elections. Zimbabwe is set to hold elections before June 2013<sup>60</sup>. As has been explained in the previous chapter, Zimbabwe’s political governance is contemporarily characterised by a GNU arising from the heavily contested presidential elections of 2008. Part of the agreements made in the Memorandum of Understanding (MoU) establishing the GPA was that the initial lifespan GNU was to be a period of 18 months<sup>61</sup> (subject to extension), after which period the country would hold fresh elections under a new constitution. The eighteen month time frame would be used for the drafting of the constitution, the holding of a referendum and its possible subsequent promulgation as the country’s supreme law. The GPA provides, in this regard, for amendments to the 1979 constitution that will see the ultimate replacement of the 1979 constitution with a new constitution which, according to the agreement, would be implemented at the latest by March 2010. In other words, the new constitution would also incorporate electoral law reforms that would guide the new elections. The current constitution of Zimbabwe is the 1979 Lancaster House Constitution, drafted on the eve of Zimbabwe’s independence, and which made political concessions to protect the interests of the former colonial masters as well as the new black leadership of the country. The need for a new constitution for Zimbabwe is well summated in the following background to the process:

Zimbabwe’s current constitution was crafted in 1979 under the Lancaster House agreement and has succumbed to a record of 19 Amendments to date. Attempts to craft a new constitution in the year 2000 were rejected by the people of Zimbabwe in a referendum. Various interlocking factors

---

<sup>59</sup> As indicated in the last chapter, the Global Political Agreement (GPA) is the agreement forming the GNU – a political settlement established to resolve the impasse arising from the heavily contested 2008 presidential elections.

<sup>60</sup> ‘Zimbabwe’s Sanctions Standoff’, *Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86*, 6 February 2012

<sup>61</sup> [http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=191:i-will-call-for-elections-this-year-president](http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=191:i-will-call-for-elections-this-year-president)

help to explain the "no vote". Amongst them was the lack of wider consultation with the responsible committee alleged to be purely elitist (500 members comprising mostly MPs) and a perception that it was a ZANU-PF attempt to smuggle a Constitution of its liking. Thus the search for a viable, acceptable and a credible constitution in Zimbabwe continues as evidenced by Constitutional Amendment number 19 which legalised the Global Political Agreement (GPA) of 2008. Amongst other things, the GPA stated the need for a people driven and people oriented constitution in Zimbabwe. As such, since June 2010 the country has embarked on a drive towards the constitution making process<sup>62</sup>.

The GPA thus, espouses that the desire to draft a new constitution arises from the acknowledgement that it is the fundamental right and duty of the Zimbabwean people to make a constitution by themselves and for themselves. The process of making this constitution must therefore, according to the GPA, as a matter of necessity 'be owned and driven by the people and must be inclusive and democratic'<sup>63</sup>. This vision for the constitution was necessitated by the recognition that 'the current Constitution of Zimbabwe made at the Lancaster House Conference, London in 1979 was primarily to transfer power from the colonial authority to the people of Zimbabwe'<sup>64</sup>.

The current Zimbabwean constitution is a product of a compromise agreement reached at the Lancaster House Conference in 1979 between the outgoing colonial government and the incoming nationalist government at the end of the war of liberation. The current Constitution is widely regarded as inadequate and as having numerous shortcomings that need to be addressed, despite it being amended a record 19 times<sup>65</sup>. The need for a new constitution is also 'driven by a determination to create conditions for Zimbabweans to write a constitution for themselves, mindful of the need to ensure that the new Constitution deepens the nation's democratic values and principles and the protection of the equality of all citizens, particularly the enhancement of full citizenship and equality of women'<sup>66</sup>. A condition to the agreement was that elections were to be held under a new constitution, one that would create an environment to hold free and fair elections. The new constitution-making process is guided by Article VI of the Global Political Agreement signed by ZANU PF and the two MDC formations in September 2008.

---

<sup>62</sup> 'Constitution making process in Zimbabwe: Avenues for effective youth participation' accessed on 1 August 2012 at: <http://www.swradioafrica.com/Documents/CONSTITUTIONMAKINGPROCESSINZIMBABWE.pdf>

<sup>63</sup> Zimbabwe Global Political Agreement, ARTICLE VI – CONSTITUTION.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid

<sup>65</sup> [http://www.copac.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=619:milestones&catid=40:constitution-timeline-category&Itemid=152](http://www.copac.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=619:milestones&catid=40:constitution-timeline-category&Itemid=152)

<sup>66</sup> Zimbabwe Global Political Agreement, ARTICLE VI – CONSTITUTION.

The last two years, (2010 – 2012), have thus witnessed a currently ongoing exercise to draft a new constitution. This process, as has been discussed in the section 5.4.1 of the previous chapter, has been spearheaded by COPAC and at the time of writing, a final draft of the new constitution had been produced and handed over to the principals of the GNU who have provisionally agreed on it. At the time of writing COPAC had produced a draft constitution which is awaiting refinements culminating from discussions between the principals as well as a subsequent referendum so that it can be adopted as the new law of the country. The chapter thus analyses, in line with the research concerns of this thesis, the proliferation of attitudinal authorial evaluations as theorised through the ‘reporter voice’ configuration in news reports in English and Shona on the constitution making process as well as the roadmap to the holding of fresh elections.

## **6.2. Contextualising the new constitution making programme and impending ‘fresh’ elections in contemporary Zimbabwean politics**

The process towards the drafting a new constitution and the subsequent holding of fresh elections for Zimbabwe has been one characterised by ‘controversial’ twists and turns. The controversies surrounding these two important national issues are largely grounded in differences that are largely of a political nature between the principal parties to the GNU, specifically the MDC-T and ZANU PF. Part of the agreement to the constitution clause in the GPA is that all three parties to the agreement would participate in the new constitution making process in order to ensure transparency. This arrangement accounts for the composition of COPAC which has equal representations from all the three political parties who are party to the GNU. Because of the political tension that characterised relation between the political parties prior to the signing of the GPA, conflicts of interests and controversies continued to arise in the process, with each party seemingly wanting to protect its own political interests and agendas.

In light of this political diatribe, we can observe that during the period under review, there were numerous setbacks in the constitution making exercise, most of which were political in nature. Several controversial issues derailed the constitution making process at one point or another, topical among them inadequate funding, disagreements between the parties in data collection mechanisms as well as disagreements between the parties with regards to technical issues with regards to the content of the provisions of the constitution. The first draft of the constitution was only completed and made public in July 2012, two years behind schedule.

Because the constitution making process took longer than had originally been planned for it in the GPA, ZANU PF became impatient and began questioning and challenging the legitimacy of the continued existence of the GNU. ZANU PF has thus, on numerous occasions, officially made indications that elections would be held in 2012 with or without a new constitution and that it would ‘soon withdraw from the dysfunctional Inclusive Government’<sup>67</sup>. A case in point is when the president of the Republic, Robert Mugabe is on record as having made statements of such, expmplified below:

President Robert Mugabe has said this year [2012] he will exercise his power and call for elections resulting in another government with or without a new constitution. Addressing the media on the occasion of his 88th birthday President Mugabe who is also the First Secretary and President of ZANU PF said the constitution – making process was supposed to take only 18 months from the time of the inception of the inclusive Government but those involved in the process were deliberately moving at a snail’s pace<sup>68</sup>.

This ZANU PF position has always been met with discord from the two other parties to the GPA, the two MDC formations. There have been arguments, especially from the MDC formations, that these incessant threats by ZANU PF to hold the new elections were due to the realisation that the current constitution favoured them. ZANU PF is on record as having justified its continuous demands for immediate elections because, according to them, the mandate of the GNU had expired<sup>69</sup>. Accordingly these demands have always been met with hostility from the two MDC-T formations, SADC, the EU and the USA, who all expressed fear that holding elections under the current constitution would present ZANU PF with an opportunity to ‘steal the elections again’ and perpetuate the presidentship of Robert Mugabe. The following sentiments constitute an attempt to summate the political environment in Zimbabwe with regards to the drafting of the new constitution and the holding of fresh elections:

The political situation is fragile, with growing fears the country may be heading toward new repression and conflict as the era dominated by the 88-year old President Robert Mugabe comes inevitably closer to an end, and elections draw nearer. Mugabe’s Zimbabwe African National

---

<sup>67</sup> ‘I will call for elections this year, President: ... ZANU PF will soon withdraw from the dysfunctional Inclusive Government’ – [http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=191:i-will-call-for-elections-this-year-president](http://www.zanupf.org.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=191:i-will-call-for-elections-this-year-president) accessed on 13 July 2012

<sup>68</sup> Ibid

<sup>69</sup> ‘Zanu-PF adamant elections should be held this year’ – *The Herald*, Friday, 10 June 2011

Union-Patriotic Front (ZANU-PF) claims the GPA and subsequent negotiated reform process have run their course, and conditions are conducive to a free and fair vote. The Movement for Democratic Change (MDC) formations disagree but do not specify what they consider to be the minimum necessary reforms. SADC and most international observers believe the foundation for free and fair elections has not yet been laid. There has been some economic and social progress, but major deficits and deadlock persist on core reforms and implementation of some already agreed matters. Most significantly, ZANU-PF retains full control of the security apparatus, raising legitimate fears elections could lead to a repeat of the 2008 violence and refusal to accept the democratic will of the people<sup>70</sup>.

It is significant to note that the new constitution making process and the holding of free and fair elections is also a condition tied to the EU and USA imposed sanctions. As part of the conditions that the EU and the USA stipulate for the lifting of sanctions, Zimbabwe must hold free and fair election in an environment that fosters the proliferation of political freedom and political tolerance. With regards to this, the USA has expressed that it would only consider debt relief, financial assistance, and technical support for Zimbabwe when: (a) the rule of law has been restored, (b) free and fair elections are held (c) the government exhibits a commitment to transparent land reform, (d) the government fulfils terms of agreement to end war in DRC and (e) the military and national police subordinate to civilian government<sup>71</sup>. The drafting and subsequent promulgation of the new constitution is thus seen as pertinent to the creation of an environment for free and fair elections. These U.S. objectives are explicitly expressed in the conditions for the lifting of the Zimbabwe Democracy and Economic Recovery Act (ZDERA, P.L. 107–99, 21 December 2001) which stipulates under Section 4 (d) (1-5) that sanctions against Zimbabwe will only be lifted after the issuance of a;

(d) PRESIDENTIAL CERTIFICATION THAT CERTAIN CONDITIONS ARE SATISFIED.—A certification under this subsection is a certification transmitted to the appropriate congressional committees of a determination made by the President that the following conditions are satisfied:

(1) RESTORATION OF THE RULE OF LAW.—The rule of law has been restored in Zimbabwe, including respect for ownership and title to property, freedom of speech and association, and an end to the lawlessness, violence, and intimidation sponsored, S. 494—3 condoned, or tolerated by the Government of Zimbabwe, the ruling party, and their supporters or entities.

(2) ELECTION OR PRE-ELECTION CONDITIONS.—Either of the following two conditions is satisfied:

---

<sup>70</sup> 'Zimbabwe's Sanctions Standoff', *Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86*, 6 February 2012

<sup>71</sup> <http://www.treasury.gov/resource-center/sanctions/Programs/Pages/zimb.aspx>

(A) PRESIDENTIAL ELECTION.—Zimbabwe has held a presidential election that is widely accepted as free and fair by independent international monitors, and the president-elect is free to assume the duties of the office.

(B) PRE-ELECTION CONDITIONS.—In the event the certification is made before the presidential election takes place, the Government of Zimbabwe has sufficiently improved the pre-election environment to a degree consistent with accepted international standards for security and freedom of movement and association.

(3) COMMITMENT TO EQUITABLE, LEGAL, AND TRANSPARENT LAND REFORM.—The Government of Zimbabwe has demonstrated a commitment to an equitable, legal, and transparent land reform program consistent with agreements reached at the International Donors' Conference on Land Reform and Resettlement in Zimbabwe held in Harare, Zimbabwe, in September 1998.

(4) FULFILLMENT OF AGREEMENT ENDING WAR IN DEMOCRATIC REPUBLIC OF CONGO. —The Government of Zimbabwe is making a good faith effort to fulfil the terms of the Lusaka, Zambia, agreement on ending the war in the Democratic Republic of Congo.

(5) MILITARY AND NATIONAL POLICE SUBORDINATE TO CIVILIAN GOVERNMENT.—The Zimbabwean Armed Forces, the National Police of Zimbabwe, and other state security forces are responsible to and serve the elected civilian government<sup>72</sup>.

The ZANU PF position regards the holding of elections, as discussed in the previous chapter, is tied to their established position with regards to the continued existence of the EU and USA imposed sanctions. The argument expressed by ZANU PF is that as long as sanctions remained in effect, they see no reason to appease the demands of the EU and the USA for political reform. On the other hand, the MDC formations maintain the position that they are ready for elections as long as there were major legislative and political reforms that represent visible guarantees for free and fair elections, characterised by the proliferation of an even political playing field and political tolerance, that is to say, an end to intimidation of their supporters and an end to the use of state security agencies to intimidate voters to vote for ZANU PF.

### **6.3. The GNU, the constitution making process and impending elections**

Because of the violence and political animosity that characterised the campaigning period prior to the 2008 elections as well as the period after the elections (the period preceding the formation of the GNU), the constitution making process and the subsequent holding of 'fresh' elections expected at the conclusion of the drafting of the new constitution forms a major basis to the agreements reached between the principals to the GPA. This is largely so because

---

<sup>72</sup> Zimbabwe Democracy Recovery Act (ZDERA) Section 4 (d) (1-5)

the political wars and tensions that arose from the 2008 elections were based on irregularities that marred the elections as well as claims by the MDC-T that the 2008 elections had been held under a 'not so conducive environment characterised by intimidation, lack of political tolerance, violence and gross human rights violations'.

It was the contention of the two MDC formations that the only approach to resolving the political impasse arising from the elections was to hold fresh elections, only this time under a new constitution which guaranteed an even political playing field. This difference of opinion explains why despite incessant calls by ZANU PF for the immediate holding of elections, the two MDC formations continue to insist that they will only go for elections after a new constitution has been drafted and promulgated into law. ZANU PF incessantly maintains that general elections will be held this year (2012) without fail after the completion of the constitution-making process currently underway<sup>73</sup>. South Africa, as SADC mediators to the political impasse in Zimbabwe, through their representative President Jacob Zuma, have also insisted that a new constitution alone was not enough and conditions that guarantee free and fair elections must be met before fresh elections are held.

Contrary to ZANU PF's insistence that elections should be held in 2012, the South African facilitation team to the Zimbabwe political crisis has continually reiterated that polls can only be held when all the provisions in the GPA and the election roadmap are fulfilled. The team's comments came in the wake of the declarations by the ZANU PF politburo that elections would be held in 2012 no matter what<sup>74</sup>. SADC and most international observers also believe that the foundation for free and fair elections has not yet been laid. While acknowledging that there has been some economic and social progress, they argue that major deficits and deadlock still persist on core reforms and implementation of some already agreed matters. Most significantly, ZANU PF still retains full control of the security apparatus raising legitimate fears that elections could lead to a repeat of the 2008 violence and refusal to accept the democratic will of the people<sup>75</sup>. Such a scenario is one of the stumbling blocks hoped to be resolved by the new constitution.

The position of the two MDC formations with regards to this is clearly articulated in their concerns that ZANU PF was largely responsible for the problems that COPAC was going

---

<sup>73</sup> 'ZANU-PF speaks on elections' – *The Herald*, Wednesday, 11 May 2011

<sup>74</sup> 'No elections this year' – *Newsday*, Friday, 15 July 2011

<sup>75</sup> 'Zimbabwe's Sanctions Standoff', *Crisis Group Africa Briefing N°86*, 6 February 2012

through, problems that derailed the progress made in the constitution-making process from its anticipated completion, the initial 18 months set for it. One of the major problems derailing the progress was underfunding and political meddling. A critical analysis of the constitution making process to date shows that it has been marred by a lot of errors and inconsistencies<sup>76</sup>. A delay in the process and poor financial and logistical arrangements ascertains this claim. Adding to the suppression of people's views at the outreach stage, the collation stage of the process has been viewed as an indirect attempt by political parties to influence the content, further reducing the credibility of the whole process<sup>77</sup>. The MDC formations sentiments can be summated as follows:

The Constitution Parliamentary Select Committee appears to be dogged with financial constraints because ZANU PF is against donor funding for the initiative arguing that foreign funding will result in foreign interference with the manner and outcome of the process. This however is a frivolous excuse that ZANU PF is using to delay completion of the project which will signal the start of moves to dissolve the coalition government and preparations for general elections the party knows it will lose. In all the funding excuses the Minister of Finance has been notable by his silence over the matter which indicates that he may be in possession of adequate funds for the project but is unwilling to channel them for disbursement through the RBZ with its disrepute in handling public funds<sup>78</sup>.

In the context of such politicking surrounding the problems encountered in the constitution making process – a process largely characterised by political mudslinging and blame games for the responsibility for the problems faced by COPAC – an important observation to note is the fact that COPAC, through all these trials and tribulations, admits only to financial challenges and hardly any administrative or implementation challenges arising from political differences and/or the pursuit of political interests by the parties to the GNU.

#### **6.4. Analysing news reports on COPAC's problems**

This section analyses news reports on the political problems encountered by COPAC in the new constitution making exercise. As has been explained earlier on, the constitution-making process was plagued by numerous setbacks ranging in nature from financial to political. Firstly, the GNU did not have enough finances to meet the exorbitant costs of creating a new constitution. Despite this, ZANU PF insisted that it would not accept foreign funding of the

---

<sup>76</sup> 'Constitution making process in Zimbabwe: Avenues for effective youth participation' accessed on 1 August 2012 at: <http://www.swradioafrica.com/Documents/CONSTITUTIONMAKINGPROCESSINZIMBABWE.pdf>

<sup>77</sup> Ibid

<sup>78</sup> Ibid

process, creating discord from the other two parties within the GNU and further stalling the commencement of the exercise. The party, through its leader Robert Mugabe is on record as having refused funding for the constitution making process from the United Nations Development Programme (UNDP) and other donors claiming that such foreign funding would compromise the country's capacity to determine its own destiny<sup>79</sup> and allow for continued external influences in the internal affairs of Zimbabwe as a sovereign nation. It was the contention of the two MDC formations', reacting to such posturing, that ZANU PF was deliberately stalling the process because it was not sincere to the implementation of reforms as directed by the GPA. Prime Minister, Morgan Tsvangirai is on record as having intimated that this was a ZANU PF way of stalling the reform process despite the two MDC formations and ZANU PF having 'agreed to a raft of reforms, including amending electoral and media laws and drafting a new constitution, to pave way for free and fair elections'<sup>80</sup>. Interestingly though, the whole exercise was eventually funded by UNDP through an injection of US\$21.2 million, which UNDP described as 'a voluntary grant from donors towards the national constitution-making process'<sup>81</sup>.

Other setbacks involved squabbles and accusations of trying to smuggle information into the constitution exchanged between the political parties<sup>82</sup>. Critics have also been quick to express fear that the constitution making process runs the risk of becoming a political agreement instead of a national legal instrument. Such critics argue that Zimbabwe must eschew the practice and belief that the constitution is some kind of political pact between the existing political parties<sup>83</sup>. Because of the political impasse that backgrounded the constitution-making exercise, the exercise inevitably became a highly politically charged enterprise seemingly geared towards settling political scores, seeking political control and garnering political mileage. There have been in this regard, criticisms of the constitution making exercise as well as the draft constitution as not reflecting the wishes of the people as espoused by the GPA but merely a result of political negotiations and compromises between the three parties to the GPA. News reports on the exercise and other related issues thus, due to the highly politically

---

<sup>79</sup> 'Get UNDP out of Copac' - <http://eu.zbc.co.zw/news-categories/top-stories/19487-we-dont-want-undps-assistance-analysts.html>

<sup>80</sup> 'No lifting of sanctions without real reform' – *Zimbabwe Independent*, Thursday, 17 May 2012

<sup>81</sup> 'Copac money is no debt' – *Newsday*, Monday 16 July 2012

<sup>82</sup> 'Constitution-making process stalls as CIO tries to manipulate data' – accessed on 2 August 2012 at: <http://www.thezimbabwemail.com/zimbabwe/7201.html>

<sup>83</sup> <http://www.newzimbabwe.com/blog/index.php/author/amagaisa/>

polarised nature of the media in Zimbabwe, also evince these ‘political wars’ that characterised the exercise. Within the prevailing context established above, the following constitutes an analysis of news reports on the problems and challenges encountered by COPAC during the new constitution making exercise.

#### 6.4.1. *The Herald* (29 March, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	Zanu-PF <i>insists</i> [ap/j]<ack> <b>draft Constitution must reflect people’s views</b> <i>Tendai Mugabe Senior Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised proposition: that the draft of the new constitution is not reflecting the people’s views and thus must be people driven and reflect popular opinion)
005	Zanu-PF <i>insists</i> [ap/j] that <ack> the draft Constitution should reflect the people’s views as captured during the outreach programme.	<b>Nucleus: Lead</b> <b>Lead/Elaboration</b> (Restates propositions made by the nucleus)
010	Addressing journalists after the party’s Politburo meeting in Harare yesterday, party spokesperson Cde Rugare Gumbo said <ack> they received a progress report on the constitution-making process from Cde Munyaradzi Paul Mangwana.	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation</b> (The prior situation forming the background to the propositions made in nucleus)
	He said <ack> Zanu-PF had taken a position that <b>the new Constitution should not divert from the views of the people [j]</b> .	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specifies what draft must not/do. Expansion of nucleus’ propositions – provides further clarification)
015	Cde Gumbo said Politburo members noted that drafters <b>tampered [j]</b> with the views and aspirations of the people.	<b>Satellite 3: Justification</b> (Reason why ZANU PF insists on the position)
020	He called on the Copac team to produce an outreach report showing the people’s views. Cde Gumbo said <ack> it was <i>resolved</i> [j/ap] that if the three parties in the Constitution-making process continue to disagree, the outreach report should be taken to the GPA principals.	<b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Reasons why the constitution diverts from the views of people – political differences between parties in the drafting of constitution)
	<ack> “Cde Mangwana said they held a meeting	<b>Satellite 5: Contextualisation</b> (Further reason backgrounding

025	with the drafters yesterday, where they did two chapters of the revised draft. <b>We noted that there is still a lot of work to be done</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].	the context of the propositions of the headline and lead)
030	<ack> “However, the party took <b>a strong position</b> [ap/j] that <b>the draft must reflect the outreach programme</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 6: Elaboration</b> (Restates/re-emphasizes on the ZANU PF position and the propositions of the nucleus on what draft must not/do)
	“ <b>If those guys (MDC formations) are difficult</b> [j], our team should produce the outreach report showing what people said and give it to the principals for determination,” <ack> he said	<b>Satellite 7: Cause and Effect</b> (Indicates consequences of the primary proposals)
035	Cde Gumbo said <ack> the MDC formations were <b>insisting</b> [ap/j] <b>on certain issues that were rejected by people</b> [j] during the outreach programme such as dual citizenship, devolution, powers of the Attorney General’s Office and one Vice President.	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Context/reasons for making the claims/propositions in the lead and headline)
040	He said <ack> the formations were saying Zimbabwe should have either one vice president or have a prime minister.	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Context/further reasons for the claims/propositions in the lead and headline)
045	Cde Gumbo said <ack> Zanu-PF was of the view that it should not continue to persuade the MDC formations on issues that were settled by the outreach programme.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (States reasons/context for ZANU PF adopting the position established in the propositions of the headline and lead)
050	He said <ack> the principals should take over the constitution-making process because the management committee seemed to be <b>dithering</b> [j] on issues Copac <b>failed to resolve</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (States context in which the main propositions are made. Specifies ensuing context)
055	<ack> “ <b>Absolutely</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af], the principals should take over the process because the management committee seems to be <b>vacillating</b> [j]. <b>We cannot continue to wait any longer</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af].”	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (States context in which the main propositions are made. Specifies ensuing context)
	He said <ack> the Politburo also received a report on the party’s ongoing District Coordinating	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Provides exemplification of ZANU PF’s democratic

	Committee elections.	tendencies and context for making the propositions)
060	He said <ack> national commissar Cde Webster Shamu presented a report where he <i>expressed satisfaction</i> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with the way the DCC elections were held in Mashonaland Central and in Chipinge.	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Provides exemplification of ZANU PF's democratic tendencies and context for making the propositions)
065	Cde Gumbo said <ack> the DCC elections in Midlands will be held today and tomorrow. He said <ack> the party's primary elections will follow once dates of general elections are known.	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Provides exemplification of ZANU PF's democratic tendencies and context for making the propositions)

#### 6.4.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report makes evaluations that suggest that the constitution making exercise, which sanctioned under the GPA should be people driven, is in actual fact not. The news report thus espouses these evaluations largely from the position of ZANU PF, which is made use of as the major external voice in the story. The position espoused by the news report, largely expressed through attributed material, is that the committee tasked with the duty of drafting the constitution are disregarding the views of the people collected during the outreach programme. This is largely expressed through attributed material which manifests as both attributed inscriptions and attributed tokens, which negatively evaluate the constitutional management committee, COPAC as well as the MDC formations. The context of such evaluations, which are largely of attributed inscribed JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources, is the conviction espoused throughout the news report that the constitution making project has ceased to be people oriented and in the process has become heavily politicalised. The images created by the news report presents ZANU PF as a party motivated by the desire to safeguard national interests by their assumption of the position that insists that the constitution must reflect the '**people's views as captured during the outreach programme**' (005 – 006).

In terms of evaluative positioning, there is little evidence of overt authorial evaluations. All evaluations in the news reports are expressed through attributed material. The headline and the lead, both of which occur as attributed material espouse the major propositions of the news report while the larger part of the body of the news report serves as endorsements and evaluations of these propositions. Because the headline and lead express a ZANU PF

ideological position, the compelling voice of ZANU PF spokesperson Rugare Gumbo is used to further reinforce this position. It is through this voice that the bulk of the evaluations in the news report are made. Firstly, through this voice, the news report expresses the position that the constitution making exercise had digressed from the concerns raised during the data collection exercise. This is expressed through tokenised invocations attributed to the external voice of Rugare Gumbo. Examples of such are found in expressions in the following excerpts from lines (012 – 014):

He said <ack> Zanu-PF had taken a position that <b>the new Constitution should not divert from the views of the people</b> [ap/j].
--

As well as from lines (028 – 030):

<ack> ‘However, the party took <b>a strong position</b> [ap/j] that <b>the draft must reflect the outreach programme</b> [ap].’
---

We can discern from the above that, while they do not overtly signify the propositions that are established by the headline and the lead, the exhortations expressed by the above tokens signify the existence of a draft that does not capture the concerns of the people as ZANU PF would want to see it reflect. In short, the invocations above, while acting as tokens of JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION of the constitutional draft, also serve as appraisals and evaluations of the committee responsible for the draft.

There is also, in the news report, evidence of attributed inscribed negative evaluations of the drafters of the draft constitution, the constitutional management committee as well as the two MDC formations for allegedly failing to live up to their assigned mandate – creating a people driven constitution. Through attributed material largely of JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources, the two MDC formations are negatively evaluated for ‘**...insisting on certain issues rejected by the people during the outreach programme**’ (035 – 038). Similar negative evaluations are also made of the constitutional management committee who are also accused of ‘**dithering on issues Copac failed to resolve**’ (053 – 054) as well as ‘**vacillating**’ (048 – 049). Lastly, negative JUDGEMENT evaluations are also made of the drafters, who have also made contributions to the deviations from the views expressed during the outreach programme by ‘**tampering with the views and aspirations of the people**’ (016 – 017). It is important to indicate again that all these evaluations are framed in attribution and thus not reflecting authorial evaluative positioning. In the presence of the negative evaluations

discussed above, the news report espouses thus a position that implicitly positively evaluates ZANU PF as the sole party to the constitutional process concerned with respecting the wishes of the people as well as protecting the interests of the people.

In terms of the generic and structural organisation of the news report, there is evidence that the story evinces no instances of explicit authorial expression. The propositions of the news report are drawn from sentiments expressed by an external source, sentiments reinforced and restated in the lead. The body of the news report largely serves to contextualise the propositions of the headline and lead by providing the socio-political background birthing the evaluations of the major propositions of the news report. These subsequent paragraphs, also serve to provide justification and elaboration of the position assumed by the news report, a position which as indicated above is largely framed in attribution.

#### 6.4.2. *Newsday* (18 November, 2011)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Copac discord</b> [ap/j] <b>worsens</b> [ap] <i>Moses Matenga</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised headline: that there is disunity in the constitution making exercise, the process is beleaguered by rifts)
005	There is no end in sight to the <b>confusion</b> [ap/j] that has <b>blighted</b> [ap] the operations of the Parliamentary Constitutional Select Committee (Copac) ever since its inception two years ago.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the ‘discord’ that is in Copac suggested by the lead and provides a historical context.)
010	Yesterday, the co-chairpersons of the committee were as usual, <b>singing from different hymn books</b> [j/ap] — at a Press conference. Douglas Mwonozora and Paul Mangwana representing the main parties, MDC-T and Zanu PF, <b>clashed</b> [ap] on key issues involving the drafting of Zimbabwe’s new charter.	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation</b> (The social as well as historical context in which the ‘discord’ exhibits itself.)
015	The Copac Press conference addressed by the three co-chairpersons <b>turned into a circus</b> [ap] as Mwonozora and Mangwana <b>openly clashed</b> [j/ap].	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Restates the confusion and discord in Copac.)
	Mwonozora said <ack> <b>the rights of minorities needed to be respected in the new constitution,</b> incensing Mangwana who immediately interjected to	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Specifies, exemplifies the ‘discord’ within Copac.)

020	argue such a position would allow gays and prostitutes to sneak their interests into the constitution.	
025	The third co-chairperson, Edward Mkhosi of the other MDC formation, tried to save the situation and said: <ack> <b>“If we feel uncomfortable</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with gays, let’s include that in our constitution and say minority does not mean gays. There is the Gukurahundi for example; it was persecution of a minority.”	<b>Satellite 4: Contextualisation</b> (Further exemplification and contextualisation of reasons for the ‘discord’ within Copac.)
030	Zanu PF Chief Whip, Jorum Gumbo called the house to order and <b>challenged the Copac chairpersons not to impose their thinking onto the process as it would then cease to be people-driven</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Specification of reasons for ‘discord’.)
035	<ack> <b>“This is a people-driven constitution and the people said what they want in the constitution. We cannot discuss what the people want. Don’t take it upon yourselves to discuss and come up with a position.</b>	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (The prior situation. Context in which discord is exhibiting.)
040	<b>“Follow what the people said they want</b> [j/ap],” Gumbo said. Perhaps even <b>more surprising</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af], Mangwana and Mwonzora <b>differed</b> [ap] even on the position of the constitution-making stage.	<b>Satellite 7: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies and exemplifies the reasons for the ‘discord’ and the prior situation)
045	Mangwana said <ack> the process was now at the drafting stage while Mwonzora thought otherwise. The MDC-T representative argued the all-stakeholders’ conference needed \$2 million which he said was not yet there, adding Copac needed \$4 million to complete the process.	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specifies and exemplifies the reasons for the ‘discord’ and the prior situation/context)
050	Meanwhile Mangwana, has <b>threatened</b> [j] to fight the independent media and sue his Zanu PF counterpart, Edward Chindori-Chininga, for defamation by alleging that he leaked the document to MDC-T.	<b>Satellite 9: Contextualisation</b> (Intertextual further evidence of prior situation – context of ‘discord’)
055	Mangwana said <ack> he had instructed his lawyers to sue Chindori-Chininga and newspapers that have called him a liar and a drunkard who negotiates while intoxicated.	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Specification of intertextual evidence of prior situation – context of ‘discord’)
	<b>“Any person who thinks they can make money out of me, I will sue and make money out of them. They</b>	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Further specification of

060	<p><b>say I am a drunkard</b> ; I am a liar [3<sup>rd</sup> af] who has been lying to the President (Robert Mugabe) and I negotiate while drunk. Anyone who defames me will face the music.”</p>	<p>intertextual evidence of prior situation – context of ‘discord’)</p>
-----	--	---

#### 6.4.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news reports presents an authorial evaluative stance that overtly negatively evaluates the relations of the parties to the new constitution making programme, the political actors involved in the exercise as well as the new constitution making exercise itself. Such authorial evaluations largely occurring as resources of JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION evince themselves as authorial inscribed negative evaluations in the headline and the subsequent three paragraphs immediately following the headline, the first of which forms the lead. In evaluating the ‘**discord**’ (001) characterising the nature of the political<sup>84</sup> and working relations between the member of the constitution making programme committee, the news report makes the propositions that the committee is largely divided on political grounds, a situation the news reports also suggests adversely affects the smooth running of the process.

The authorial evaluative position is initially set out in both the lead and the headline (001 - 006) as follows:

#### **Copac discord [ap/j] worsens [ap]**

There is no end in sight to the **confusion** [ap/j] that has **blighted** [ap] the operations of the Parliamentary Constitutional Select Committee (Copac) ever since its inception two years ago.

This authorial position is reinforced further in the subsequent two paragraphs which also, making use of overt authorial inscriptions espouses an authorial position that negatively evaluates the relations between members of COPAC coming from different political positions. Inscribed authorial evaluations of the members of the committee such as ‘**as usual singing from different hymns books**’ (008 – 009), ‘**clashed**’ (011), ‘**openly clashed**’ (015) as well as their meeting having ‘**turned into a circus**’ (014) evince such an authorial negative evaluative stance.

<sup>84</sup> Again the discord between these parties to the constitutional committee manifesting here can only be understood within the context of the politically motivated constitution of members of the committee as well as the political background that gave rise to such constitution – the GNU.

Structurally, the body of the news report is largely constituted of paragraphs that serve to elaborate on the propositions of the authorial voice through providing exemplifications of such discords. Such elaborations, largely signalling ‘discord’ between the parties to the constitutional committee, are however attributed materials and merely serve as evidence of such a characterisation of the relations. What the news report largely purports, in expressing such evaluations of the situation regarding the strained relations between the parties, is to make argumentations that the political actors within the constitutional committee seem to be putting the political ideologies and agenda of their respective political parties ahead of the views expressed by the ‘people’ during the outreach programme. This is evinced by the differences expressed by the political actors which are also presented in acknowledged material.

The only other instance of inscribed authorial evaluation occurs as an AFFECT resource through which the authorial voice expresses astonishment at the ‘discord’ between these parties, (039 - 041):

Perhaps even **more surprising** [1<sup>st</sup> af], Mangwana and Mwonzora **differed** [ap] even on the position of the constitution-making stage

Consolidated with the sentiments occurring in attribution in the news report (which largely serve as elaborations and contextualisations of the propositions expressed through the authorial voice), the news report can be argued to be chiefly aimed at expressing the conviction that the new constitution making exercise has largely become a sham – a political warzone characterised by disunity and differences of opinions culminating from the attempts by the political actors within the committee to protect the interests of their respective political parties and in the process compromise the integrity of the whole process.

In summary, the structural arrangement of matter/detail in the news report evinces an arrangement through which the headline and the lead contain within them instances of negative authorial inscriptions. These are then followed up and restated/reinforced through inscribed negative evaluations in the preliminary paragraphs immediately following the lead. Through most of the remaining paragraphs which form satellites, largely those performing the functions of *elaboration* and *contextualisation* of the authorial stance, the news report attempts to establish justification for assumptions of the attitudinally evaluative position that the authorial voice has assumed in the headline/lead as well as in the news story in general.

### 6.4.3. Zimbabwe Independent (30 September, 2010)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Party agendas hold sway [j/ap] in constitution process</b> <i>Brian Chitemba</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised <i>Headline:</i> proposition that there is excessive politicking in the constitution making process)
005	POLITICAL parties in the <b>shaky</b> [ap/j] coalition government are <b>hoodwinking</b> [j] Zimbabweans into <b>believing that the constitution-making process is people-driven, but a closer look indicates that the politicians' will is prevailing</b> [ap/j].	<b>Nucleus: Lead/Elaboration</b> (Restatement of primary thesis established in the headline that there is political interference in constitution making process.)
010	The constitution-making process has been <b>reduced to a boxing arena</b> [j/ap] between rival parties and the <b>clashes</b> [j] will affect the outcome, <ack> analysts have said.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Specification of reasons for assumption of established thesis)
015	During the outreach exercise, Zanu PF and MDC-T supporters were <b>coached to read from their own scripts</b> [ap/j] and analysts say <ack> the recent <b>violent clashes</b> [j] confirm that <b>the political parties are pushing for their own interests</b> [j], leaving non-partisan Zimbabweans out of the process.	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b> (Background context for drawing the position of thesis established in lead – prior situation)
020	Zimbabweans are <b>disappointed</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af], analysts say, by Prime Minister Morgan Tsvangirai's announcement that <ack> the new constitution is <b>likely to be negotiated by political parties just like the Global Political Agreement (GPA)</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 3: Cause and effect</b> (Reason for politicisation of constitution making process)
025	Tsvangirai told a meeting in Harare on Monday that <ack> the outcome of the constitution-making process would have to be negotiated because no political party had a two-thirds majority in parliament to impose its will [ap].	<b>Satellite 4: Contextualisation</b> (Social context in which proposition in observed from)
030	"All political parties took a position that they were going to take a <b>partisan</b> [j] view on how the constitution will look like and that has caused problems," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 5: Contextualisation</b> (Social context in which proposition in observed from.)
	Zanu PF and MDC-T supporters have been engaged in <b>running battles</b> [j] during the outreach programme with political observers saying <ack>	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (Prior situation – Political

035	<b>the constitution-making process had become an election before an election.</b>	context to current situation)
040	National Constitutional Assembly chairman Lovemore Madhuku described the process as <ack> <b>a sham [ap]</b> . He said <ack> <b>politicians were not supposed to lead the crafting of the new supreme law [j/ap]</b> .	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of constitution making process)
045	“The MDC-T’s position that the new constitution should be negotiated is <b>nonsense [j/ap]</b> ,” <ack> Madhuku said. <ack> “We have always said the formation of a constitution must be championed by an independent commission rather than politicians.”	<b>Satellite 8: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of constitution making process)
050	London-based Zimbabwean journalist Innocent Chofamba Sithole said <ack> <b>it was not surprising [1<sup>st</sup> af/3<sup>rd</sup> af]</b> that Tsvangirai was lobbying for a negotiated constitution after the crafting of Kariba draft constitution by the inclusive government parties in the resort town, far away from the popular gaze.	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Further attributed evaluation of constitution making process)
055	The Kariba draft was signed on September 30 2007 and was crafted by Tendai Biti (MDC-T), Patrick Chinamasa (Zanu PF) and Welshman Ncube (MDC-M).	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Historical context to current process)
060	“It is no surprise that Tsvangirai should have <b>no compunction [j]</b> now to suggest a <b>negotiated settlement [ap]</b> on the new constitution by the same group of politicians (who negotiated the Kariba draft),” <ack> said Sithole. <ack> “In both cases, it is important to recognise that Tsvangirai, like	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Attributed further specifications and exemplification of politicking in constitutional process and/or evaluations of political actors)
065	Mugabe, is <b>acting purely in the interests of his party’s power ambitions [j]</b> . <b>He chose to burn bridges [j/ap]</b> with his civil society allies, including labour, in support of the government-led process that has now <b>floundered spectacularly [ap]</b> .”	
070	Sithole said <ack> Tsvangirai will be <b>judged harshly [3<sup>rd</sup> af]</b> on the failure of constitutional reform, having founded MDC-T around a rallying call for a people-driven constitution. He said <ack> President Robert Mugabe’s <b>opposition [j]</b> to popular	<b>Satellite 12: Cause and effect</b> (Consequence of primary proposal)
075	participation to constitution-making was a matter of <b>longstanding public record [ap/j]</b> .	

	Mugabe has said <ack> the constitution will reflect the views of the political parties which are keen on protecting their political interests.	<b>Satellite 13: Elaboration</b> (Exemplification of the political stances in the constitutional process)
080 085	“Let them be heard (referring to other parties) but at the end of the day, the main voice will be ours because the people have chosen us. <b>We are the ones in power and we can’t give that away – Tsvangirai, would you [ap]??</b> ” <ack> said Mugabe during the constitution outreach programme launch in June.	<b>Satellite 13: Elaboration</b> (Exemplification of the political stances in the constitutional process)
090	Critics then questioned <ack> why the Constitution Parliamentary Committee (Copac) wasted donor funds <b>pretending</b> [j] to gather people’s views when the final document will be packed by Zanu-PF, MDC-T and MDC views.	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
095	<b>The negotiated constitution, [ap/j]</b> Madhuku said, <ack> will be more of a <b>tripartite dictatorship</b> [j/ap] where three parties to <b>the inclusive government will come up with a national charter, regardless of the contributions from the majority of Zimbabweans. [ap/j]</b>	<b>Satellite 14: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process)
100 105	A new constitution is provided for under Article VI of the GPA where the parties acknowledged that it is a fundamental right and duty for Zimbabweans to make and own a constitution. Zimbabwe is currently using the 1979 Lancaster House Conference document that was designed to transfer power from the colonial power to Zimbabweans. The current constitution has been amended 19 times since Independence in 1980.	<b>Satellite 15: Contextualisation</b> (Historical context for constitution making exercise)
	“ <b>The constitution should always reflect the views and interests of the people across the country</b> [ap/j],” <ack> said Madhuku.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Attributed invoked evaluation of constitutional process)
110 115	Zapu spokesman Methuseli Moyo said <ack> the 1999 drafting of a constitution process was <b>better than the current scenario</b> [ap/j]; arguing that the Godfrey Chidyausiku-led Constitutional Commission was <i>more independent</i> [ap/j], although <b>biased</b> [ap] towards Zanu PF, than this year’s <b>flawed</b> [ap] process led by MPs.	<b>Satellite 17: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process)

	MPs, he said, <ack> were politicians who would ultimately push for their respective political parties' interests.	<b>Satellite 17: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process)
120	Moyo said <ack> from the beginning of the process, it was clear the MDC-T and Zanu PF <b>pretended</b> [j] to be soliciting people's views when they were <b>pushing for their selfish agendas</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
125	"The MDC and Zanu PF have been <b>fighting</b> [j/ap] in the outreach process, but the MDC <b>is holding the short end of the stick</b> [ap/j] and that's why they are complaining. How can Tsvangirai now say the process is not credible as if it was credible from the onset?" <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 18: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
130 135	Tsvangirai told a press conference last week that <ack> the constitution-making exercise was <b>a mess</b> [ap] due to <b>violence</b> [j] that gripped Chitungwiza and Harare, leading to the suspension of outreach meetings. The premier also <b>expressed discontent</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with the militarisation of the process where rural areas were allegedly under siege from the military and state security agents.	<b>Satellite 19: Contextualisation</b> (Further evidence and specification of politicking in constitutional process)
140	"The whole constitution-making exercise has <b>ignored</b> [ap/j] other political parties and civil society. The MDC-T now sees the light belatedly because they are failing to handle Zanu PF," <ack> said Moyo.	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
145	The Zanu spokesman said <ack> there were many Zimbabweans who were not interested in politics, but were keen on key social issues like education and have not been given a chance to express their views in the crafting of the supreme law.	<b>Satellite 21: Cause and effects</b> (States the effects of the politicisation of the constitutional process)
150	Zanu PF spokesman Rugare Gumbo defended his party's stance on the new constitution saying <ack> there was nothing wrong with coaching supporters to advance his party agenda.	<b>Satellite 20: Elaboration</b> (Further exemplification of political interference in the constitutional process)
155	"It can only be a problem if Zanu PF stops MDC-M or MDC-T supporters from airing their views," <ack> he said. "The constitution-making process has nothing to do with politics; it's a national issue."	<b>Satellite 20: Elaboration</b> (Further exemplification of political interference in the constitutional process)

	Gumbo said <ack> <u>the inclusive government principals will meet soon to decide the next course of action after outreach meetings were suspended due to violence in Mbare and Chitungwiza.</u>	<b>Satellite 20: Elaboration</b> (Further exemplification of political interference in the constitutional process as suggested by headline/lead)
160	Mutambara has said <ack> <u>political parties do not write a constitution [j/ap].</u>	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
165	He said: <ack> <u>“Political parties and government create an enabling environment where the people write their own constitution. Zimbabwe is bigger than the three political parties. There are parties that are not in the GPA, more importantly there are people who are not members of any political party.”</u>	<b>Satellite 22: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of political interference and invoked evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
170	Activists maintain that <ack> <u>a constitution should provide for social, economic and civil rights while giving a clear separation of powers between the executive, judiciary and legislature [ap].</u> Some of the issues that activists are lobbying for include limitation of the powers of the executive.	<b>Satellite 23: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
175	Admore Tshuma, an expert on transitional justice, said <ack> <u>the violence [j] showed that Mugabe and his colleagues have failed [j/ap] to adjust from the bush war behavioural attitude [j] to a civilian one which is an essential attribute to running a successful government.</u>	<b>Satellite 24: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
180 185	<u>“With violence [j] intermittently dogging [ap] the constitutional process, it will be a miracle if the process ever turns out to be effective, credible and valid because violence compromises the process,”</u> <ack> Tshuma said. “Violence instils fear in the populace and it is the duty of Mugabe to ensure a violence-free constitutional process. If we cannot ensure a violence-free constitutional-making process then it’s a disaster with elections.”	<b>Satellite 24: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
190	He said the whole process was <u>flawed [ap]</u> and should be suspended indefinitely to allow stakeholders to re-strategise.	<b>Satellite 24: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)
	“If the process is allowed to continue as <u>problematic [ap]</u> as it is, it clearly means that Zimbabwe <u>won’t</u>	<b>Satellite 24: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of constitutional process and political actors)

195	<b>be able to produce a constitution that reflects the will of the people in general. It would be a Zanu PF constitution, and they might as well utilise it at Zanu PF headquarters, [j/ap]</b> ” said Tshuma.	constitutional process and political actors)
-----	--	--

#### 6.4.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The major proposition of the news report is that the new constitution making programme is a farce. The news report assumes the authorial evaluative position which suggests that the constitutional process, which previously expressed as a people driven exercise meant to create a constitution reflecting the aspirations of the generality of the country’s citizens, has become a contest of political wills and dominance. This thesis, expressed through overt evaluative authorial inscriptions, sets out to foreground the belief that far from being a people driven and people oriented constitution, the process has been hijacked by political wills and thus the resultant constitution from the exercise will be a politically **‘negotiated document’** (060 – 061, 092) and not one reflecting the ideals it supposedly seeks.

This proposition, expressed through authorial inscriptions, is set out largely through JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION resources in the headline and the lead (001 – 008):

**Party agendas hold sway [j/ap] in constitution process**

POLITICAL parties in the **shaky** [ap/j] coalition government are **hoodwinking** [j] Zimbabweans into **believing that the constitution-making process is people-driven, but a closer look indicates that the politicians’ will is prevailing** [ap/j].

This position is further reinforced in the second paragraph of the news report, which also is expressed through the authorial attitudinal voice expressing negative JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION evaluations of the constitution making process too, through descriptions of it as having been **‘reduced to a boxing arena’** (009 – 010) by the rival political parties as well as characterised by politically motivated **‘clashes [that] will affect the outcome’** (011).

Compelling ‘expert’ voices are also called in to reinforce and/or endorse the authorial attitudinal position established through the headline and lead. The voices of constitutional law expert Professor Lovemore Madhuku, journalist Innocent Chofamba Sithole, Deputy Prime Minister Professor Aurthur Mutambara as well as transitional justice expert Admore Tshuma are called in to proffer substantiating evidence to the propositions made and assumed by the authorial evaluative position. Condensed evaluations from the external voices that endorse

and reinforce the authorial position also manifest themselves as largely attributed negative inscriptions. Evaluations of the constitutional process are found in the descriptions of the process as ‘**a sham**’ (040), ‘**nonsense**’ (044), ‘**negotiated constitution**’ (092), ‘**tripartite dictatorship**’ (093), ‘**flawed**’ (189), ‘**problematic**’ (192) as well as completely ‘**ignor[ing] the other political parties and civil society**’ (139).

The evaluations expressed in the news report are not only focused on the constitutional process but also on the political parties who are party to the constitutional committee, and who are also accused of furthering their own political agendas at the expense of the views and concerns of the people expressed during the outreach programme. Such evaluations, which are set out in the headline through the negative authorial inscription of JUDGEMENT, ‘**Party agendas hold sway in constitution process**’ (001 – 002) are further expressed through attributed material which elaborates and/or reinforces claims for the politicisation of the constitutional process. The following segment (092 – 097) illustrates such a position, which is also largely of JUDGEMENT resources and occurring as attributed negative inscriptions (and tokens):

<b>The negotiated constitution</b> , [ap/j] Madhuku said, <ack> will be more of a
<b>tripartite dictatorship</b> [j/ap] where three parties to <b>the inclusive government</b>
<b>will come up with a national charter, regardless of the contributions from</b>
<b>the majority of Zimbabweans</b> [ap/j].

The above segment illustrates an inscribed negative evaluation of all the political parties in the GNU through the negative evaluation of the constitutional process – which they are responsible for. The evaluations paint the political parties as inconsistent to the mandate of writing a national constitution because of the desire to chase and satisfy political agendas and in the process acquire political leverage over the other parties to the programme.

This form of evaluation is further manifest in the following segment (120 – 123):

Moyo said <ack> from the beginning of the process, it was clear the MDC-T
and Zanu PF <b>pretended</b> [j] to be soliciting people’s views when they were
<b>pushing for their selfish agendas</b> [j].

The segment above demonstrates explicit negative evaluations of the political actors and political parties, which again manifest as JUDGEMENT resources. Evaluations of the political parties and actors as having ‘**pretended**’ (089) and ‘**pushing for their selfish agendas**’

(123) resonate well with the authorial established position set out in the lead of the news report (004 – 008) which purports that:

POLITICAL parties in the shaky [ap/j] coalition government are hoodwinking [j] Zimbabweans into **believing that the constitution-making process is people-driven, but a closer look indicates that the politicians' will is prevailing** [ap/j].

The last token which I draw from lines (192 – 197) also reinforces the attitudinal position assumed by the authorial voices as argued for, and expressed in the above excerpt from the news report.

“If the process is allowed to continue as problematic [ap] as it is, it clearly means that Zimbabwe **won't be able to produce a constitution that reflects the will of the people in general. It would be a Zanu PF constitution, and they might as well utilise it at Zanu PF headquarters,** [j/ap]” said Tshuma.

The news report also provides evidence of instances of tokenised negative evaluations of the constitution making programme, tokens that also serve to reinforce the authorial position that the exercise had ceased to be concerned with creating a constitution reflecting the concerns of the general masses as it had become so highly politicised. These, however, also manifest as attributed material. Examples of such can be drawn from the textual indications that ‘**the constitution making process has become an election before an election**’ (036 – 037), ‘**politicians were not supposed to lead the crafting of the new supreme law**’ (040 – 042) and ‘**political parties do not write a constitution**’ (160 – 161).

These tokens merely function to signal implicitly, the manner(s) in which political will has hijacked the constitutional process and how the programme has now become a battlefield for political contestations. What is important to observe in the above news reports, is the manner in which attributed evaluative materials functions as satellites that elaborate on, contextualise as well as reinforce the ideological position established by the authorial voice.

This organisation/structure plays well into the observations that we have made several times above in which we argued for purposeful selection of external evaluations as well as appraising through the words of others – a journalistic manoeuvre that we argued allows reporters to assume evaluative positions through tactful impersonalisations. The news report thus provides little evidence of refrain from the assumption of an authorial subjective stance.

6.4.4. *Kwayedza* (01 Chikunguru/July, 2010)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ENGLISH TRANSLATION	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	‘Copac ngaiite zvido zvevanhu’[ap/j] <i>naBlackmore Mavura</i>	‘Copac must respect people’s wishes’ [ap/j] <i>By Blackmore Mavura</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised Headline: Proposition that constitution should reflect people’s wishes)
005  010	KUNE <u>kugeda-geda kwemeno maererano nekupotserana kwemashoko</u> [j/ap] kuri kuramba kuchitika pakati peveruzhinji nesangano reCopac iro riri kutungamirira kunyorwa kwebumbiro idzva remutemo.	There is tension [gnashing of teeth] fuelled by the incessant bickering that continues to characterise the relations between the masses and Copac, the board in charge of the new constitution making programme.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the failure to acknowledge the contributions of given groups in constitution making)
015  020	Svondo rino sangano rinomirira kodzero dzevanhu vakwegura reHelp Age <u>rakagunun’una</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] nemabatarwo ari kuitwa basa nesangano reCopac richiti <u>raisatora</u> [j] nhunha dzevanhu vakwegura kudziisa mubumbiro iri.	This week, Help Age, an organisation that fights for the rights of the aged expressed <u>anger</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] at the manner in which Copac is handling the programme by not incorporating the views of the elderly in the new constitution.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Specifies/exemplifies the disregard the views of other groups in the constitution making process)
025	Vachitaura, director vesangano reHelp Age, Mai Priscilla Gavi, vakati <ack> <u>sangano ravo harisi kufara</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] nemabatarwo ebasa rekunyorwa kwebumbiro sezvo riri kuratidza <u>kudzvinvirira</u> [ap] vakwegura.	Ms Priscilla Gavi, Help Age Director said <ack> <u>her organisation is unhappy</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] with the manner in which the new constitution making programme seems to be <u>oppressing</u> [ap] the wishes of the elderly.	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations of the constitution making process and its disregard of the views of other groups)
030  035	Mai Gavi vakati <ack> <u>kubva pane zvakaabva kuZimbabwe Statistical Agency zvakaonekwa kuti vakwegura ndivo vanoita chikamu che7% pavanhu vose vari muZimbabwe nekudaro</u>	Ms Gavi said <ack> <u>evidence from Zimbabwe Statistical Agency shows that the aged constitute 7% of the country’s total population and therefore constitute a group whose</u>	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (Social context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)

	vaifanirwa kunzwickwa zvavanoda izvo zvisiri kuitwa.	wishes must not be ignored like what is happening.	
040	ZSA inoti iyo <ack> vakwegura vanotanga kutariwa kubva pamazera emakore 60 zvichipfuura izvo zvinoita kuti vave chikamu chakakosha munyika.	ZSA says <ack> the aged refers to people from the ages of 60 and upwards, which makes them a very important group of people in the country.	<b>Satellite 4:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Social context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)
045	“Vanhu vakwegura ndivo chikamu che7% pavanhu vese vari munyika ino asi havasi kupihwa mukana wekutura zvavanoda, chero pakuvhota chaipo nzvimbo dzinoitwa izvi dzinenge dziri kure kwavasingakwanise kusvika nekuda kwekukura,” <ack> vakadaro Mai Gavi.	“The elderly constitute 7% of the total population of the Zimbabwe but they are not being accorded the opportunity to express their views, even during election times, voting centres are always too far away from them and inaccessible” <ack> said Ms Gavi	<b>Satellite 4:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Social context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)
055	Mashoko aMai Gavi anouya mushure mekunge sangano neZimbabwe National Liberation War Veterans Association <b>rashora</b> [ap/j] maitirwo ebaso iri, richiti <ack> <b>Copac inofanirwa</b> <b>kushandisa zvakataurwa</b> <b>nevanhu kwete kuda</b> <b>kukoshesa zvemamwe</b> <b>mapoka</b> [j/ap].	Ms Gavi’s sentiments come soon after the Zimbabwe National Liberation War Veterans Association also <b>condemned</b> [ap/j] the new constitution making programme saying <ack> <b>Copac should use the</b> <b>views expressed by the</b> <b>masses in the outreach</b> <b>and not selectively protect</b> <b>some groups.</b>	<b>Satellite 5:</b> <b>Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of the manner in which Copac conducts the constitution making process)
060			
065	Vachitaurawo svondo rino, Ambassador Chris Mutsvangwa vakati <ack> maitirwo ari kuitwa basa neCopac <b>haafadze</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af/j].	Speaking this week, Ambassador Chris Mutsvangwa said <ack> the manner in which Copac is conducting its affairs is <b>displeasing</b> [1 <sup>st</sup> af]	<b>Satellite 6:</b> <b>Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluations of the manner in which Copac conducts the constitution making process)
070	Cde Mutsvangwa vakati <ack> <b>chirongwa</b> <b>chekunyorwa kwebumbiro</b> <b>idzva chaifanirwa kuratidza</b> <b>zvakataurwa nevanhu izvo</b> <b>zvavari kuda kuti zviiswe</b>	Cde Mutsvangwa said <ack> the new constitution making programme <b>must</b> <b>show what the masses</b> <b>said wanted to see</b> <b>reflected in the news</b>	<b>Satellite 7:</b> <b>Elaboration</b> (Specifies/exemplifies further the disregard of views of other groups in the constitution making
075			

	<b>mubumbiro [ap/j].</b>	<b>constitution [ap/j]</b>	process)
080	<ack> “ <b>Vanhu vakataura zvanoda kuti zviiswe mubumbiro idzva iri izvo zvinofanirwa kutevedzwa [ap/j]. Zvino kana tave kusiya zvavakataura tave kushandisa zvakataurwa nemapoka akawanda acho ane chekuita nenyika dzekunze dzakaita seBritain tiri kuitei? [j/ap]</b>	<ack> “The people have expressed what they want to be reflected in the new constitution and <b>this must be respected [ap/j]. Now, if we start ignoring that and start using what organisations, largely affiliated to Britain and other foreign counties, what are we doing? [j/ap]</b> ”	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Social and political context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)
085			
090	“ <b>Chirongwa ichi ndechekuti isu vemuZimbabwe tigadzire bumbiro redu asi tiri kuona vekunze vachishandisa mapoka asinganzwisike vave kutaura zvavo izvo zvirikuiswa mubumbiro iri, [j/ap]</b> ” <ack> Ambassador Mutsvangwa vakadaro.	“This programme is meant for us Zimbabweans to make our own constitution but what we see is foreigners <b>using [j]</b> some organisations to influence the contents of the new constitution” <ack> said Ambassador Mutsvangwa	<b>Satellite 8: Contextualisation</b> (Social and political context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)
095			
100	“Musafunge kuti vanhu vari <b>kunyunyuta [3<sup>rd</sup> af]</b> ava havasi kuda bumbiro idzva asi kuti maitirwo ari kuita basa iri <b>anogumbura [1<sup>st</sup> af/j]</b> . Vanhu vakataura kunze uku apo vaibvunzwa nezvavanoda mubumbiro zvekuti <b>Copac inofanirwa kutevedzera izvikwete kuda kuita zvayo yoga, [j]</b> ” <ack> Ambassador Mutsvangwa vakadaro.	“Do not think that these people who are <b>disgruntled [3<sup>rd</sup> af]</b> do not want a new constitution but the manner in which the programme is proceeding is <b>angering [1<sup>st</sup> af]</b> . The people spoke on what they want and <b>Copac must follow that and not do whatever they will [j]</b> .” <ack> Ambassador Mutsvangwa said	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Attributed inscribed evaluation of the constitutional process)
105			
110	Mashoko aAmbassador Mutsvangwa akatsinhirwa naDr Vimbai Chivaura avo vakati <ack> <b>zvivo zveveruzhinji ndizvo zvinofanira kutevedzwa pakunyorwa kwebumbiro</b>	Ambassador Mutsvangwa’s concerns were also reiterated by Dr Vimbai Chivaura who said <ack> <b>the views of the majority should be respected in the drafting of the new</b>	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Attributed invoked evaluations of the constitution making process)

115	<b>idzva iri</b> [ap/j].	<b>constitution</b> [ap/j].	
120	“Pakaenda Copac kunze uku vainonzwa zvido zvevanhu zvavari kuda kuti zviiswe mubumbiro iri kwete zvirikuitwa iye zvino zvekuti mamwe mapoka ave kuunza zvaanoda zvoiswa pamberipane zvakataurwa nevanhu [j/ap].	“When Copac did an outreach programme, it sought the people’s views for the new constitution and not what is happening now where some organisations’ views are now being incorporated ahead of the publics’ views [j/ap]	<b>Satellite 11: Contextualisation</b> (Social and political context for expressing the concerns of the proposition)
125	Mukushi wemashoko muCopac, Mai Jessie Majome, vakaramba zvose izvi vachiti <ack> Copac yaida kuburitsa	Copac spokesperson, Ms Jessie Majome refuted all these allegations saying <ack> Copac respects the	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of social and political context for constitutional process)
130	nhunha dzemunhu wese ndokusaka vari kuterera zvirikubva kumapoka akazvimirira ega.	views of all people that is why they are listening to independent organisations too.	
135	“Chirongwa ichi ndechemunhu wese nekudaro tinofanirwa kutambira zvirikutaurwa nemunhu wese zvobatanidzwa kuiswa pamwe chete vanhu vozovivhotera,” Mai Majome vakadararo.	“This is a programme for everyone and therefore we must respect everything said by everyone and then consolidate all that and then the people will vote for it” <ack> Ms Majome said.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of social and political context for constitutional process)

#### 6.4.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The major proposition presented in the news report suggests negative attitudinal evaluations of COPAC and the manner in which it has conducted the new constitution making programme. In tandem with the other news reports analysed above, the news report suggests, largely through highly attitudinal and evaluative attributed material, that the constitution making process has ceased to be people driven because of a deliberate neglect of the views of other given minority groups by COPAC. Save for the lead, which represents the only instance of overt authorial inscription, the news report’s major propositions largely unfold through attributed materials. It is through these attributed materials that the majority of instances of attitudinal evaluations (both inscriptions and invocations) are realised.

Through materials attributed to external voices, the news report expresses inscribed negative evaluations of the manner in which COPAC has conducted the constitution making exercise which is characterised by deliberate and political motivated side-lining of the views of other minority, yet important groups in the country – specifically the aged and war veterans. The lead of the news report (004 – 011) which, as indicated earlier, forms the only observable authorial attitudinal evaluations, largely of JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION, sets the tone for further evaluations that occur in attribution. Evaluations of the tension between COPAC and other interested bodies to the constitutional process as ‘**Kune kugeda-geda kwemeno maererano nekupotserana kwemashoko**’ (There is gnashing of teeth fuelled by incessant bickering and exchange of harsh words) (004 – 006) sets out the tone in which we can contextualise the attributed negative inscriptions, which largely present themselves as AFFECT resources.

Attributed negative inscriptions of the manner in which COPAC conducts its mandate are largely occurring as AFFECT resources and are ascribed to the external voices of the War Veterans Association, representatives of organisations protecting the rights of the elderly as well as ZANU PF representatives. The AFFECT resources are used to portray negative emotional reactions and feelings towards COPAC and the manner in which it is side-lining named sections of society and in the process diverting from its assigned mandate of delivering a people driven constitution. Negative evaluative, attitudinal and appraisal resources such as ‘**rakagunun’una**’ (expressed anger) (015), ‘**harisi kufara**’ (is unhappy) (024), ‘**haafadze**’ (is displeasing) (069), ‘**kunyunyuta**’ (expressed disgruntlement) (097) and ‘**anogumbura**’ (is angering) (100) to describe the emotional reactions of the cited external voices to the manner in which COPAC has conducted its mandate signal *elaboration*, *contextualisation* and *exemplification* of the propositions made through the authorial voice in the lead.

The news report furthermore gives evidence of the use of attributed tokenised negative evaluations of the same. Such tokens again serve as *elaborations*, *contextualisations* and *exemplifications* of the propositions made by the lead as well as the headline. The tokens, exemplified in (060 – 064, 070 – 076, 079 – 083, 103 – 106 and 111 – 115), act in the same manner as the attributed inscriptions – to express the concerns of the news report. Through these tokens, the news report establishes that COPAC is deviating from the sentiments and views aired by the majority of people during the data collection period and thus they

negatively evaluate both COPAC and the constitutional process. Through the use of attributed materials, both inscribed and tokenised, which we observe act as satellite that (as the analysis in-text shows) are exploited by the news report to appraise the position assumed by the authorial voice in the lead. In the same manner, the headline, which also is framed in attribution but is not restated verbatim in the news report, is also used as an evaluative and appraisal tool in the news report and it ‘helps’ to set out the convictions that are eventually expressed through the authorial voice, again in the lead.

Of particular significance is the use of metaphoric expressions, especially in news reports in Shona, exemplified in the news report by the very first sentence of the lead ‘**Kune kugedageda kwemeno maererano nekupotserana kwemashoko**’ (There is gnashing of teeth fuelled by incessant bickering and exchange of harsh words [literary translated as ‘there is gnashing of teeth fuelled by incessant throwing words at each other’]) (004 – 006). The use of such instances of grammatical metaphor, which tend to dramatise situations serves to vivify the extent to which there is discord against the ‘behaviour’ of COPAC as well as the depth of animosity characterising the relations between COPAC and these groups representing minority concerns and rights.

#### **6.4.5. Comparative analytic perspective**

The notion of discursual manoeuvring discussed in several sections tackling individual analyses of news reports in this thesis, is an invaluable one in undertaking a comparative analysis of the rhetorical as well as generic/structural arrangements of matter in Zimbabwean news reports across the languages. The news reports discussed in the sections above characteristically follow in the structural pattern expressed in section 5.4.5 as predominantly found in Zimbabwean news reports. Such an arrangement evinces a stylistic manoeuvring through which the authorial voice exploits a variety of impersonalisations in order for it to distance itself from the major propositions and attitudinal evaluations of the news report. In that regard, we observe a heavy use of attributed materials through which the larger parts of instances of evaluative language are expressed. As expressed in earlier sections such as 4.4.2 and 5.4.5, there is also evidence of ideologically conditioned biases along political lines, evinced by the manner in which news reports express negative evaluations towards given political parties and evaluations which also betray the political parties that enjoy editorial sympathies from the publication in question.

The news reports under discussion here largely report on a similar issue, the political disparities between the parties to the GPA with regards to the constitution making exercise. The reports all express the conviction that politicking and political wars threaten to derail the constitution making programme. Differences, however, between the news reports are largely with regards to the ideological positions that the news reports as well as the authorial voices assume in reporting on the political problems of the constitution making process. *The Herald* news report, as discussed in section 6.3.1.1, exhibits little, if any, instances of overt authorial evaluations. In manoeuvring towards attempting to remain 'neutral' the news reports expresses attitudinal evaluations through attribution. As such, all attitudinal evaluations are expressed through attributed material. It is also through attributed material that the main propositions of news report are also developed. On the other hand, there are overt instances of inscribed authorial evaluations in both the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* news reports. The authorial voice in both these news reports assumes an ideological stance that explicitly positions it attitudinally. The *Kwayedza* news report exhibits, as with *The Herald* news report, low probabilities of authorial evaluative key. The instances of attitudinal evaluations are again, mainly expressed through attributed material.

In expressing the political differences derailing the constitutional programme, through external voices, *The Herald* news report presents a political ideological position that negatively evaluates the two MDC formations, especially MDC-T, for stalling the constitutional programme by insistences on including '**materials that do not reflect the people's wishes as expressed in the outreach programme**'. As such, while the authorial voice distances itself from such evaluations, the news report positively evaluates ZANU PF as the party concerned with protecting the wishes of the people. Manoeuvring, in a bid to remain seemingly neutral, these evaluations are attributed to external sources, largely from ZANU PF. The news reports thus, presents itself as expressed from the position of ZANU PF. Tactfully, the authorial voice manages to rid itself of subjective evaluations and in the process satisfies the dictates of the 'reporter voice' configuration since it does not exhibit a high proliferation of authorial attitudinal evaluations. However, we can make observations to the contrary by arguing that it is the authorial voice that assumes a stance (Gales, 2010) and elects the intertextual medium of expression (Seghezzi, 2007) and thus exhibits traits of 'appraising through the words of others' (Jullian, 2011).

On the other hand, the *Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent* news reports exhibit little evidence of refrain from ideological subjectivities. Both news reports assume authorial attitudinal positions that negatively evaluate political parties and politicking as responsible for the delays in the constitutional programme. The authorial positions, which are explicitly displayed throughout the bodies of the new reports, are initially set out through authorial evaluative inscriptions in the headlines and leads of both the news reports. Through the further use of evaluative expressions and appraisal resources exploited in the bodies of the news reports, these authorial positions are further endorsed. The positions assumed by both news reports evince a conviction that the political parties within the constitutional programme have side-tracked from the mandate of delivering a people driven constitution as set out in the GPA and instead have turned the whole process into a battle of political agendas and political wills.

In terms of rhetorical and structural developments of the textuality of the news reports, it is important to discuss especially the manner in which external voices are made use of. Following the observations made by Seghezzi (2007) that through ‘intertextualisation’, quotations (both direct and reported speech serve the purposes of (a) being newsworthy in their own right, (b) making the story more lively, (c) enhancing the credibility of the account, (d) allowing interpretation of news events and (e) allowing the insertion of subjective interpretations and opinions, it is important to note how significant attributions and quotations are in the structural and rhetorical development of new reports in Zimbabwean news reporting cultures across languages.

A heavy use of quotations occurs in the news reports under discussion. The use to which quotations and attributed evaluations are put to, differ with respect to individual news reports. In *The Herald* news report, attributed materials are the means through which the news story unfolds as well as makes evaluative expressions. In the *Newsday* news report, quotations and/or attributions serve as satellites for elaboration, contextualisation, extratextualisation and exemplification of the propositions made by the authorial stance. Evaluations are thus largely done through the authorial voice. On the other hand, in the *Zimbabwe Independent* news report, while there is a high proliferation of overt authorial attitudinal evaluations, the same can be said of quotations in the same report. There is, in the news report, a high proliferation of highly evaluative external voices. External voices are called upon as strategic impersonalisations through which negative evaluations of the constitutional process as well as

the politicking by the parties to the process are made. In the process the quotations not only serve as structural/rhetorical satellites of elaboration, contextualisation and extratextualisation but are also used as corroborative means to appraise/evaluate the authorial position expressed through the authorial voice.

The *Kwayedza* news reports evinces a structural arrangement that resembles that of most Zimbabwean news reports in English. As intimated earlier on in this section, the news report, through strategic manoeuvring and impersonalisations expresses little evidence of authorial subjectivities. There is, as is the case with all the English language news reports above, a heavy reliance on external voices/attributed materials. Attributed materials in the news report are used as satellites for expressing the major concerns of the news report. Even the headline is framed in attribution. Attributions are also the means through which the authorial voice, whose only instance of evaluative inscription is the use of grammatical metaphor in the lead of the news report, finds means for contextualising, appraising, elaborating and exemplifying the propositions set out by the headline and lead.

Grammatical metaphors, as a linguistic aesthetic is used as expressions to vivify and oftentimes over/dramatise situations. In this context the grammatical metaphor is used as vivification and thus, as an authorial evaluation which in turn influences the reading position of the new report. This is so because grammatical metaphors are ideologically loaded linguistic aesthetics/expressions. As expressed in the earlier stages of this section, the analyses of the rhetorical structure of the 'hard news' reports in Zimbabwean reporting cultures in both English and Shona evince a heavy reliance on external voices. This can be seen as a strategy through which the authorial voice succeeds in distancing itself from ideological subjectivities by making evaluations through the words of others – through the use of intertextual resources.

## **6.5. Reporting the political 'reactions' to the draft constitution**

In the month of July 2012, two years behind schedule, COPAC released a completed draft of the proposed constitution. The draft, a result of a three year process was submitted to the constitutional management committee<sup>85</sup> for approval and endorsement. An array of disagreements arose between the political parties with regards to the contents of the draft, culminating in further negotiations to narrow down the differences – a move that clearly

---

<sup>85</sup> This is a board comprised of representatives of the three political parties to the GNU – the same group that represented the three political parties in the negotiations leading to the formation of the GNU.

indicates how much of a political negotiation the whole process is. Critics, in light of this have expressed the fear that ‘the negotiated constitution will be more of a tripartite dictatorship where three parties to the inclusive government will come up with a national charter, regardless of the contributions from the majority of Zimbabweans’<sup>86</sup>. It was subsequently handed over to the principals of the GPA and was also discussed before the ZANU PF politiburo while awaiting tabling before parliament. COPAC handed over the draft constitution to parliament on 23 July 2012<sup>87</sup>.

Because of the political bickering that had characterised the constitution making process from its inception in 2010 and the disagreements between the political parties during the data collection period as well as the drafting stages, the release of the draft was not without its own controversies. In the initial stages of data collection, there were serious arguments between the parties in terms of the methodology to be used for collecting data. ZANU PF insisted on a quantitative approach while the two MDC factions insisted on a qualitative one. It was the contention of the MDC formations that a quantitative approach would put ZANU PF in a position of advantage in terms of control over the final contents of the constitution. In May 2011, for example, the thematic committee meetings on the proposed new constitution were stalled after members of the two MDC formations disagreed with their ZANU PF counterparts over the methodology to use to capture views gathered during the constitutional outreach programme<sup>88</sup>. It is important to note, in the wake of such contestations, that the draft was an outcome of political compromises made to resolve disagreements between the political parties with regards to the contents of the constitution.

Thus, some concern was raised that the process had ceased to be a national enterprise reflecting the will of the masses. ZANU PF, at some point, is on record as having contended that because of the continued fighting the constitution making process would not be finished anytime soon because people spearheading the process were ‘legal midgets’ who were sacrificing national interests in an attempt to end political careers of individuals. Specifically, ZANU PF expressed the sentiments that the MDC formations were interested in enacting laws that would eliminate the political career of the incumbent president and ZANU PF leader, Robert Mugabe. Such arguments specifically arose when a motion was tabled to set the maximum age limit for presidential candidates at 70, a motion that ZANU PF saw as a

---

<sup>86</sup> ‘Party agendas hold sway in constitution process’ – *Zimbabwe Independent*, Thursday 30 September 2010

<sup>87</sup> ‘Copac submits draft constitution to parliament’ – *The Herald*, Tuesday 24 July 2012

<sup>88</sup> ‘Thematic meetings stall’ – *The Herald*, Wednesday, 11 May 2011

direct attack on the person and legacy of Mugabe. There were thus, politically motivated disagreements between the political parties represented in COPAC, with each party accusing the other of attempting to enact a constitution that protected its own political agendas. In the context of the continued political fights characterising the new constitution making process, the following section constitutes an analysis of news reports announcing the completion and release of the draft constitution as well as reactions (political or otherwise) to this ‘release’ of the draft.

### 6.5.1. *The Herald* (03 August, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Politburo <u>raises questions</u> [ap/j] over Copac’s draft</b> <i>Herbert Zharare and Farirai Machivenyika</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised headline: Proposition that the content of the draft constitution are ‘suspicious’)
005	ZANU-PF’S Politburo has, in its audit of Copac’s final draft Constitution against the national report, <b><u>raised questions</u></b> [ap/j] on <b>why the people’s views were not properly captured</b> [j].	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the propositions of the headline and provides evaluation of situation)
010	Sources who attended Wednesday’s meeting said <ack> <u>the leadership wanted its members in the Copac management committee to explain the discrepancies.</u>	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Specifies, exemplifies the concerns (“questions raised”) in headline and lead)
015	Politburo members said <ack> <u>the management committee <b>should have ensured</b> [j] the draft <b>did not deviate</b> [ap/j] from what was captured during the outreach programme.</u>	<b>Satellite 2: Contextualisation</b> (Context in which the ‘raised questions’ are raised)
020	The party, which said <ack> <u>it was close to finding common ground on <b>sticky issues</b> [ap] in the draft Constitution,</u> would finalise its position at another meeting slated for next Wednesday.	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Restatement/exemplification of reasons for “raising concerns”)
	Zanu-PF spokesperson Cde Rugare Gumbo yesterday said: <ack> <u>“<b>There are areas they (Copac) did not deal with candidly. We want the Constitution to reflect some of those values</b> [j/ap].</u>	<b>Satellite 4: Justification</b> (Reasons/specification why “questions have been raised”)

025	<ack> “That is why the party is saying let us look at the document chapter-by-chapter, sentence-by-sentence and word-by-word.”	<b>Satellite 5: Cause and effect</b> (Consequence of primary concerns - ‘raised questions’)
030	<ack> “ <b>Some of the things we are seeing are not in the national report and we are saying why hanging [ap/j]?</b> ”	<b>Satellite 6: Justification</b> (Reasons/specifications why “questions have been raised”)
035	He dismissed reports that Zanu-PF was divided over the draft Constitution. <ack> “ <i>There is no controversy at all</i> [ap/j]. It’s a question of debate. <i>Everyone is in agreement</i> [ap] in the Politburo except for some few issues we want addressed.”	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF as united in position reflected in headline and lead)
	Cde Gumbo told journalists after the Politburo meeting that ended after midnight on Wednesday that <ack> <u>Zanu-PF was finding common ground.</u>	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF as united in position reflected in headline and lead)
040	“We want to find common ground and generally I think <i>we are moving in the right direction</i> [ap/j],” <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF as united in position reflected in headline and lead)
	<ack> “What we are doing now is to put together the party’s position.”	<b>Satellite 7: Appraisal</b> (Attributed evaluation of ZANU PF as united in position reflected in headline and lead)
045	The Politburo, which initially met last Friday to dissect the draft, did not reach a consensus on Wednesday as there were <dist> “a few issues to be concluded”.	<b>Satellite 8: Intertextuality</b> (Extratextual elaboration and, contextualisation of the ‘divisions and deadlock’ for “raising questions”)
050	“I think it is just a question of tying some loose ends, but generally things are moving in the right direction and by that time (Wednesday) we will have a clear position,” <ack> Cde Gumbo said.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Statement of ZANU PF position regards the “questions are raised”)
	The two MDC formations have since endorsed the document.	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Context in which “questions on constitution are raised”)
055	Zanu-PF representative in the Copac management committee, Cde Patrick Chinamasa, was <b>not keen</b> [j]	<b>Satellite 11: Appraisal</b> (Authorial evaluations of

	to discuss issues of concern raised by the Politburo.	ZANU PF and its position)
	“Yes, we are going to finalise everything on Wednesday. We have already made our position clear.” <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 12: Intertextuality</b> (Extratextual elaboration and contextualisation of the ‘divisions and deadlock’ for “raising questions” and ZANU PF position regards the “questions are raised”)
060	The Politburo last week tasked its representatives in the Copac management committee to collate the proposed amendments into a comprehensive document.	<b>Satellite 13: Contextualisation</b> (Context which gives rise to “questions on constitution being raised”)
065	Some <b>contested areas</b> [ap] include national objectives and foundations, the significance of the liberation struggle, the appointment of provincial governors and the establishment of the constitutional court.	<b>Satellite 14: Elaboration</b> (Reasons/context for “raising questions” on constitutional process)
070	Other areas of <b>dispute</b> [ap] include the deployment of defence forces outside the country and the proposed restructuring of the Attorney-General’s Office.	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> (Reasons/context for “raising questions” on constitutional process)
075	There was also <b>debate</b> [ap] on the section dealing with the nomination of presidential candidates and their running mates.	<b>Satellite 14: Contextualisation</b> Reasons/context for “raising questions” on constitutional process)
	The Politburo <i>endorsed</i> [j] portions of the draft Constitution last Friday, but proposed amendments to several <b>contentious clauses</b> [ap].	<b>Satellite 15: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of reasons for “raising questions”)
080	Lawyers and political analysts said <ack> <b>the draft did not capture views expressed during the outreach.</b> [ap/j]	<b>Satellite 16: Elaboration</b> (Specifies/exemplifies the reasons for “raising questions”)
	<b>Copac produced the draft two weeks ago after missing the deadline by over two years.</b> [j]	<b>Satellite 17: Contextualisation</b> (Further specifications and appraisal of prior situation – evaluative)
085	Meanwhile, Copac has postponed its Project Board meeting that was supposed to be held this week to discuss the modalities around the hosting of the	<b>Satellite 18: Cause and effect</b> (Consequence of the major

	second all stakeholders' conference on the draft constitution.	proposition)
090	The Project Board involves Copac leadership, Government and donors and was supposed to come up with dates, funding and selection of participants to the conference.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
	At least US\$2 million is required to cater for the nearly 2 300 delegates expected to attend.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
095	Copac co-chairpersons, Cde Munyaradzi Mangwana and Mr Douglas Mwonzora, confirmed the postponement yesterday, saying it was meant to allow parties to conclude their consultations of the draft released last week.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
100	“We cannot have the Project Board when parties are still discussing the draft and we will only meet when the consultations that are going on at the moment are complete,” <ack> Cde Mangwana said.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
105	He said <ack> future activities of the constitution-making process were dependent on current consultations.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
110	“All plans are based on certain events and all future programmes are dependent on the progress that would be made by the current consultations,” <ack> said Cde Mangwana.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)
	This may result in the second all stakeholders' conference that Copac had initially scheduled to be held before the end of this month being pushed to a later date.	<b>Satellite 19: Elaboration</b> (Further specification of the consequences of the major proposition)

### 6.5.1.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The new report is framed in such a manner that its major propositions are framed in attribution. Save for only two instances of authorial inscribed evaluation, the news report's proposition largely unfold through the words of external voices. In that regard, evaluative expressions are thus occurring as both attributed inscribed evaluations and attributed tokenised invocations. The news report, whose propositions are largely attributed to ZANU PF, makes representations that ZANU PF' highest decision making body, the Politiburo, has

expressed concerns that the draft constitution does not reflect the concerns and views of the people as expressed during the constitutional making process' data collection phase – the outreach programme. The evaluations of these politiburo concerns in both the headline and the lead (001 – 006) are the only instances in which the authorial voice makes observed inscribed evaluations which are largely APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT formulation – APPRECIATION as negative evaluations of the state of affairs and JUDGEMENT as negative evaluations of COPAC for failing to capture the said 'people's' views in the draft constitution (001 – 007):

**Politiburo raises questions [ap/j] over Copac's draft**

ZANU-PF'S Politiburo has, in its audit of Copac's final draft Constitution against the national report, raised questions [ap/j] on **why the people's views were not properly captured** [j].

The subsequent paragraphs of the news report, largely occurring as attributed matter, function largely as evaluations of COPAC, the draft constitution as well as ZANU PF as a political party. Firstly, the news report makes use of attributed inscriptions and tokens to negatively evaluate the draft constitution and COPAC. An example of such a tokenised evaluation is found in the following extract (021 – 024) attributed to ZANU PF spokesperson Rugare Gumbo:

Zanu-PF spokesperson Cde Rugare Gumbo yesterday said: <ack> **There are areas they (Copac) did not deal with candidly. We want the Constitution to reflect some of those values** [j/ap].

The following extract, also attributed to Rugare Gumbo (028 – 030) also represents such an evaluative position espoused above:

<ack> **Some of the things we are seeing are not in the national report and we are saying why hanging** [ap/j]?"

While the above formulation seemingly do not directly reflect appraisal resources, they are used as evaluative tokens that express the position that ZANU PF as a party has taken towards COPAC as well as the draft constitution. This position is cemented by the proliferation of evaluative appraisal resources within the news reports, occurring as both attributed inscriptions and invocations and which negatively evaluate the draft constitution as well as COPAC. Such evaluations, also largely of APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT

formulations, are exemplified by appraisal resources such as, that the drafters ‘**should have ensured that the draft did not deviate**’ (014 – 015), and that now it contains ‘**sticky issues**’ (018).

Lastly, the news report, again through attributed resources, also makes positive evaluations of ZANU PF as a political party. The images aroused by the news report are those of the political party as one that is concerned with the protection of the interests and concerns of the general populace. In other words, as a people oriented political party. There are also positive evaluations of ZANU PF as a united political party and working in unison. Evaluative resources/tokens such as ‘**no controversy at all**’ (032 – 033), ‘**everyone is in agreement**’ (034) and ‘**we are moving in the right direction**’ (040) signal this attempt to positively evaluate ZANU PF. Interesting to note here is that while such evaluations of ZANU PF are not directly linked to the major propositions of the news report, they signal some ‘extratextual’ elaborations/broader contextualisations and/or intertextuality in the sense that they seem to be speaking to uncited earlier texts that have supposedly made indications that the party had been rocked by divisions and factional wars with regards to the assumption of a party position over the draft constitution.

A comment which can be passed in relation to the structural organisation of the news report is the manner in which some components of the news reports are not easy to descriptively confine to the established satellites of the analytical framework suggested by White (1998) in the ‘orbital structure’ analysis of ‘hard news’ reports. Some ‘information’ that finds its way into news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in general often acts outside the confines of the satellites established by White (1998) and render themselves of formulation of some form of what I have called ‘extratextual’ *contextualisation, elaboration* and oftentimes *appraisal*. Vo (2011) also discusses the occurrence of such a form of ‘extratextualisation’ in English and Vietnamese business ‘hard news reports’. He observes that such ‘extra’ information often introduce ‘new information’ that does not necessarily specify the nucleus as expressed by the ‘orbital structure’. An example of such is Satellite 12 above, which indirectly appraises the propositions of the news report as established by the headline and lead and in the process offers some form of contextualised ‘extratextual’ elaboration and contextualisation of the ‘divisions and deadlock’ forming the basis for ZANU PF’s ‘raising questions’ about the contents of the draft constitution and also establishing the ZANU PF position regards the ‘questions that are raised’.

6.5.2. *Newsday* (03 August 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Zanu PF <u>deadlocked</u> [j/ap]</b> <i>Everson Mushava Chief Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: <u>Headline</u></b> (Appraised <i>headline</i> : Proposition that ZANU PF as a party is not agreed on the way forward regards the draft constitution)
005	The Zanu PF politburo on Wednesday <b><u>again failed</u> [j]</b> to come up with a position on the draft constitution amid indications <b><u>hawks</u> [j]</b> in the party have stepped up their fight to have the process abandoned.	<b>Nucleus: <u>Lead</u> (Elaboration)</b> (Restates the propositions of the headline and provides evaluation of situation)
010	The party's secretariat chaired by President Robert Mugabe <b><u>was meeting for the third time</u> [j]</b> to discuss the draft. <b><u>Last Friday the meeting lasted until the early hours of Saturday morning</u> [ap/j]</b> .	<b>Satellite 1: <u>Elaboration</u></b> (specifies and exemplifies deadlock)
015	Justice minister Patrick Chinamasa, the Zanu PF chief negotiator in the Global Political Agreement (GPA) talks, as well as the party's spokesperson Rugare Gumbo told journalists after the last meeting <ack> <u>the politburo had endorsed 97% of the draft.</u> The meeting on Wednesday, the officials had said, <ack> <u>would be used to wrap up the discussions allowing Zanu PF to make its position on the draft public.</u>	<b>Satellite 2: <u>Contextualisation</u></b> (Prior situation and/or context before deadlock)
020	But <b><u>cracks</u> [ap/j]</b> started to emerge on Tuesday with Tsholotsho North MP Jonathan Moyo <b><u>rubbishing</u> [j]</b> claims that Zanu PF had agreed to 97% of the draft.	<b>Satellite 3: <u>Elaboration</u></b> (exemplifies and specifies context and primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
025	<b><u>This set the tone for the meeting that again stretched into the early hours of yesterday</u> [j/ap]</b> .	<b>Satellite 4: <u>Contextualisation</u></b> (Context for drawing (and appraisal of) primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
	Sources said <ack> <u>the differences between Zanu PF's GPA negotiators and the <u>hawks</u> [j] who reportedly represent the interests of securocrats <u>widened</u> [ap]</u> .	<b>Satellite 5: <u>Elaboration</u></b> (exemplifies and specifies context and primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
030	The <b><u>hardliners</u> [j]</b> reportedly <dist> led by Moyo, who was at the forefront of the failed attempt to	<b>Satellite 6: <u>Elaboration</u></b> (exemplifies and specifies

035	rewrite Zimbabwe's constitution at the turn of the millennium, came up with proposed amendments to the draft that could see the constitution-making process unravel.	context and primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
040	Sources said <ack> Zanu PF's latest <b>demands</b> [j] were not likely to be accepted by the two MDC formations that have already endorsed the draft. After a long debate that saw the <b>differing</b> [j] parties <b>drifting further apart</b> [ap/j], it was agreed the politburo would reconvene next Wednesday to continue the deliberations.	<b>Satellite 7: Intertextuality</b> (Extratextual elaboration and, contextualisation of divisions and 'deadlock' : Appraisal of divisions and 'deadlock')
045	The <b>hawks</b> [j] want the provision allowing for dual citizenship to be scrapped in the draft, <ack> the sources said. They also want the constitution to be specific about "war veterans of the liberation struggle" as "war veterans alone would be subject to abuse by ex-Selous Scouts and Rhodesian soldiers" <ack>	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (exemplifies and specifies context and primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
050	Sources said <ack> the <b>hawks</b> [j] want the former fighters to be guaranteed free access to education and health. Gumbo yesterday refused to speak out on Wednesday's deliberations, but confirmed that <ack> <b>some in Zanu PF wanted an overhaul of the draft</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (exemplifies and specifies context and primary thesis that there is a 'deadlock')
055	"We went through the draft and made indications on a lot of clauses that we think need to amended," <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 10: Contextualisation</b> (Context for the 'deadlock')
060	<ack> "We have not concluded and once we are through as a party, hopefully next week, we will present our proposals to the other parties in the inclusive government for consideration."	<b>Satellite 11: Elaboration</b> (Further specifications of the 'deadlock')
065	Some in Zanu PF are also <b>not happy</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with the proposals to create an independent prosecution authority and reduce the powers of the Attorney-General.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Exemplification, evaluation and further specification of the 'deadlock')
	The <b>hawks</b> [j] are also against proposals to create a Constitutional Court that would deal with electoral disputes, among other things.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Exemplification, evaluation and further specification of the 'deadlock')

### 6.5.2.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The authorial voice in the news report establishes an evaluative position that there are factional rifts within ZANU PF with regards to the party's position on the draft constitution. Several instances of overt authorial inscriptions present themselves in the news report and thus ideologically locate the authorial voice evaluatively. In other words, there is little evidence that suggests authorial attempts to remain neutral. External voices called upon in the news report also function to endorse this established authorial position. The authorial voice, which assumes an attitudinal position that negatively evaluates both ZANU PF as a political party as well as the factional wars within ZANU PF that exhibit themselves in the forms of differences of stance with regards to the contents of the draft constitution, sets out the expression of such negative evaluations in both the appraised headline and lead (001 – 006) through evaluative resources which are largely of APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT.

#### **Zanu PF deadlocked [j/ap]**

The Zanu PF politburo on Wednesday **again failed** [j] to come up with a position on the draft constitution amid indications **hawks** [j] in the party have stepped up their fight to have the process abandoned.

The use of the evaluative inscription '**again failed**' expresses an intertextual attempt to reinforce the argument for the existence of rifts within ZANU PF by providing an extratextual historical referencing, backgrounding and contextualising the present 'deadlock' in a broader context. This is further reinforced through authorial tokenised invocations presenting evaluations that there is an ideological impasse within ZANU PF, expressed by such tokens as represented by lines (008 – 011) suggesting meeting for the "third time" and meetings that go through the night.

External voices are also called upon to validate this authorial position. The voices of two high profile members of ZANU PF – ZANU PF party spokesperson Rugare Gumbo and ZANU PF Member of Parliament Professor Jonathan Moyo – are juxtaposed in terms of their varying positions regarding the party's position on the draft constitution – varying positions that serve the rhetorical purposes of the authorial voice. This rhetorical move presents itself as some of strategic manoeuvring through which the authorial voice both contextualises and elaborates on the claims of its attitudinal position. The material attributed to both Gumbo (015 – 020) and Moyo (021 – 024) is used as *justification*, *elaboration* and *contextualisation* satellites from which the authorial voice draws its evaluative position, and the fact that these two

external voices both represent high profile figures in ZANU PF gives credence to this established authorial position.

Unnamed external sources are also utilised to present evaluative materials that give credence to the authorial claims for the existence of factional rifts within ZANU PF. Highly attitudinal and evaluative materials describing ‘factional’ relations within ZANU PF as having ‘**cracks**’ (021), ‘**widened**’ (029), ‘**drifting further apart**’ (040) and ‘**differing**’ (039) are thus framed as attributed inscribed attitudinal evaluations. Their purpose however, as established in the orbital structure analysis above is to contextualise and elaborate on the evaluative position already assumed by the authorial voice.

The authorial voice also expresses overt attitudinal evaluations. The use of adverbial/adjectival formatives describing sections of ZANU PF as ‘**hawks**’ (005, 027, 043, 050 and 067) and ‘**hardliners**’ (030) exemplify such authorial attitudinal evaluations. ‘**Hawks**’ is used here as a grammatical metaphor to describe some members of ZANU PF as predatory and who the authorial voice seems to be evaluating as bent on stalling progress in the constitution making exercise for political interests. The use of the evaluative and highly attitudinally loaded term ‘**hardliners**’ (030) expresses authorial evaluations signalling an authorial conviction that this section of ZANU PF is against change and would be willing to fight to ensure that the status quo prevails and that the constitutional process is a failure. Further evidence of such a position is established in the lead and again through the authorial voice, which suggests that ‘**hawks in the party have stepped up their fight to have the process abandoned**’ (006 – 007).

### 6.5.3. *Zimbabwe Independent* (4 August, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Battle</b> [ap] over new draft ZANU PF, MDC, MDC-T <b>looms</b> [ap/j] <i>Faith Zaba</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Appraised proposition: that there is looming battle between political parties over draft of new constitution)
005	<b>BATTLE LINES are drawn</b> [ap/j] over the latest Copac draft constitution, with Zanu PF trying to <b>force</b> [j] wholesale amendments to the document while the two MDC parties endorsed it without changes.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restatement of primary thesis as established in the headline)

010  015	In a move that <b>threatens to further derail</b> [j/ap] the <b>troubled</b> [ap] constitution-making process that has so far <b>gobbled</b> [ap] more than US\$45 million and <b>is about two years behind schedule</b> [ap], Zanu PF has rejected many sections of the draft and <b>is pushing to rewrite certain clauses to ensure presidential powers remain largely intact</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 1: Contextualisation</b> (Backgrounding the context for making proposals in headline and lead)
020	In some sections Zanu PF is <b>pushing</b> [j] for changes that will introduce new issues and in other areas where presidential powers have been diluted it wants them restored.	<b>Satellite 2: Elaboration</b> (Specifies/exemplifies possible areas for “battle”)
	The MDC parties have made it clear the draft is a negotiated document which won't be revised.	<b>Satellite 3: Contextualisation</b> (Prior situation)
025	While the parties are <b>battling</b> [j] with <b>internal divisions</b> [ap] over the draft, the struggle will also be fought amongst the parties at principal level, the second stakeholders' conference and in parliament.	<b>Satellite 4: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of area of possible “battle”)
030	The parties will also face-off with civil society groups that have <b>criticised</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] the process, arguing <b>it was not inclusive and inherently flawed</b> [ap/j].	<b>Satellite 5: Elaboration</b> (Restatement of headline and lead propositions)
035	Civil society is <b>demanding</b> [ap] an explanation as to why Zanu PF and the two MDCs <b>wasted</b> [j] US\$45 million on an outreach programme only to negotiate the document and <b>plagiarise</b> [j] the rejected 2000 draft, Kariba draft and the current constitution, among others.	<b>Satellite 6: Contextualisation</b> (Evaluation/exemplification of the context for possible “battle”)
040  045	President Robert Mugabe and his allies, through the politburo, are <b>demanding</b> [j] <b>far-reaching</b> [ap] changes to the draft constitution, which include the preamble, national objectives and foundations, the history and legacy of the liberation struggle, public administration, public finance, tiers of government, devolution and appointment of provincial governors.	<b>Satellite 7: Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background for possible “battle”)
050	They also <b>want to force</b> [j] changes in the establishment of the constitutional court, deployment of defence forces outside the country, proposed restructuring of the Attorney-General's Office, the exclusion of traditional chiefs from the Judicial Services Commission,	<b>Satellite 8: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of possible areas of “battle”)

	and introduction of term limits.	
055 060	There was also <b>heated</b> [j/ap] debate since last week on vice-presidents, the provision of running mates in presidential elections, maintenance of the office of the public protector which had been removed following the adoption of the Human Rights Commission, media, war veterans, Zimbabwe's obligations under international law, citizenship, death penalty, anti-corruption, and foreign policy.	<b>Satellite 9: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of possible areas of "battle")
065	There are <b>fears</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] gay rights might be sneaked in through the backdoor via international instruments and they want the proposed National Peace and Reconciliation Commission abolished.	<b>Satellite 10: Elaboration</b> (Further specification and exemplification of possible areas of "battle")
	The politburo met on Wednesday for the <b>third time in two weeks</b> [ap] for a total more than 24 hours to discuss the draft constitution.	<b>Satellite 11: Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background for possible "battle")
070	It is expected to finalise discussions next week and announce the party's position on the Copac document.	<b>Satellite 11: Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background for possible "battle")
075	Politburo members, who spoke to the Zimbabwe Independent, said <ack> <u>yesterday they agreed to push for amendments on clauses which undermine the president's sweeping executive powers.</u>	<b>Satellite 11: Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background for possible "battle")
080	The meetings saw <b>rival factions</b> [j] led by Vice-President Joice Mujuru, Defence minister Emmerson Mnangagwa and <b>hardliners</b> [j] led by outspoken politburo member, Jonathan Moyo, come together in support of amendments to the draft.	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of the contextual background/exemplification of areas of possible "battle")
085	<b>Hardliners</b> [j] are pushing for the rejection of the draft which they view as <b>a systematic weakening of state institutions and unmitigated onslaught on the executive</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af].	<b>Satellite 12: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of the contextual background/exemplification of areas of possible "battle")
090	<i>In contrast, the two MDC formations endorsed the draft at their separate national executive meetings [j], arguing it represented an incremental gain in the democratisation process</i>	<b>Satellite 13: Contextualisation</b> (Exemplification/contextualisation of areas for possible "battle")

095	[ap]. MDC president Welshman Ncube said: <ack> “We have endorsed the draft constitution and we expect it to be taken to the second stakeholders’ conference, then parliament before we go for a referendum.”	
100	<ack> “It is not possible to renegotiate or alter anything without collapsing the whole process. We as a party will not accept any attempt by anybody to renegotiate any aspect of this draft. We will not accept any forum for some people to veto or alter the agreed document.”	
105	MDC-T <i>concurred</i> [j]. Its spokesperson Douglas Mwonzora said his party <ack> was <i>satisfied</i> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] with the draft constitution.	
110	He said <ack> some of the <i>positive aspects</i> [ap] include dual citizenship, establishment of stronger checks and balances on the executive, provision of a strong and accountable president, creation of independent commissions, freedom of the press, devolution of power to the provinces, establishment of the National Prosecution Authority and Constitutional Court and an expanded Bill of Rights.	<b>Satellite 14: Elaboration</b> (Exemplification/contextualisation of areas for possible “battle”)
115		
120	“The party resolved that the people of Zimbabwe must be given opportunity to decide on the draft through a referendum,” <ack> he said.	<b>Satellite 15: Elaboration</b> (Exemplification/contextualisation of areas for possible “battle”)
	<b>Fissures</b> [j/ap] have not only emerged between the coalition parties, but also within the political parties over the draft.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of “battles”)
125	Zanu PF is currently <b>divided</b> [ap] into three groups — an anti-draft faction led by Moyo, another defending it which includes negotiators, and a third which is neutral.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of “battles”)
130	In the MDC-T some national executive committee members have expressed <b>disappointment</b> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] with certain clauses the party endorsed.	<b>Satellite 16: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of “battles”)
	MDC-T national executive sources said <ack>	<b>Satellite 17: Elaboration</b>

135	<u>divisions</u> [ap] are mainly centred on compensation and justice for victims of state-perpetrated atrocities and devolution.	(Exemplification/contextualisation of areas for possible “battle”)
	“There was not much debate on the matter (draft constitution) at the last national executive meeting in the mistaken belief that the draft had been agreed by all parties,” <ack> a source said.	<b>Satellite 18: Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background of prior context for possible “battles”)
140	<ack> “However, Zanu PF’s calls for amendments to the draft have <u>infuriated</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] officials from Matabeleland mainly over devolution.”	<b>Satellite 19: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of the “battles”)
145	MDC-T Bulawayo provincial chairperson Gordon Moyo conceded <ack> there were <u>reservations</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] among party members on issues such as devolution while sources said <ack> MDC-T leader Morgan Tsvangirai was now <u>having second thoughts</u> [3 <sup>rd</sup> af] on the clause on presidential election running mates.	<b>Satellite 20: Appraisal</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of the “battles”)
150		
155	<u>Divisions</u> [ap/j] at various levels — including within and among parties, civil society and the public — have left <u>battle lines</u> [ap] on the draft drawn ahead of key stages such as the stakeholders’ conference, parliament and referendum that will decide the fate of the document.	<b>Satellite 21: Appraisal/Elaboration</b> (Evaluations/exemplification of the “battles”)

### 6.5.3.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report expresses an authorial position that suggests the possibilities of ‘wars’ and ‘collisions’ between the political parties involved in the constitution making programme because of alleged differences of opinion with regards to the contents of the draft constitution. The news report, in this regard, evinces several instances of observed authorial attitudinal evaluations that position the authorial voice subjectively. Drawing from these alleged tensions between the political parties and within the political parties, the authorial voice makes explicit/inscribed evaluations of the nature of the relationship between the political parties with regards to the draft constitution, the new constitution making process as well as the ZANU PF component of the unity government. These evaluations largely occur as APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT resources.

There are also tokens expressed from the authorial voice that express negative attitudinal evaluations of the political parties in the GNU, specifically ZANU PF and MDC-T. The tone of the authorial voice is initially set out in the headline through APPRECIATION and JUDGEMENT resources in which images/metaphors of a **'battle...looms'** (001) vivify the established overt authorial assessment of the tensions characterising the nature of relations between the politics parties.

The first paragraph of the news report, forming the lead, evinces negative inscribed authorial evaluations of the constitution making process as both **'troubled'** (010), having **'gobbled more than \$45million'** (011 - 012) and **'about two years behind schedule'** (012 - 013). This position of the attitudinal authorial voice is endorsed by external voices which are also called upon to give evaluations too, and which in the process also express negative attitudinal inscriptions towards the same. The voices of the unnamed 'civil society' express evaluations of the constitution making programmes as **'not inclusive and inherently flawed'** (030 – 031), **'having wasted \$45 million'** (033 – 034) and as having merely **'plagiarise[d]'** (035) the old constitutions. Such evaluations reverberate with the position assumed by the same publication in the news report discussed above in section **6.3.2.1**, which again negatively appraises both the constitution making programmes as well as the relations between the political parties, which in that instance it expresses as **'discord'**.

The manner in which the news report makes use of external voices to express evaluations that resonate with those of the authorial voice reverberates with the notions of appraising through the words of other (Jullian, 2011) and that of stancetaking (Gales, 2010) as discussed in various sections of this thesis (see, for example, sections **5.4.3.1**, **5.4.5**, **5.5.2.1** and **5.5.5**). Bazerman (2004) also expresses this form of journalistic manoeuvring by contending that 'the reporters use the voices the people and groups they report on to tell their story as much as a novelist uses characters or a ventriloquist uses dummies.' This method of journalistic evaluation, Sheghezzi (2007) describes as 'intertextuality'. 'Intertextuality', in this regard is understood to be the manner in which reporters attempt to detach themselves from what is being said by adopting someone's words to say what they intend to say. Sheghezzi (2007) contends that this form of intertextuality 'constitutes a powerful tool at [the] reporters' disposal to suit their own purposes and to make texts more persuasive'. In the process, this can 'lead readers towards a biased interpretation of the facts'

The authorial voice also assumes an attitudinal position that negatively evaluates ZANU PF as a political party by expressing the concern that the political party is insincere to the goals of completing the crafting of the constitution, and is instead motivated by selfish political ambitions. ZANU PF is evaluated as **'demanding far reaching changes'** (039) to the draft constitution in order to intentionally derail the constitution making programme. Evaluations expressed through the authorial voice that reinforce this attitudinal position can be found in expressions such as **'...is pushing to rewrite certain clauses to ensure presidential powers remain largely intact'** (014 – 016). The use made of the JUDGEMENT/APPRECIATION resource **'force'** in evaluations such as **'trying to force'** (006), **'want to force'** (046) and **'pushing for the rejection'** as judgement evaluations of the actions of ZANU PF, and which are all expressed through the authorial voice reinforce this established authorial ideologically evaluative position.

Further negative evaluations of ZANU PF, occurring as authorial inscriptions and tokens as well as attributed inscriptions and tokens, are also made use of in the news report. The reporter voice expresses negative evaluations that portray ZANU PF as a political party riddled with internal factionalisms, which further manifests itself with rifts in the assumption, by the political party, of a position on the draft constitution. The authorial voice's expressions of APPRECIATION evaluative formulations such as **'rival factions'** (078), **'hardliners'** (080 and 084), **'fissures'** (121) and **'divisions'** (133 and 151) to describe internal relations within ZANU PF further signal the authorial voice's attitudinal positioning towards the political party.

This position is further endorsed by evaluations expressed through tokenised invocations that suggest differences of opinion between members of ZANU PF. Such tokens expressed in the formulations **'[t]he politburo met on Wednesday for the third time in two weeks for a total more than 24 hours to discuss the draft constitution'** (067 – 069) and **'there was also heated debate since last week'** (053 – 054) express images of serious and longstanding disagreements and rifts within the political party, especially so considering that ZANU PF's highest decision making body, the Politiburo does not occasionally convene. The image the authorial voice sells here, which influence the reading position the reader assumes, is that something is seriously amiss in ZANU PF's house as evidenced by the marathon meetings of the Politiburo thus giving credence to authorial attitudinal evaluations that there are rifts within the political party.

In terms of the structural organisation of the news report, we observe from the satellite analysis that, the news report makes heavy use of attributed materials, which present themselves as both quoted and reported/indirect speech. The attributed materials serve largely as satellites performing the functions of *elaboration*, *contextualisation* as well as evaluation (*appraisal*) of the ideological position assumed by the authorial voice. Attributed materials also evince attitudinal evaluations and elaborations that support the authorial position. External sources in the report are used to achieve what van Dijk (1991) and Sheghezzi (2007) describe as enhancement of the credibility of the account as well as allowing the insertion of subjective interpretations and opinions. Bazerman (2004) also considers such use of external voices as useful in backgrounding, supporting or contrasting arguments.

#### 6.5.4. *Kwayedza* (08 Kurume/March, 2012)

	APPRAISAL ANALYSIS	ENGLISH TRANSLATION	ORBITAL STRUCTURE ANALYSIS
001	<b>Tapedza basa rekunyora bumbiro: Copac</b> <i>neMunyori weKwayedza</i>	<b>We have finished writing the constitution: Copac</b> <i>Kwayedza Reporter</i>	<b>Nucleus: Headline</b> (Attributed announcement that constitution draft is complete)
005  010	GWARO rekutanga rinotarisirwa kuzove bumbiro idzva remutemo rakapera kunyorwa svondo rino uye rave kuzoongororwa nevakuru vari kutungamirira chirongwa ichi.	The first draft of the proposed new constitution was finalised this week and is currently awaiting scrutiny by the constitutional management committee spearheading the programme.	<b>Nucleus: Lead (Elaboration)</b> (Restatement of the announcement made by the headline that draft constitution is complete)
015  020	Vachitaura svondo rino, Cde Munyaradzi Paul Mangwana, avo vanove mumwe wemasachigaro eCopac iyo iri kuita basa iri vakamirira Zanu-PF, vakati <ack> basa rekuunganidza zvakataurwa nevanhu rapera uye chasara kuti richiongororwa nevakuru vavo.	One of the co-chairpersons in the management committee representing ZANU PF, Cde Munyaradzi Paul Mangwana this week said <ack> the compilation of data captured in the outreach programme had been finalised and is now awaiting scrutiny by their leaders.	<b>Satellite 1: Elaboration</b> (Restatement of the statement of headline and lead)
	Cde Mangwana vakati	Cde Mangwana said	<b>Satellite 2: Appraisal</b>

025	<ack> <u>vane idi [1<sup>st</sup> af]</u> rekuti gwaro iri, iro rine zvikamu 18, richatambirwa nevanhu sezvo <u>rakazara</u> <u>nhunha dzakataurwa</u> <u>neruzhinji dzavangade</u> 030 <u>mubumbiro idzva [ap].</u>	<ack> he is <u>confident [1<sup>st</sup></u> af] that the draft with 18 sections will be accepted by the people since it <u>reflects the views</u> <u>expressed by the majority</u> <u>in the outreach</u> <u>programme [ap].</u>	(Evaluation of the contents of the draft constitution and further specifications of statement of the headline and lead)
035	“Basa iri rakapera pakutanga kwesvondo rino zvekuti pari zvino chasara kuisa misoro pamwe chete tipepete zviripo tozopa vakuru vedu gwaro iri, rozoshambadzwa mushure mezvo kuvanhu vese,” 040 <ack> Cde Mangwana vakadaro.	“We completed this task this week and now what remains is for us to brainstorm and edit the document submit it to our leaders, and thereafter it will be published for public view” <ack> said Cde Mangwana.	<b>Satellite 3: Elaboration</b> (Restatement/specification of the statement of headline and lead – completion of draft constitution)
045	Vakati <ack> <u>chero zvazvo</u> <u>vakatadza kubata nguva</u> <u>yaive yakatarwa yekuti</u> <u>vaite basa iri, vari kufara</u> <u>[1<sup>st</sup> af] kuti vakakwanisa</u> <u>kuzadzikisa zvavaive vanzi</u> <u>vaite.</u>	He said <ack> <u>despite the</u> <u>constitution making</u> <u>process running behind</u> <u>schedule he is happy [1<sup>st</sup></u> <u>af] that the committee had</u> <u>fulfilled its mandate.</u>	<b>Satellite 4:</b> <b>Contextualisation</b> (Contextual background to the completion of draft constitution)
050	<ack> “Hongu takanonoka hedu kupedza asi <u>ndiri</u> <u>kufara [1<sup>st</sup> af] kuti</u> <u>takwanisa kuita basa iri</u> <u>mushure mekunge taendesa</u> <u>gwaro iri kuvakuru vedu</u> <u>vanhu vachaona kuti</u> 055 <u>zvimwe zvaitaurwa</u> <u>nevamwe vanhu</u> <u>vachitishora zvaisave</u> <u>zvechokwadi.[ap/j]</u>	<ack> “Yes we are behind schedule but <u>I am happy</u> <u>[1<sup>st</sup> af] that we have</u> <u>managed to compile the</u> <u>draft constitution. After</u> <u>we submit the document</u> <u>to our leaders the people</u> <u>will see that what most of</u> <u>our critics were saying</u> <u>was not true [ap/j].</u>	<b>Satellite 5: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation/appraisal and contextualisation of the draft constitution making process)
060	“Isu gwaro iri rine zvatakaurwa nevanhu chete kwete zvaive zvotaurwa izvi, [ap]” <ack> Cde Mangwana vakadaro.	“This draft contains only <u>what the people said and</u> <u>nothing else like our</u> <u>critics were saying”</u> <ack> Cde Mangwana said.	<b>Satellite 6: Appraisal/ Elaboration</b> (Appraisal/evaluation and specification of the draft constitution and the prior context)
065	Vakati <ack> <u>vakuru vavo</u> <u>ndivo vane masimba [j]</u>	He said <ack> <u>their</u> <u>leaders are the ones with</u>	<b>Satellite 7:</b> <b>Intertextuality</b>

	ekubvisa kana kuvedzera zvimwe mubumbiro iri mushure mekunge variongorora.	<i>the powers</i> [j] to add or subtract anything in the draft constitution after scrutinising it.	(Extratextual information/specification of aspects of headline and lead)
070 075	Mushure mekunge gwaro iri raongororwa nekushambadzwa, <ack> vakadaro Cde Mangwana, <ack> pachazoitwa musangano wevanhu vese nemapoka akasiyana ane chekuita nezvekunyorwa kwebumbiro iri.	After the document has been scrutinised and made public, <ack> said Cde Mangwana, a new constitution making stakeholders meeting will be convened	<b>Satellite 8: Cause and effect</b> (States purpose and/or consequences of draft constitution completion)
080 085	“Pachazoitwa musangano wemunhu wese wekuongorora gwaro rinenge rabuda uye mazuva achaitwa musangano uyu achaziviswa nevakuru vedu sezvo isu pedu takabata tikapedza tave kungoendesa basa kumberi chete,” <ack> Cde Mangwana vakadaro.	“There shall be a stakeholders meeting which will also scrutinise the draft. Dates for this stakeholders meeting will be announced by our leaders. We the management committee have finished our mandate” <ack> Cde Mangwana said.	<b>Satellite 8: Cause and effect</b> (States the purpose and/or consequences of completion of the draft constitution)
090 095	VaEdward Mkhosi, avo vanove mumwe wemasachigaro eCopac vakamirira eMDC, vakati <ack> <i>vari kufara</i> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] kuti basa rekunyorwa kwebumbiro razopera mushure mekukakavadzana nemhere-mhere pakati pemapoka [j].	MDC’s co-chairperson to the management committee, Mr Edward Mkhosi also said <ack> <i>he is happy</i> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] the draft constitution has at last been finalised after a series of <b>arguments and disagreements between the political parties</b> [j].	<b>Satellite 9: Appraisal</b> (Evaluation of the contents of draft constitution and further specifications statement of the headline and lead)
100 105	“Basa rakafamba zvakanaka [ap/j] chero zvazvo paive nekusawirirana mune dzimwe nguva asi izvi zvinoratidza kuti vanhu vane pfungwa dzakasiyana nemaonero akasiyana izvo	“The drafting of the constitution <i>went well</i> [ap/j] <i>even though there were disagreements at some instances. This shows that people have different views which is an important thing in</i>	<b>Satellite 10: Appraisal</b> (Further evaluation of the contents of draft constitution and further specifications statement of the headline and lead)

110	<u>zv</u> <u>akakosha</u> <u>mukunyorwa</u> <u>kwebumbiro</u> <u>sezvo</u> <u>richitarisa</u> <u>zvido</u> <u>zvevanhu</u> <u>vose</u> [ap/j].	<u>writing a constitution</u> <u>since the process respects</u> <u>the views and opinions of</u> <u>everyone</u> [ap/j].	
115	<u>“N</u> <u>dinofunga</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] <u>vanhu</u> <u>vachaona</u> <u>kuti</u> <u>isu</u> <u>takaita</u> <u>basa</u> <u>ravaida</u> <u>ivo</u> <u>uye</u> <u>ndinoona</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] <u>gwaro</u> <u>iri</u> <u>richibvumiranwa</u> <u>nevanhu</u> <u>vese,</u> ” <ack> <u>vakadaro</u> <u>VaMkhosi.</u>	<u>I believe</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] <u>the</u> <u>people</u> <u>will</u> <u>see</u> <u>that</u> <u>we</u> <u>did</u> <u>what</u> <u>they</u> <u>wanted</u> <u>and</u> <u>I believe</u> [1 <sup>st</sup> af] <u>the</u> <u>document</u> <u>will</u> <u>be</u> <u>accepted</u> <u>by</u> <u>the</u> <u>people</u> ” <ack> <u>said</u> <u>Mkhosi.</u>	

#### 6.5.4.1. Appraisal and satellite structure analysis

The news report presents little evidence of subjective authorial evaluations. It largely serves as an ‘announcement’ that COPAC and the constitution management committee had completed their mandated task of drafting a draft constitution. As such, the major concerns of the news report unfold through attributed voices, specifically those of the two prominent members of the constitutional commission (COPAC). It is through these external voices that evaluations of the constitution and the constitutional process are expressed through both inscriptions as well as tokenised invocations. The major proposition signalled by the news report is that the programme was a resounding success and that the members of the committee are content with the outcome of their mandate. In essence, the news report expresses the position that the constitution reflects the concerns and views of the general public and therefore had lived up to its mandate – the creation of a people driven supreme law.

The news report gives evidence of the use of attributed AFFECT resources to signal satisfaction with the outcome of the constitution making programme, thus in the process making the impressions of a resounding success of the enterprise. AFFECT resources are attributed to two of the co-chairpersons of COPAC (Mangwana from ZANU PF and Mkhosi from MDC-N) who express attributed inscribed positive evaluations of the process by expressing confidence and happiness towards the process and outcome of the programme. The AFFECT resource of elation, ‘**kufara**’ (happiness/to be happy) attributed to Mangwana (040 and 045 – 6) and to Mkhosi (092) as personal expressions of feeling towards the process signal such an evaluation. This position is further reinforced by expressions of feelings of confidence (AFFECT) expressed by the two co-chairpersons, that the constitution reflects the concerns of the masses and thus will sail through all scrutiny to become the supreme law of

the country. Such sentiments are expressed by Mangwana in line (022) and by Mkhosi in lines (111 and 114).

The news report also takes an evaluative position that positively appraises the constitutional draft as reflecting the views of the majority as collected during the outreach programme. Such evaluations are largely framed as tokenised invocations and also occur predominantly as attributed material. The tokens are exemplified by extracts from which express attributed inscribed affectual evaluations that the constitution reflects the concerns of the majority: ‘**rakazara nhunha dzakataurwa neruzhinji dzavangade mubumbiro idzva**’ (it reflects the views expressed by the majority in the outreach programme) (027 – 030), ‘**vanhu vachaona kuti zvimwe zvaitaurwa nevamwe vanhu vachitishora zvaisave zvechokwadi**’ (the people will see that what most of our critics were saying was not true) (054 – 058), ‘**gwaro iri rine zvakataurwa nevanhu chete kwete zvaive zvotaurwa izvi**’ (This draft contains only what the people said and nothing else like what our critics were saying) (059 – 061) and ‘**Ndinofunga vanhu vachaona kuti isu takaita basa ravaida ivo uye ndinoona gwaro iri richibvumiranwa nevanhu vese**’, (I believe the people will see that we did what they wanted us to do and I also believe the document will be accepted by the people) (111 – 116).

Tokens are similarly used evaluatively to downplay the political tensions that characterised the constitution making programme. Whereas for example the news reports analysed above in sections 6.4.2.1 and 6.4.3.1 locate the authorial voice subjectively through negative evaluations of the political relations (and/or tensions and animosity) that characterised the constitutional process, the current report makes use of tokenised invocations to positively evaluate these ‘disagreements’. The differences are expressed as a positive thing, evaluated as encouraging the proliferation of a diversity of opinions and ideas, and in the process, as healthy for a ‘people driven constitution’. Exemplification of such is illustrated by lines (099 – 110):

“Basa *rakafamba zvakanaka* [ap/j] *chero zvazvo paive nekusawirirana mune dzimwe nguva asi izvi zvinoratidza kuti vanhu vane pfungwa dzakasiyana nemaonero akasiyana izvo zvakakosha mukunyorwa kwebumbiro sezvo richitarisa zvido zvevanhu vose* [ap/j].

“The drafting of the constitution *went well* [ap/j] *even though there were disagreements at some instances. This shows that people have different views*

*which is an important thing in writing a constitution since the process respects the views and opinions of everyone [ap/j].*

While, theoretically, we cannot argue that the attitudinal sentiments expressed through attributed materials in the news report are attributable to the authorial voice and thus authorial subjectivities, it is important to also focus on the functional role played by these attributed materials (both quotations and indirect speech) in news reports. Attributed materials are a form of discursual manoeuvring through which news reporters manage to tactfully detach themselves from the expressions of the external voice. However, quotations are also a mode of expression through which reporters are able to adopt someone else's words and use them to express their own attitudinal positionings. This is a notion also discussed and expressed by Jullian (2011) as 'appraising through the words of others', Seghezzi (2007) as 'intertextuality' and White (1998) as 'extravocalisation'. White (1998) refers to such rhetorical and discursual manoeuvring as 'the heteroglossic use of 'extratextualised voices'.

### **6.5.5. Comparative analytic perspective**

This section constitutes a comparative analysis of news reports on the reactions to the draft constitution especially so by the political parties in the GNU as well as the general public (as captured in the news reports). As the individual analyses of the news reports indicate, the appraisal analyses conducted on the news reports exhibit evidence that the 'reporter voice' configuration is largely satisfied by *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* news reports. This view is supported by the observation that both these reports evince low probabilities of inscribed authorial attitudinal evaluations. While traits of authorial subjectivities also present themselves in the news reports, they are kept at a reasonable minimum. The few instances of authorial evaluations in the news reports occur as tokenised invocations. Evaluations are strategically expressed through external voices. In this regard, the propositions and concerns of the news reports, the negative evaluations of the constitution and the constitutional process in *The Herald* and the affectual positive evaluations of the constitution and the constitution making programme in *Kwayedza*, are expressed and unfold through attributed expressions and evaluations.

On the other hand, the news reports in the private-owned publications, *Zimbabwe Independent* and *Newsday* exhibit very little evidence of refrain from the expression of embedded overt authorial subjective evaluations. They explicitly establish inscribed authorial positions in the leads and headlines of the news reports, evaluations which are also

perpetuated throughout the news reports. The news reports in contradistinction to the government-owned publication exhibit a high proliferation of evaluative authorial inscriptions and thus in the process flout the dictates of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. The following segments, extracts containing the headlines and leads from the news reports exemplify such a position:

(a) *Newsday*

**Zanu PF deadlocked** [j/ap]

The Zanu PF politburo on Wednesday **again failed** [j] to come up with a position on the draft constitution amid indications **hawks** [j] in the party have stepped up their fight to have the process abandoned.

(b) *Zimbabwe Independent*

**Battle** [ap] **over new draft ZANU PF, MDC, MDC-T looms** [ap/j]

**BATTLE LINES are drawn** [ap/j] over the latest Copac draft constitution, with Zanu PF trying to **force** [j] wholesale amendments to the document while the two MDC parties endorsed it without changes.

Without dwelling so much on the subjective propositions expressed by the headlines and leads, a further analysis of the ways in which these headlines and leads of the two news stories position the authorial voice evaluatively is in order. The propositions made through the above extracts are further reinforced through various satellites in the news reports, satellites which also exude high proliferations of authorial inscriptions of the same.

The ways in which quotations and attributions are made use of in the various news reports under discussion begs more attention in this analysis. The rhetorical structure of the news reports under discussion, as is with the larger body of news reports analysed in this study, evinces an arrangement through which authorial evaluative expressions are minimised by the use of a number of strategic impersonalisations. These strategic impersonalisations are largely manifest in the manner in which news reports are made to unfold or told/narrated through the words of external voices. Through this form of strategic manoeuvring, the authorial voice avoids expressing overt subjective evaluations. Evaluative expressions are thus, made through the attributed material, in the processes maintaining overt authorial evaluations at a bare minimum. This form of rhetorical structuring of news reports is predominantly characteristic of state-owned publications, in this case, *The Herald* and *Kwayedza* as evinced by the news

reports under analysis. For example, we observe that almost the whole of the *Kwayedza* news report save for the opening paragraph, unfolds as attributed material. This includes even the headline, which is also occurring as attributed material. As such, the major concerns of the report, the castigation of the constitutional process as side-lining named minority groups and the negative evaluations of the process emanating therefrom, are expressed through material attributed to external voices.

Pursuant to the observation made in Chapter 1 regards the *Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa*, in which indications were made that, unlike the daily and weekly English newspapers under study which are heavily politicised, there is little evidence of notable political/politicised bias in the *Kwayedza* news reports. Vernacular (Shona and Ndebele) newspapers largely dwell on the reporting of developmental issues and rarely dwell on political issues. Because of this, one would observe a strategic refrain from highly attitudinally evaluative language in the news reports, even if it is occurring as attributed material. There are observed authorial attempts to steer away from politically motivated ideological biases. As such, the structural arrangement of materials in the news reports, the above included, evince a host of strategic manoeuvrings aimed at eliminating instances of observable attitudinal evaluations, both authorial and attributed, but especially so, authorial. As such, the news reports exhibit a low proliferation of attitudinal expressions. Even though attributed voices express evaluations, they are largely restricted to resources of AFFECT and oftentimes APPRECIATION. Rarely do we encounter JUDGEMENT resources and as such very little, if any, present themselves in the news reports as politically inclined subjective evaluations, both authorial and/or attributed.

## 6.6. Summary

The chapter analysed and discussed the evaluative nature of the authorial voice in Zimbabwean news reports on one of the most politically contested/‘controversial’ issues in Zimbabwe’s contemporary political dispensation, the new constitution making programme. The programme, as has been argued in the chapter’s introduction (section 5.1), is a politically contested issue in this political dispensation characterised by a government of national unity (GNU). The process has been characterised by political ‘wars’ and ‘contestations’ evinced by blame games and contestations with regards to the responsibilities for derailing the constitutional programme, the technical handling of the constitutional programmes as well as the contents of the draft constitution. At the time of writing, political parties in Zimbabwe were literary still at each other political throats over the draft constitution culminating from

ZANU PF decisions to have the draft constitution revised. The news reports on these issues analysed in the chapter exhibit a trend of polarity along political ideological lines – a situation arising from the political differences that characterise the current political administration of the country.

It is also an observation made by this chapter that the structure of the ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages follow a similar pattern, largely characterised by a sequential arrangement of evaluative yet attributed linguistic resources predominantly occurring as quoted materials. These are mainly employed to serve as evaluative expressions, functioning as *elaboration*, *contextualisation* as well as *appraisal* satellite to and/or for the propositions made through the authorial voice. The news reports thus evince a structural arrangement that largely protects the authorial voice by making evaluations through external voices. A very important notion in the appraisal analyses done for news stories in Zimbabwean newspapers, as has been consistently and constantly expressed, is the notion of ‘appraising through the words of others’ (Jullian, 2011). This further explains why the larger part of evaluative resources, both inscriptions and invocations, are expressed through these external voices. The structural arrangement of the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers would thus at best be described as a sequential arrangement of quoted material. One of the most notable observations, as observed in section 5.7, is that there seems to be a trend cutting across all the publications in which the headline and lead ‘do not merely function as synopses for the major preoccupations of the news reports but are used to establish an evaluative position from which news angles and what is considered to be news worthy is selected’. Even a cursory glance at such reports however will reveal a trend in which such attributed materials serve as reinforcements and/or elucidations of/to the positions established by the authorial voice in both the headlines and the leads of the bulk of the news reports.

## CHAPTER 7

### Summary and Conclusion

#### 7.1. Introduction

This chapter is the conclusion of the study and thus summates the research undertaken in the study. The chapter is therefore concerned with the summation of the research in terms of the major findings and how the goals and objectives of the research have been achieved. It presents a summary of the major research findings and conclusions drawn from the findings. The chapter focuses on the contributions made by the study to (a) the field of media, specifically printed media discourse analysis and the study of media objectivity/neutrality (b) the broader understanding of the use of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration in analysing the ‘strategic impersonalisations’ and manoeuvring in ‘hard’ news reporting, for the purposes of attaining ‘neutrality’ (c) to the fields of Genre Studies and Language for Specific Purposes (LSP) – especially the teaching of journalistic discourse (d) the broader theorisation of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration in news reports occurring outside the English broadsheet reporting culture. The chapter begins with a comparative summation of the cognitive and generic structure of ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele. The summary further discusses how the ‘reporter voice’ operates across news reports in the three languages. The summary is then followed by a discussion of the contributions of this study. Finally, based on the analysis and scope of the thesis, as well the findings of the research, the chapter provides recommendations/suggestions for further research.

#### 7.2. Main Findings

##### 7.2.1. ‘Reporter voice’ and ‘objectivity’ in ‘controversial’ ‘hard news’ reports

One of the main objectives of this dissertation was to analyse the occurrence of authorial subjectivities in ‘controversial’ ‘hard news’ reports in English, Shona and Ndebele through analysing the occurrence of authorial evaluative language. An examination of the frequency of occurrence of appraisal values (evaluative resources) in the news reports exhibits significant differences between the languages as well as along the lines of ownership patterns. One central observation concerns the occurrence of authorial evaluations (authorial AFFECT, JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION) and of authorial observed evaluations (attributed AFFECT, JUDGEMENT and APPRECIATION). While there is evidence of a high proliferation of authorial

evaluations in news reports from the privately-owned newspapers (*Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent*), there is evidence of a moderate use of evaluations expressed from the journalistic voice in the English government-owned newspaper (*The Herald*) and a very low frequency of authorial evaluations in the *Kwayedza* news reports (a vernacular government-owned newspaper – Shona).

The ideological positions expressed by the news reports from both the public-owned (government-owned) publications (*The Herald*, *Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa*) and by the privately-owned newspapers (*Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent*) exhibit the perpetuation of a media polarity arising from established political inclinations. The analyses of the news reports give evidence of ideologically subjective stances, evinced through the observed instances of both authorial evaluations (inscriptions and tokens) and attributed evaluations (inscriptions and tokens). Evidently, the research has identified that the news reports in the *Kwayedza* contain very little evaluative language. The news reports are presented as largely unfolding from the position of external voices. Through this kind of formulation, the news reports are able to ‘rid’ themselves of authorial subjective material. However, by observing the general framing of the news reports, we can make a claim that it is the authorial voice that in fact assumes a stance (Gales, 2010) and elects the medium of ‘intertextuality’ (Seghezzi, 2007) to ‘appraise through the words of others’ (Jullian, 2011).

In terms of the use of evaluative language, a further similarity between the newspapers – a similarity that cuts across the linguistic (English, Shona and Ndebele) as well the newspaper ownership divides – is the heavy use made of attribution. As argued in various sections analysing the rhetorical and cognitive structures of the news reports in most Zimbabwean newspapers substantially differ from their English equivalents. A high reliance on attributed material is evidenced. As such, the bulk of instances of the use of evaluative language are, in the larger parts of the news reports, expressed through attributed material. However, further analyses would reveal that such attributions rhetorically function as indirect evaluations of the authorial voice. The reasons for drawing such a conclusion is that, in the bulk of the news reports, headlines and leads are not merely used as synopses of the propositions of the news reports, but are embedded with highly attitudinal meanings and thus function as evaluative resources. The attributed materials, then function as evaluations that endorse or elaborate on the ideological position already established through the authorial voice in the headline and the lead.

By attributing evaluative material to external sources, journalists (and news reports) attempt to present an aura of ‘neutrality’ and/or ‘objectivity’. Attributed evaluative material signal intentions, on the part of the authorial voice, to as much as possible dispassionately report news. White (1998) argues in light of this observation that, attribution is one of the major strategies journalists employ in their news stories for impersonalisation. This however does not always present as such. In the news reports from Zimbabwean newspapers under study, attributed evaluations are used as some form of strategic manoeuvring through which the ideological positions of the authorial voice (largely of a political nature, especially so with regards to the view that the bulk of the news reports on the ‘controversial’ issues in Zimbabwe are largely political), are appraised. Attributed highly evaluative external voices, occurring as both direct and indirect quotations, are used as what Seghezzi (2007) refers to as ‘intertextualisation’. This occurs when quotations (direct and indirect – reported speech) are used for the purposes of (a) being newsworthy in their own right (b) making the news story more lively and (c) allowing the insertion of subjective interpretations and opinions.

Jullian’s (2011) discussion on the evaluative use of attributed material also reinforces the conclusion I draw from examining the rhetorical and cognitive structures of the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers across languages. As indicated in section 6.3.5, there is an extensive reliance on quoted/attributed materials in Zimbabwean newspapers’ news reports. In the news reports, the larger parts of the news reports, often including the details, circumstances and consequences of the event or issue being reported, are expressed through attributed material. In fact, the more apt description of the news reports in terms of the use of quotations is that, the news reports present themselves as sequential arrangements of quotations, some for and occasionally some against the propositions of the news reports as expressed through the headline and lead.

This structural arrangement allows for their proliferation as authorial evaluations through strategic impersonalisation. Jullian (2011) identifies this strategy as ‘appraising through someone’s words’ and describes how attributions are not merely evaluation outlets for source only, but indirect means of appraisal for the journalists (authorial voice) as well – who support and reinforce the points they want to express through these voices. In this way, attributed evaluations help the journalistic voice imprint their personal views and thus ultimately serve an ideological function.

Sinclair (1986) cited in Jullian (2011) provides the basis of the conclusion drawn here with regards to the relationship between attributed evaluations and the authorial voice by maintaining that, ‘through attribution, the writer voices someone else’s views, theories or beliefs, placing the responsibility for these propositions on their averrer. This choice has enormous rhetorical implications, since when the writer chooses to present a proposition as attributed s/he detaches him/herself from the content and signals explicitly that it derives from a source. The skilled exploitation of the interplay between averral and attribution allows the writer to construct a stance by transferring the role of the averrer. Thus, authors can make convenient use of attribution by quoting heavily evaluative materials while delegating their accountability to someone else. Despite some cases of indeterminacy, the averral/attribution distinction still proves useful for the purposes of the study of the interplay between voices.’ (Jullian 2011: 768).

In summary, the authorial voice in most of the news reports from the Zimbabwean newspapers analysed here exhibits evidence of authorial ideological positioning and thus, do not operate in reporter voice. They are largely expressive of authorial ideological opinion. With regards to the differences between the newspapers in terms of sources of material largely occurring as attributed evaluative resources, the differences as argued in the analyses of individual texts can be seen to be rooted in the political system in which the newspapers operate. The media polarity along political grounds characterising the media environment in Zimbabwe (see, for example, the discussion in section 3.6) has created a context in which journalists and news media act as what Vo (2011) refers to as ‘information fair traders’, whose role is to convey different views on the subject matter (Martin and White, 2005). As expressed earlier in chapters 4, 5 and 6, the current system of government in Zimbabwe is characterised by a Government of National Unity (GNU) comprised of three political parties – ZANU PF, MDC-T and MDC-N. In this respect, the public-owned newspapers act as the mouthpieces of the former ruling party, ZANU PF while the private-owned newspapers express the ideological positions of the former opposition parties, largely the MDC-T.

### **7.2.2. The generic structure of ‘hard news’ reports**

The study identified and addressed questions with regards to the architecture of the ‘hard news’ report in Zimbabwean newspapers in English and Shona (and Ndebele). On a basic level, the ‘hard news’ reports in Zimbabwean newspapers were found to be utilising a cognitive and rhetorical structure similar to that employed in English general ‘hard news’

reports as discussed by Thomson, White and Kitley (2008) and Thomson and White (2008). In accordance with this view, the 'hard news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers under study were largely found to be generally organised around the orbital structure as identified and discussed by Iedema, Feez and White (1994), White (1997, 1998) and White and Thomson (2008).

While to a larger extent the news reports indeed reflect the structural arrangement concomitant to the orbital structure, differences can be observed with respect to a variety of issues. Firstly, in the Shona and Ndebele newspapers (*Kwayedza* and *Umthunywa* respectively), headlines and leads are usually not evaluative as compared to the English newspapers, especially the privately-owned publications (*Newsday* and *Zimbabwe Independent*) in which they are. The occurrence of such appraised headlines and leads on the other hand occurs with moderate frequency in the state-owned *The Herald*. Often, the propositions made in the nuclei of the news reports are also framed in attribution. There is thus, a general trend of overreliance on external voices especially as appraisal satellites, which signals a high use of ENGAGEMENT resources as well as intertextualisation.

While, as expressed above, the news reports in the Zimbabwean newspapers under study generally give evidence of a cognitive and rhetorical structure that is orbitally organised, the research also observed that the majority of the news reports analysed are structured in quite a different manner. Some of the satellites in the news reports do not specify the nucleus (headline and lead) as required by the 'orbital structure'. Instead, they introduce completely new information, which despite possibilities of arguing for their 'indirect relevance', actually establishes new focal points as the news reports unfold. In theorising this, the current study, as the individual analyses of the news reports would show, has labelled such satellites as '*Intertextualisation*'. The justification for labelling such satellites as such is drawn from observing that these satellites do not specify the nuclei of the news reports but instead provide some form of 'extratextualisation' through which, information without a direct affinity to the propositions of the nucleus is, relayed.

By employing such a form of structural arrangement, news reports exhibiting this structure 'are therefore seen to be organised around multiple nuclei rather than a single nucleus' (Vo, 2011). This forces one to reconsider/rethink the universality of the theorisation of the structure of 'hard news' reports within the 'orbital structure'. These theoretical concerns arise from observing this deviation from the orbital textuality of 'hard news' as expressed by White

(1998) in which White argues that ‘hard news’ reports are ‘organised according to the principle of textuality by which a textually dominant nucleus consisting of a headline plus lead is specified and elaborated by a set of dependent satellites’. In fact, most instances in which such ‘extratextualisation’ occurs, they do so towards the end of the news report. While not directly specifying the nuclei, such intertextualisations, which often appear as signalling new texts are used as backgrounding information, especially contextualising the history in which events and issues being reported draw their contexts from. Some satellites and phrases though, as is with observations expressed by Vo (2011), are observed as not relating ‘back to the headline and lead, but introducing a new theme(s)’. Such a kind of structural arrangement of material presents evidence of loosely organised texts and which is generally the case with the typical ‘hard news’ report as expressed by White (1994), White (1997, 1998) and White and Thomson (2008).

Finally, unlike the general patterning of the orbital structure news report in which the final satellites supposedly function as ‘Wrap Up’, this is not the case with the news reports from the Zimbabwean newspapers under study. Zimbabwean newspapers’ news reports analysed in this research evince a patterning through which instead of ‘wrapping up’ the final satellites of the news reports often than not and in an overwhelming number of cases act as contextualisations. They, as discussed above, provide extratextual information that while not necessarily specifying the nuclei and their propositions, contextualises them ‘in a broader context where they are presented spatially and temporarily along with other events’ (Vo, 2011). The discussed characteristics of the generic and cognitive structure of the ‘hard news’ report in Zimbabwean newspapers which evinces some deviations from the orbital structural arrangement and in which there is an overreliance on attributed material (through which the propositions of the news reports and the evaluations of these propositions are expressed) present opportunities to rethink the theorisation of what should constitute a ‘hard news’ report. It also affords one an opportunity to renegotiate the universality of the theorisations as regards to the structure of ‘hard news’ reports as well as the possibilities of sincerely attaining journalistic ‘neutrality’ and/or ‘objectivity’.

### **7.3. Contributions of the study**

#### **7.3.1. Contribution to the field of discourse analysis and genre analysis in Zimbabwe**

The contributions that the study makes relate to two main areas in the research in news genres, specifically the researches into the generic structures of ‘hard news’ reports (and news

reports in general) as well as the notion of ‘reporter/journalistic voice’ as expressed/embedded in such news reports. As discussed in section 3.6, the study of news genres and news discourse in Zimbabwean newspapers has largely been confined to content analysis. Most of these studies have thus tended to be largely framed as ‘watch dog’ analyses of media representation patterns. While the notion of ‘voices’ has often been incorporated in some of these studies, it has not been fully explored in terms of how it accounts for media intertextuality as well as to reveal the dialectic and dialogic nature of media discourse. Moreso little, if any, research of such magnitude has been conducted on Zimbabwe newspaper reports in vernacular/local language(s) newspapers. Drawing from SFL, this study represents a new approach for media genre analysis in Zimbabwean newspapers. Furthermore the study also offers exemplification of the applicability of the Appraisal theoretic framework to the analysis of African language newspapers, especially those in Zimbabwean languages.

As a cross-linguistic contrastive genre study, the study explored how Zimbabwean English, Shona and Ndebele writers discursively construct newspaper ‘hard news’ reports. The study, which was two thronged, explored the ‘objectivity’ ideal in Zimbabwean newspapers as well as the cognitive/generic organisation (textual, structural and contextual) of ‘hard news’ reports in the three languages (English, Shona and Ndebele). It examined the textual organisational patterns, which included examining the generic and rhetorical structures that occurred in the texts, as well as an appraisal analysis of the texts inorder to establish instances in which the authorial voice, through the use of evaluative resources, manifests itself subjectively/attitudinally. Lastly, the study analysed the intertextual features of the ‘hard news’ texts, examining how the writers draw on outside sources to construct their own texts as well as appraisal outlets for their own ideological convictions. To the knowledge of this researcher few, if any, studies have attempted to or have been able to, in a rigorous way, construct and provide such a comparative account of the ‘hard news’ genre across these three languages.

### **7.3.2. Contributions to the understanding of the use of the ‘reporter voice’ in the study and analysis of media genres across languages**

The study, as discussed above in section 7.2.1, established that the news reports in Zimbabwean newspapers in English, Shona and Ndebele largely operate within the theoretical confines of the ‘reporter voice’ configuration. Of course, the research has also established that to some extent there are substantial disregards for the journalistic conventions

specified by the configuration, instances in which there is, in given news reports, a proliferation of extensive authorial evaluative resources. The specifications aligned to the deviations from the attempts at 'objectivity'/'neutrality' have been expressed in this study to be largely rooted in newspaper ownership patterns in the country (in which newspapers are owned and controlled by the government of the one hand and private players on the other) as well as the political system currently in place in Zimbabwe (characterised by a Government of National Unity incorporating leaders from the three main political parties in the country).

The use of the reporter voice in Zimbabwean newspapers under study evinces a conviction by the journalists to write in as much as 'objective' and as 'neutral' a manner possible. However, it has been established in this study that journalists, in attempting to remain as impartial as possible refrain from the direct expression of ideology and opinion and instead, tend to prefer a seemingly overreliance on quotations (occurring as both quoted material as well as reported speech). Through attribution of evaluative material, the journalists have managed to employ a form of strategic manoeuvring through which their subjectivities become invisible, and thus news reports become 'impersonal'. Thus, as the research established, the most common form of strategic impersonalisation in the news reports is attribution. This is in line with Vo's (2011) observation that, 'by attributing material to external sources, [journalists] want to indicate that it is the words, beliefs and points of view of other people rather than themselves.' In doing this, they can thus be seen to be objective as required in journalistic practice and in line with the dictates of the 'objectivity' ideal as theorised from various linguistic as well as journalistic theories on 'hard news' reporting and the structure of the 'hard news' texts.

The impersonalised style of writing discussed above has been seen to be generally characteristic of news reporting in all the newspapers under study. However, as Jullian (2011) argues, because in these news reports 'external voices 'are allowed' to speak their minds much more loudly than journalists, the way in which authors may convey their views is through the choice of the informants they bring into the text and the information they choose to include or exclude. Such choices carry strong ideological implications, since the mere inclusion of a particular source is the first signal of subjectivity; it reflects who the reporter finds worth interviewing and what s/he finds relevant and reportable in the communicative event. Comments and judgements made through such sources cannot be attributed to the author him/herself, but they certainly tint the story in such a way that readers get the desired

view, without strongly committing the journalist to the content and perspectives conveyed by others.’

#### **7.4. Suggestions and directions for further research**

The study, focused on the analysis of ‘hard news’ reporting on ‘controversial’ issues in Zimbabwean newspapers, has produced significant findings in terms of the textuality (cognitive and rhetorical structure), journalistic voice and ideology of ‘hard news’ reports cross-linguistically. In the course of the research and its analyses, several issues that require further exploration have been identified. Firstly, this study focused specifically on the notion of the ‘reporter voice’ in ‘controversial’ news. This has the limiting factor in that such ‘controversial’ news reports were largely confined to political events and issues. The study and analysis of the ‘voices’ of news should be expanded to consider other ‘not so contentious’ and non-political issues such as socio-economic, legal, social and economic news reports in Zimbabwe.

Secondly, the study of the ‘voices’ of news should also focus more specifically on vernacular newspapers. The problem encountered in this study regards this is the focus, content and context of reporting in vernacular newspapers in Zimbabwe. Vernacular newspapers (Shona and Ndebele) are highly regionalised in the country and as such largely deal with the reporting of localised/regionalised news, which often than not, are largely development oriented. Where political issues are reported in these newspapers, they are mostly confined to the politics of local governance and thus rarely run parallel to the news reports published in the English newspapers, both daily and weekly which, in terms of circulation and focus, are largely national in orientation. This observation culminates from the observations by this research that, it was sometimes difficult to find news reports in the vernacular newspapers which focused on similar issues or events with the English newspapers, and that could be used as comparisons to the English news reports because of their limitations in terms of content, context and focus of reporting.

Thirdly, this study focused specifically on the analysis of the ‘voices’ in only one form of journalism – the ‘hard news’ report, while the other major aspect of journalism – commentary – was not investigated. Several gaps thus exist concerning this type of journalism in Zimbabwean newspapers and in the three languages under study. Further studies focusing on the analyses, evaluation and interpretation of the cognitive/generic and rhetorical structure,

the voices operating in the subgenre of ‘commentary’ and their underlying ideologies should be interesting to pursue as well. In the words of Vo (2011), ‘the present study has completed just the first half of the journey into the exploration of [Zimbabwean] journalism. The second half is awaiting future research.’

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

Agha, A. (2007). *Language and social relations*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Allen, G. (2000). *Intertextuality*. London: Routledge.

Amer, M. M. (2009). ‘‘Telling-it-like-it-is’’: The delegitimation of the second Palestinian Intifada in Thomas Friedman's discourse’. *Discourse Society* 20, 5 – 31.

Andrejevic, M. (2008). ‘Theory review: Power, Knowledge, and Governance’. *Journalism Studies*, 9 (4), 605 – 614.

Arno, A. (2009). *Alarming Reports: Communicating Conflict in the Daily News*. Berghahn Books: New York and Oxford.

Askenhave, I. and Swales, J. (2001). ‘Genre identification and communicative purpose: A problem and a possible solution’. *Applied Linguistics*, 22(2), 195 – 213.

Austin, J. (1962). *How to do things with words*. (The William James Lectures delivered at Harvard University in 1955). Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Bakhtin, M. M. (1973). *Problems of Dostoevsky's Poetics*. Michigan: Ann Arbor.

Bakhtin, M. M. (1981). *The Dialogic Imagination* (Emerson, C. and Holquist, M., Trans.). Austin TX: University of Texas Press.

Bakhtin, M. M. (1986). *Speech Genres and Other Late Essays* (Vern W. McGee, Trans.). Austin T X: University of Texas Press.

Bawarshi, A. S. and Reiff, M. J. (2010). *Genre: An Introduction to History, Theory, Research, and Pedagogy*. West Lafayette: Indiana, Parlor Press.

Bazerman, C. (1988). *Shaping written knowledge: The genre and activity of the experimental article in science*. Madison, Wisconsin: The University of Wisconsin Press.

Bazerman, C. (1993). ‘Intertextual self-fashion: Gould and Lewontin's representation of the literature’, in Selzer, J. (ed.), *Understanding scientific prose*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

- Bazerman, C. (1997). 'The life of genre, the life in the classroom', in Bishop, W. and Ostrom, H. (eds.), *Genre and writing*. Portsmouth, NH: Boyton/Cook. 19 – 26.
- Bazerman, C. (2004). 'Intertextuality: 'How texts rely on other texts'', in Prior, C. and Bazerman, C. (eds) *What writing does and how it does: An introduction to analysing texts and textual practices*. Mahwah. New Jersey: Lawrence Erlbaum, 83 – 96.
- Bednarek, M. (2006). *Evaluation in Media Discourse: Analysis of a Newspaper Corpus*. London: Continuum.
- Bednarek, M. (2010). 'Evaluation in the news: A methodological framework for analysing evaluative language in journalism'. *Australian Journal of Communication*, 37(2), 15 – 50.
- Bhatia, V. K. (1993). *Analysing Genre: Language Use in Professional Settings*. London: Longman.
- Bhatia, V. K. (2004). *Worlds of written discourse: A genre-based view*. London: Continuum.
- Bhebhe, L. (2010), 'Constitution making process in Zimbabwe: Avenues for effective youth participation'. Unpublished paper accessed on 2 August 2012 at:  
<http://www.swradioafrica.com/Documents/CONSTITUTIONMAKINGPROCESSINZIMBABWE.pdf>
- Biber, D. (1988). *Variation across speech and writing*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Biber, D. (1990). 'Methodological issues regarding corpus-based analyses of linguistic variation'. *Literacy and Linguistic Computing*, 5, 257-269.
- Biber, D. (1995). *Dimensions of register variation: A cross-linguistic comparison*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Biber, D., Conrad, S., and Reppen, R. (1998). *Corpus linguistics: Investigating language structure and use*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Blommaert, J. (2005). *Discourse*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press
- Bowman, L. (2006). 'Reformulating "objectivity"'. *Journalism Studies*, 7 (4), 628 – 643.

Bresser, K. (1992). 'Was nun? U"ber Fernsehen, Moral und Journalisten' ['What Now? On television, morality, and journalists']. Hamburg and Zurich: Luchterhand Literaturverlag.

Brown, P. and Levinson, S. C. (1987). *Politeness: Some universals in language usage*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Burton, G. (2002). *More than meets the eye: An introduction to media studies* (3<sup>rd</sup> Edition). London: Arnold.

Caffarel, A. and Rechniewski, E. (2008). 'When a Handover is not a Handover? A case study of ideologically opposed French news stories', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds) *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 25 – 50.

Campbell, V. (2006). 'A journalistic deficit?'. *Journalism Studies*, 7 (4), 593 – 609.

Chandler, D. (1997/2000): 'An Introduction to Genre Theory' accessed on 16/03/2010, from <http://www.aber.ac.uk/media/Documents/intgenre/intgenre.html>

Chandler, D. (2005). *Intertextuality in semiotics for beginners*. Retrieved 25/07/2011, from <http://www.aber.ac.uk/media/Documents/S4B/sem09.html>

Channel, J. (2000). 'Corpus-Based Analysis of Evaluative lexis', in Hunston, S. and Thompson, G. (eds.) *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Chen, H. (2008). 'Learning in new times: writing through the "eyes of genre"', in Kell, P., Vialle, W., Konza, D. and Vogl, G. (eds), *Learning and the learner: exploring learning for new times*: University of Wollongong.

Chiumbu, S. H. (2004). 'Redefining the National Agenda: Media and Identity - Challenges of building a new Zimbabwe', in *Media Public Discourse and Political Contestation in Zimbabwe. Current African Issues 27*. Uppsala, Sweden: Nordic African Institute,

Chomsky, N. (1957). *Syntactic Structures*. MIT Press.

Chomsky, N. (2002). *Media Control: The Spectator Achievements of Propaganda* (2<sup>nd</sup> Edition). New York: Seven Stories Press.

- Christie, F. and Martin, J.R. (1997). 'Introduction', in Christie, F. and Martin, J.R. (eds) *Genre and institutions*. London: Continuum, 1 – 2.
- Clayman, S. (1988). 'Displaying Neutrality in Television News Interviews'. *Social Problems* 35(4), 474 – 92.
- Clayman, S. and Heritage, J. (2002). *The News Interview: journalists and public figures on the air*. New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Cortazzi, M. and Jin, L. (2000). 'Evaluating Evaluation in narrative', in Hunston, S. and Thompson, G. (eds), *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Courthard, M. (ed). (1994). *Advances in written text analysis*. London: Routledge.
- Cunningham, B. (2003). 'Rethinking Objectivity'. *Columbia Journalism Review*, 42 (2), 24 – 44.
- Devereux, E. (2003). *Understanding the Media*. London: Sage Publications.
- Devitt, A. J. (2004). *Writing genre*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press.
- du Bois, J. W. (2007). 'The stance triangle', in Englebretson, R. (ed.) *Stancetaking in discourse: Subjectivity, Evaluation, Interaction*. Philadelphia, PA: John Benjamins, 139-182
- Devitt, A., Reiff, M. J., & Bawarshi, A. (2003). *Scenes of writing: Strategies for composing genres*. New York: Longman/Pearson.
- Dominick, J. R. (1996). *The Dynamics of Mass Communication*. New York: McGraw-Hill Inc.
- Eggins, S. and Martin, J. R. (1997). 'Genres and registers of discourse', in van Dijk, T. (ed) *Discourse as structure and process*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications, 230 – 256.
- Eggins, S. (2005). *An Introduction to Systemic Functional Linguistics*, (2nd Edition). London: Continuum.
- Eggins, S. and Slade, D. (1997). *Analysing casual conversation*. London: Cassell.

- Ekström, M. (2007). 'Conversation analysis in journalism studies'. *Journalism Studies*, 8 (6), 964 – 973.
- Elorza, I. (2009). 'Positioning readers in newspaper discourse: A contrastive case study'. *Birkbeck Studies in Applied Linguistics* 4, 2009/10, 1 – 22.
- Fairclough, N. (1989). *Language and Power*. London: Longman.
- Fairclough, N. (1992). *Discourse and Social Change*. London: Polity Press.
- Fairclough, N. (1995). *Media Discourse*. London: Edward Arnold.
- Fairclough, N. and Wadok, R. (1997). 'Critical Discourse Analysis', in Van Dijk, T. A. (ed), *Discourse Studies: A Multidisciplinary Introduction, Vol. 2: Discourse as Social Interaction*. London: Sage Publications.
- Fetzer, A. and Lauerbach, G. (eds.). (2007). *Political Discourse in the Media: Cross-Cultural Perspectives*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Fiske, J. (1987) *Television Culture*. London: Routledge (Chapter 7: 'Intertextuality')
- Foucault, M. (1984a). 'What is an Author', in Rabinow, P. (ed), *The Foucault Reader*. New York: Pantheon. 101 – 20.
- Foucault, M. (1994). *Ethics, Subjectivity, and Truth: Essential works of Foucault, 1954-84, Vol. I*. The New Press: New York.
- Fowler, R. (1991). *Language in the news*. London: Routledge.
- Fürsich, E. (2009). 'In defense of textual analysis'. *Journalism Studies*, 10 (2), 238 – 252.
- Gales, T. A. (2010). 'Ideologies of Violence: A Corpus and Discourse Analytic Approach to Stance in Threatening Communications'. Unpublished PhD Thesis: University of California
- George, C. (2007). 'Credibility deficits'. *Journalism Studies*, 8 (6), 898 – 908.
- Gledhill, C. (1985). 'Genre', in Cook, P. (ed), *The Cinema Book*. London: British Film Institute.

- Grice, P. (1975). 'Logic and Conversation', in Cole, P. and Morgan, J. (eds), *Syntax and Semantics 3: Speech Acts*. Academic Press, 41 – 58.
- Griffin, E. (1991). *A first look at communication theory*, (4<sup>th</sup> Edition). London, McGraw-Hill.
- Halliday, M.A.K. and Hasan, R. (1985). *Language, Context and Text: Aspects of Language in a Social-Semiotic Perspective*. Victoria: Deakin University Press.
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1978). *Language as Social Semiotic*. London: Edward Arnold.
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1985). *Spoken and written language*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1994). *An Introduction to grammar*. London: Edward Arnold.
- Halliday, M. A. K. (1994). *Introduction to Functional Grammar*, (2<sup>nd</sup> Edition). London: Edward Arnold.
- Halliday, M.A.K. and Hasan, R. (1985). *Language, context, and text: aspects of language in a social-semiotic perspective*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Hampton, M. (2008). 'The "objectivity" ideal and its limitations in 20th-century British journalism'. *Journalism Studies*, 9 (4), 477 – 493.
- Harbermas, J. (1991). *The Structural Transformation of the Public Sphere: An Inquiry into a category of Bourgeois Society*. Cambridge, London: MIT Press.
- Herman, E. and Chomsky, N. (1988). *Manufacturing Consent: The Political Economy of the Mass Media*. Pantheon Books.
- Hondora, T. (2003). *Media laws in Zimbabwe*, Harare: Konrad Adenauer.
- Höglund, M. (2008). 'Using the words of others: 'Reporter voice' and the construal of objectivity in the reporting of political conflict in Finland', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, pp. 25 – 50.
- Hunston, S. and Thompson, G. (eds), (2000). *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hunston, S. and Sinclair, J. (2000). 'A local grammar of evaluation', in Hunston and Thompson, G. (eds), *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hymes, D. (1962). 'The ethnography of speaking', in Gladwin, T. and Sturtevant, W. C. (eds) *Anthropology and Human Behaviour*. Washington, D. C.: Anthropology Society of Washington.

Hymes, D. (1964). 'Introduction: Toward Ethnographies of Communication'. *American Anthropologist* 66 (6): 1 – 4.

Iedema, R., Feez, S. and White, P.R.R. (1994). *Media Literacy*. Sydney: Disadvantaged Schools Program, NSW Department of School Education.

Jullian, P. M. (2011). 'Appraising through someone else's word: The evaluative power of quotations in news reports'. *Discourse and Society* 22(6), 766 – 780.

Kitis, E. and Milapides, M. (1997). 'Read it and believe it: How metaphor constructs ideology in news discourse. A case study'. *Journal of Pragmatics* 28, 557 – 590.

Kitley, P. (2008). 'Winning an 'Information War': An Indonesian case study', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 203 – 226.

Klaehn, J. (ed), (2005). *Filtering the news: Essays on Herman and Chomsky's 'Propaganda Model'*. Montreal: Black Rose.

Knox, J. S. and Patpong, P. (2008). 'Reporting Bloodshed in Thai newspapers: a comparative study of English and Thai', in Thomson, E. A. and, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 173 – 201.

Kovalyova, N. (2010). 'Media practices in reporting political crises', in Okulska, U. and Cap, P. (eds), *Perspectives in Politics and Discourse*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Kress, G. (1988): *Communication and Culture: An Introduction*. Kensington, NSW: New South Wales University Press.

- Kress, G. and Threadgold, T. (1988). 'Towards a social theory of genre'. *Southern Review*, 21 (3), 215 – 243.
- Kristeva, J. (1980). *Desire in Language: A Semiotic Approach to Literature and Art*. New York: Columbia University Press.
- Kunelius, R. (2006). 'Good journalism'. *Journalism Studies*, 7 (5), 671 – 690.
- Leech, G. (1983). *The principles of pragmatics*. London: Longman.
- Leech, G. N. and Short, M. (1981). *Style in Fiction: A Linguistic Introduction to English Fictional Prose*. London: Longman
- Levinson, S. (1983). *Pragmatics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Lippmann, W. (1922). *Public Opinion*, New York: Free Press.
- Lukin, A. (2005a). 'Mapping media bias: a multidimensional affair'. *Australian Journalism Review* 27(1), 139 – 55.
- Lukin, A. (2005b). 'What is media 'bias'? A case study of Aljazeera's reporting of the Iraq war'. Unpublished paper.
- Lukin, A. (2008). 'Journalistic Voice, Register and Contextual Configuration: a case study from the Spanish and Argentinian press', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 143 – 172.
- Mano, W. (2005). *Press Freedom, Professionalism, Proprietorship: Behind the Zimbabwean Divide*. London: University of Westminster.
- Martin, J. R. (1984). 'Language, register and genre', in Christie, F. (ed), *Children writing: A reader*. Geelong, Vic: Deakin University Press.
- Martin, J. R. (1992). *English text: System and structure*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
- Martin, J. R. (1997). 'Analysing genre: Functional parameters', in Christie, F. and Martin, J. R. (eds), *Genre and Institutions: Social Processes in the Workplace and School*. London: Continuum.

- Martin, J. R. (2000). 'Beyond exchange: Appraisal systems in English', in S. Hunston and Thompson, G. (eds), *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Martin, J. R., and Rose, D. (2003). *Working with discourse: Meaning beyond the clause*. London: Continuum.
- Martin, J. R. and White, P. R. R. (2005). *The language of Evaluation: Appraisal in English*. Palgrave Macmillan.
- Mazango, E. (2005). *Media Games and Shifting Spaces for political Communication*. London: University of Westminster.
- McCabe, A. and Heilman, K. (2007). 'Textual and Interpersonal Differences between a News Report and an Editorial'. *Revista Alicantina de Estudios Ingleses* (20), 139 – 56.
- McCombs, M. E. and Shaw, D. L. (1972). 'The agenda-setting function of mass media'. *Public Opinion Quarterly*, Vol. 36, 176 – 187.
- McCombs, M. (2004). *Setting the Agenda: The Mass Media and Public Opinion*, London: Polity Press.
- McCombs, M. (2005). 'A Look at Agenda-setting: past, present and future'. *Journalism Studies*, 6 (4), 543 – 557.
- McNair, B. (2003). *An Introduction to Political Communication*, Third Edition, London: Routledge.
- Media Monitoring Project of Zimbabwe (MMPZ). (2002). *Media Under Siege: Report on the 2002 Presidential and Mayoral Elections in Zimbabwe*. Harare: MMPZ Publications
- Mey, J. L. (2009). *Concise Encyclopedia of Pragmatics*. Oxford, Elsevier Ltd.
- Miller, C. (1984). 'Genre as social action'. *Quarterly Journal of Speech*, 70, 151 – 167.
- Miller, K. (2005). *Communicating theories: Perspectives, processes and contexts*. New York: McGraw-Hill.

Mindich, D. T. Z. (1998). *Just the facts – How “objectivity” came to define American Journalism*. New York and London: New York University Press.

Moir, J. (2010). ‘The language of political opinion: Discourse, rhetoric and voting behaviour’, in Okulska, U., and Cap, P. (eds.) *Perspectives in Politics and Discourse*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins, 237 – 76.

Morris, J. S. (2007). ‘Slanted Objectivity? Perceived Media Bias, Cable News Exposure, and Political Attitudes’. *Social Science Quarterly* Volume 88, Number 3, 707 – 728.

Mouton, J. (2001). *How to succeed in your Master’s and Doctoral studies: A South African guide and resource book*. Pretoria: Van Schaik Publishers.

Muntigl, P. and Ventola, E. (2010). ‘Grammar: A Neglected Resource in Interaction Analysis?’, in Streeck J. (ed.) *New Adventures in Language and Interaction*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Mutingwende, W. (2010). ‘Interrogating Voices: A Critical Discourse Analysis of the role played by *The Manica Post* in constructing the nation as reflected by 30 selected political articles from January 2008 - 2010’. Unpublished M.A. Dissertation: Midlands State University.

Neale, S. (1980). *Genre*. London: British Film Institute [solely concerned with film]; an extract can be found in Bennett, T., Boyd-Bowman, S., Mercer, C. and Woollacott, J. (eds), (1981). *Popular Television and Film*. London: British Film Institute/Open University Press.

Neale, S. ([1990] 1995). ‘Questions of genre’, in Boyd-Barrett, O. and Newbold, C. (eds), *Approaches to Media: A Reader*. London: Arnold, 460 – 72.

Olaniyan, K. (2011). ‘Cohesion and Coherence in Editors’ Comments in Tell Magazines’. *Ife Studies in English Language (ISEL)*, Vol 9 (1), 1-25.

Philo, G. (2008). ‘Active audiences and the construction of public knowledge’. *Journalism Studies*, 9 (4), 535 – 544.

Poerksen, B. (2008). ‘Theory review: the ideal and the myth of objectivity’. *Journalism Studies*, 9 (2), 295 – 304.

Reason, M. and García, B. (2007). 'Approaches to the newspaper archive: content analysis and press coverage of Glasgow's Year of Culture'. *Media, Culture & Society*, 29, 304 – 31.

Richard, J.C. and Schmidt, R. (eds.). (2002). *Longman dictionary of language teaching and applied linguistics* (3<sup>rd</sup> ed.). London: Longman.

Sabao, C. (2011). 'Notice of death? The 'Reporter Voice' and 'Objectivity' in Reporting the 'Controversial' Death of Rtd. Gen. Solomon Mujuru in Zimbabwean Newspapers across Languages: An Appraisal Approach', paper presented at the *Current Research in the Humanities Conference for Postgraduate Students. Cape Town, South Africa, 25 - 26 October 2011*: University of Cape Town.

Sano, M. (2008). 'The Rhetoric of Editorials: A Japanese case study', in Thomson, E. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 97 – 119.

Santosa, R. (2009). 'Genre in media discourse'. *Journal of Bahasa Sastra dan Studi Amerika*, English Department: Meret University.

Schudson, M. (1995). *The Power of News*, Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Scott, C. (2008). 'Construing attitude and experience in discourse – the interaction of the TRANSIVITY and APPRAISAL systems', in Jones, C. and Ventola, E. (eds) *From language to multimodality: New developments in the study of ideational meaning*. London: Equinox. 87 – 109.

Scott, C. (2008a/b). 'Reporting Armistice: Grammatical evidence and semantic implications of diachronic context shifts', in Wu, C. et al (eds) *Proceedings of ISFC 35: Voices Around the World*. The 35<sup>th</sup> ISFC Organising Committee, 125 – 130.

Scott, C. (2008b/c). 'Reporting Armistice: Authorial and non-authorial voices in *The Sydney Morning Herald* 1902 – 2003', in Wu, C. et al (eds), *Proceedings of ISFC 35: Voices Around the World*. The 35<sup>th</sup> ISFC Organising Committee, 131 – 136.

Searle, J. (1969). *Speech Acts*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Seghezzi, N. A. (2007). 'Intertextuality in the News'. *Revista Alicantina de Estudios Ingleses* 20, 195 – 221.

Silver, M. (2003). 'The stance of stance: A critical look at ways stance is expressed and modelled in academic discourse'. *Journal of English for Academic Purposes*, 2, 359 – 374.

Sinclair, J. (1986). 'Fictional worlds', in Coulthard, M, (ed.). *Talking about Text: Studies Presented to David Brazil on his Retirement* (Discourse Analysis Monographs No. 13). Birmingham: University of Birmingham, English Language Research, 43 – 60.

St. John III, B. (2009). 'Claiming journalistic truth'. *Journalism Studies*, 10 (3), 353 – 367.

Swales, J. (1990). *Genre Analysis. English in Academic and Research settings*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Taylor, S. (2001). 'Locating and Constructing Discourse Analytic Research', in Wetherell, M., Taylor, S. and Yates, S. J. (eds), *Discourse as Data: A Guide for Analysis*. London: Sage Publications, 5 – 48.

Thompson, G. and Hunston, S. (2000). 'Evaluation: An introduction', in Hunston, S. and Thompson, G. (eds), *Evaluation in text: Authorial stance and the construction of discourse*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (2008). 'The News Story as Rhetoric: linguistic approaches to the analysis of journalistic discourse', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 1 – 24.

Thomson, E, Fukui, N. and White, P. R. R. (2008) 'Evaluating 'Reporter Voice' in Two Japanese Front-page Lead Stories', in Thomson, E. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 65 – 96.

Thomson, E. A., White, P. R. R. and Kitley, P. (2008). "'Objectivity' and 'hard news' reporting across cultures: Comparing the news report in English, French, Japanese and Indonesian journalism". *Journalism Studies*, 9 (2), 212 – 228.

- Thorsen, E. (2008). 'Journalistic objectivity redefined? Wikinews and the neutral point of view'. *New Media and Society* 10 (6), 935 – 954.
- Tjupa, V. (2010). 'Heteroglossia', in Huhn, P., Pier, J., Schmid, W. and Schanert, J. (eds), *The living handbook of Narratology*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter. 124 – 131.
- Tuchman, G. (1978). *Making News: a study in the construction of reality*. New York: Free Press.
- Van, T. T. H. and Thomson, E. A. (2008). 'The nature of the 'Reporter Voice' in a Vietnamese Hard News Story', in Thomson, E. A. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 51 – 64.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (1985). 'Structure of news in the press', in Van Dijk, T. A. (ed), *Discourse and Communication: New Approaches to the Analysis of Mass Media Discourse and Communication*. Berlin: Walter de Gruyter, 69 – 93.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (1988). *News as Discourse*. Hillsdale, New Jersey: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (1991). *Racism and the press*. Barcelona: Paidós Comunicació.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (1993). 'Principles of Critical Discourse Analysis', *Discourse and Society*: 4 (2), 249 – 83.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (2001). 'Critical Discourse Analysis', in Tannen, D., Schiffrin, D. and Hamilton, H. (eds), *Handbook of Discourse Analysis*, Oxford: Blackwell Publishers.
- Van Dijk, T. A. (2006). 'Ideology and discourse analysis'. *Journal of Political Ideologies* 11(2), 115 – 140.
- van Leeuwen, T. (1984). 'Impartial speech: Observation on the intonation view'. *Applied Linguistics* 10, 199 – 220.
- van Leeuwen, T. (1993). 'Genre and field in critical discourse analysis'. *Discourse and Society*, 4(2), 193 – 223.

van Leeuwen, T. (2008). *Discourse and Practice: New Tools for Critical Discourse Analysis*, 2, Oxford University Press, New York, USA.

Vo, D. D. (2011). 'Style, Structure and Ideology in English and Vietnamese Business Hard News Reporting – A Comparative Study', unpublished PhD thesis: University of Adelaide.

Waldahl, R. (2005). *Political Journalism the Zimbabwean Way, Experiences from the 2000 election campaign*. London: University of Westminster.

Wang, W. (2007). 'Newspaper commentaries on terrorism in China and Australia: A contrastive genre study', unpublished PhD thesis: University of Sydney.

Werth, P. (1999). *Text Worlds: Representing conceptual space in discourse*. London: Longman.

White, P. (1997). 'Death, disruption and the moral order: the narrative impulse in mass media 'hard news' reporting', in Christie, F. & Martin, J. R. (eds.) *Genre and Institutions: Social Processes in the Workplace and School*, London: Continuum, 101 – 33.

White, P. R. R. (1998), 'Telling Media Tales: News story as rhetoric', unpublished PhD thesis: University of Sydney.

White, P.R.R. (1999). 'An introductory tour through appraisal theory: Appraisal Outline', from: <http://www.grammtics.com/appraisal/unframed/Appraisal-Outline.htm>.

White, P. R. R. (2000a). 'Dialogue and inter-subjectivity: reinterpreting the semantics of modality and hedging', in Coulthard, M., Cotterill, J. and Rock, F. (eds), *Dialogue Analysis VII: Working with dialogue*. Tübingen: Niemeyer, 67 – 80.

White, P. R. R. (2000b), 'Media objectivity and the rhetoric of news story structure', in E. Ventola (ed), *Discourse and Community: Doing Functional Linguistics. Language in Performance 21*. Tübingen: Gunter Narr Verlag, 379 – 97.

White, P. R. R. (2002). 'Appraisal - the Language of Evaluation and Stance', in Verschueren, J., Östman, J.O., Blommaert, J. and Bulcaen, C. (eds), *The Handbook of Pragmatics*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins, 1 – 23.

White P. R. R. (2003). 'Beyond modality and hedging: A dialogic view of the language of intersubjective stance'. *Special Issue on Appraisal Theory – Text 23(3)*, 259 – 284.

White P. R. R. (2004). 'Subjectivity, evaluation and point of view in media discourse', in Coffin, C., Hewings, A. and O'Halloran, K. (eds), *Applying English Grammar*. London: Hodder Arnold, 229 – 246.

White, P. R. R. (2005). 'The Appraisal website: The language of attitude, arguability, and interpersonal positioning'. Accessed April 11, 2011:

<http://www.grammatics.com/appraisal/index.html>.

White, P. R. R. (2006a), 'Evaluative Semantics and ideological positioning in journalistic discourse', in Lassen, I (ed), *Image and Ideology in the Mass Media*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins, 45 – 73.

White P. R. R. (2006b). 'Evaluative semantics and ideological positioning in journalistic discourse: A new framework for analysis', in Lassen, I., Strunck, J. and Vestergaard T (eds), *Mediating Ideology in Text and Image: Ten Critical Studies*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: John Benjamins, 37 – 67.

White, P. R. R. (2007). *Appraisal*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins Publishing Company.

White, P. R. R. and Thomson, E. A. (2008). 'The News Story as Rhetoric: Linguistic Approaches to the analysis of journalistic discourse', in Thomson, E. and White, P. R. R. (eds), *Communicating Conflict: Multilingual Case Studies of the News Media*. London: Continuum, 1 – 23.

White, P. R. R. (2009). 'Media power and the rhetorical potential of the "hard news" report – attitudinal mechanisms in journalistic discourse'. *Käännösteoria, ammattikielet ja monikielisyys. VAKKI:n julkaisut, No. 36. Vaasa 2009*, 30 – 49.

Widdowson, H. (1995). 'Discourse analysis: A critical view'. *Language and Literature*, (3), 157 – 172.

Widdowson, H. (1998). 'Review article: The theory and practice of critical discourse analysis'. *Applied Linguistics*, 19 (1), 136 – 151.

Wodak, R. (1996). 'Critical linguistics and critical discourse analysis', in Verschueren, J. (ed.), *Handbook of pragmatics*. Amsterdam: Benjamins, 207 – 210

Wodak, R. (2000). 'Does sociolinguistics need social theory? New perspectives on critical discourse analysis'. *Discourse and Society*, 2 (3), 123 – 147.

Wodak, R. (2001). 'The discourse-historical approach', in Wodak, R. and Meyer, M. (eds.). *Methods of critical discourse analysis*. London: SAGE Publications.

Young, L. and Fitzgerald, B. (2006) *The Power of language: How discourse influences society*. London: Equinox Publishing Limited.

### **Electronic References**

<http://www.isfla.org/Systemics/definition.html>

“New CIO boss 98% disabled”

<http://nehandaradio.com/2011/07/22/new-cio-boss-98-disabled/>

“Obituary: Chenjerai Hunzvi - A veteran of Zimbabwe's freedom struggle, he led the recent violence against both blacks and whites”

<http://www.guardian.co.uk/news/2001/jun/05/guardianobituaries.zimbabwe>

“Mujuru – Official Mujuru Website – Joice and Solomon Mujuru”

<http://mujuru.wordpress.com/>

Maroleng, C. (2005) 'Zimbabwe's 2005 Elections: Overture or finale?' Situation Report. Institute for Security Studies.

<http://dspace.cigilibrary.org/jspui/bitstream/123456789/31418/1/050310ZIM.pdf?1>

“Mujuru was an economic pillar” *The Herald*, 18 August, 2011

([http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=18559:mujuru-was-an-economic-pillar&catid=41:business&Itemid=133](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=18559:mujuru-was-an-economic-pillar&catid=41:business&Itemid=133))

“Mujuru calls for thorough probe” - *The Herald*, Wednesday, 24 August, 2011

[http://zw.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=19297:mujuru-calls-for-thorough-probe&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130](http://zw.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=19297:mujuru-calls-for-thorough-probe&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130)

“Cde Rex Nhongo embodied the liberation struggle itself” *The Herald*, 19 August, 2011

([http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=18727:cde-rex-nhongo-embodied-the-liberation-struggle-itself&catid=39:opinion-a-analysis&Itemid=132](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=18727:cde-rex-nhongo-embodied-the-liberation-struggle-itself&catid=39:opinion-a-analysis&Itemid=132))

“Mujuru: His courage in the struggle for independence” *The Herald*, 18 August, 2011

([http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=18639:mujuru-his-courage-in-the-struggle-for-independence&catid=39:opinion-a-analysis&Itemid=132](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=18639:mujuru-his-courage-in-the-struggle-for-independence&catid=39:opinion-a-analysis&Itemid=132))

“Mujuru burnt to death” *Newsday*, 16 August, 2011

<http://www.newsday.co.zw/article/2011-08-16-mujuru-burnt-to-death/>

“Solomon Mujuru dies” *The Herald*, 16 August, 2011

[http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=18407:breaking-news-solomon-mujuru-dies&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=18407:breaking-news-solomon-mujuru-dies&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130)

“Mujuru death set to up shake political scene” *Zimbabwe Independent*, 18 August, 2011

<http://www.theindependent.co.zw/local/32124-mujuru-death-set-to-up-shake-political-scene.html>

“Comment: Mujuru’s death: echoes of the past”

<http://www.theindependent.co.zw/comment/32100-comment-mujurus-death-echoes-of-the-past.html>

“Mujuru death: VP suspects foul play” - *Newsday*, Wednesday, 24 August 2011.

<http://www.newsday.co.zw/article/2011-08-24-mujuru-death-vp-suspects-foul-play/>

“Mujuru death findings not ready for public - police” – *Newsday*, Tuesday, 27 September 2011.

<http://www.newsday.co.zw/article/2011-09-27-mujuru-death-findings-not-ready-for-public-police/>

“Mujuru allies cry ‘murder most foul’” – *Zimbabwe Independent*, Friday, 19 August, 2011.

<http://www.theindependent.co.zw/local/32126-mujuru-allies-cry-murder-most-foul.html>

“Mugabe fingered in Mujuru death” – *Nehanda Radio*, September 13, 2011.

<http://nehandaradio.com/2011/09/13/mugabe-fingered-in-mujuru-fire-death/>

“Inquest can’t order Mujuru exhumation” - *The Herald*, Tuesday, 7 February, 2012.

[http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=33245:inquest-cant-order-mujuru-exhumation&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=33245:inquest-cant-order-mujuru-exhumation&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130)

“Inquest findings final, says experts” - *The Herald*, Wednesday, 8 February, 2012.

[http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com\\_content&view=article&id=33377:inquest-findings-final-say-experts&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130](http://www.herald.co.zw/index.php?option=com_content&view=article&id=33377:inquest-findings-final-say-experts&catid=37:top-stories&Itemid=130)

[www.grammatics.com/appraisal](http://www.grammatics.com/appraisal)

[www.isfla.org/Systemics/Software/index.html](http://www.isfla.org/Systemics/Software/index.html)

A brief introduction to the work of M.A.K. Halliday and Systemic-Functional Linguistics.

Retrieved 23 November, 2011 from <http://language.la.psu.edu/spcom497b/halliday.html>